Bb. 6.61

THE Jesuites Policy

To suppress

MONARCHY

Historically displayed.

With their

SPECIAL VOW

Made to the

POPE.

Printed in the Year, 1669.

624:15

BABEL:

OR

Monarchomachia Proteſtantium.

NOt many years ſince, upon divulging of a Letter, written by Maſter *Aldred*, againſt the Match with *Spain*, and of that ſcandalous Libel againſt the Ambaſſador Count *Gondamour*; as alſo by the inſtigation of ſome Hot-ſpurs in their Pulpits; the people of *London* were much incenſed to ſnarl and murmur even at the very name of *Spain*; and every Artificer preſumed, like an *Ariſtarchus*, to cenſure the King for

that Negotiation, as for an error of State, which might possibly cast the whole body of the Kingdom into a distemper. As if (forsooth) the Kings affection to the Kingdom, and his own issue, had been unnaturally frozen, or that his judgement had failed him, and those Superior Planets of the Counsel had also lost their light, and erred in their course. Whereupon I was urged by divers of my good Friends, to write the Apology of that Action and Proceeding; because some of them had heard me deliver, at sundry times, not onely a full Answer to all the Objections of the contrary faction, but also divers Reasons in defence thereof, founded, as they thought, upon very just and solid considerations.

3. And truly, to speak what I think, the benefits which the Realm may reap by this match, are such, and so advantageous, as I wish it rather done, then disputed on. For first, it setleth a firm Peace between both

both the Kingdoms; which is a matter of greater importance, then they ſeem to apprehend, who ſo much oppoſe it. Secondly, Traffick will thereby be eſtabliſhed and increaſed, when the Seas by a concurrence of both Kings, ſhall be ſcoured of Turks and Pyrats. Thirdly, The Kingdom will be again ſtored with Treaſure and Coyn (provided we keep it lockt up within our Four Seas, and not ſuffer ſo much of it to be offered daily to that Idol of *Cambaia.*) Fourthly, The Crown will be diſengaged from a burdenſom weight of Debts, and by conſequence, the Subject likely to be much eaſed in matter of Contribution and Taxes. Adde hereunto the renewing and confirmation of the ancient Treaties with the Houſe and Dukes of *Burgundy*, which is not to be reckoned as a Cypher in the buſineſs; and what it is to have ſo great a Monarch, as the King of *Spain*, a firm friend and ally, *England* very well knoweth. It is

true, the Kingdom was never ſo full of Money, as it was by ſpoils and depredations, betwixt the years 1576. and 1590; but how dear thoſe purchaſes might have coſt us, wiſe men ſaw, if God (who had determined to give the Crown of this Nation to her iſſue, who ſuffered both diſgrace, and death here for his glory) had not made both Winds and Sea, at that time, to fight for *England*. Laſtly, *Virginia* (a Colony of ours tenderly to be regarded) ſhall hereby ſettle her Staples and Mart, and advance their Trade by a much ſafer paſſage and entercourſe with the Iſlands: But to me it is above all arguments, That this Match is ſo much for the Honor, Safety, and Commodity of Prince *Charls*, which every true Patriot, I conceive, is bound in conſcience to further and advance.

3. But thus we ſhall be ſaid to leave *Holland* in the bryars, an old and aſſured Friend, and of power upon all occaſions to aſſiſt the Realm. *God grant the Prince never ſtand in need*

need of them. And for our ſelves we may remember, how ſmall further-ance, nay, rather how great hinder-ance they have been to the Traffick of this Realm; and what great loſſes and damage our Merchants have ſuſtained by their means, in the *Indies*, *Muſcovy*, and *Greenland*. I need not tell you, how chargable a Neighbor they have been, nor how unſure a Friend, ever prefer-ing *France* before *England*; and yet notwithſtanding the Favors, which they may ſtill receive at his Majeſties hand, are neither few nor ſmall; if themſelves by incon-ſiderate courſes deſerve not other-wiſe.

But what cauſe do they pretend, who murmur ſo much againſt *Spain?* They object the Sin, the Curſe, the diſparagement to Match with a Catholike. Have they any reaſon for that? Yes: Becauſe the *Jews* were not permitted to marry with the *Ammonites*, nor Religious perſons with the profane. But that is an opinion, which reliſheth too

much of Judaism, and the Talmud; the Bar is removed, we are now under the Law of Grace; both *Jews* and *Gentiles*, Circumcision and Uncircumcision, in Christ are united and made one, and incorporated into one Body, his Church. It is true, the *Jews* might not marry out of their Tribes, because the promise was made to *Abraham* and *his Seed*; therefore *his Seed* was not to be stained with impure blood, or a commixture of Paganism. But now, the promise being already performed, that Judicial Law is abrogated. Yea, say they, but still it sheweth, that God is not well pleased, when his children mix with superstitious people. True: But who are the Superstitious? and of which side is the true Religion? We know that is a question, and will be. But this is out of question, That they are both of them Christians, both are Baptized into that blessed Name, both lay hold on the promises, on the Testaments, on the Gospel, both pray the same *Pater Noster*,

both

both confeſs the ſame *Creed*; yea, both reverence the firſt Four general Councels of the Church. Who indeed is the Catholike, is *Filius Chriſti*, of the ſurer ſide, by reaſon of the Mother Church, and of the elder Houſe.

But is it indeed ſo ſtrange a thing, that a Proteſtant ſhould marry a Catholike? not to ſpeak here of Queen *Elizabeths* Treaty with Mounſieur (which yet how far and fairly it was proceeded in, by both parties, our famous *Camden* ſhews at large.) Did not *Henry*, King of *Navar*, a Proteſtant, and the Protector of the Proteſtant Churches in *France*, marry with the *French* Kings Siſter, a Catholike? It was *propter bonum publicum* (as this is) for publike tranquillity and peace ſake; and therefore did the Elders and Conſiſtory of *Genevah* ſo much as check or reprove him for it? nay, did they not allow it? The ſame King afterward matcheth his own Siſter, an earneſt Proteſtant, to the Duke 5. *Camd. in Elizab.* *Thuanus lib.*

Thuanus lib. of *Lorrain*, who is known to be a Prince no less earnestly Catholike, and a Champion of the Catholike Church in *France*. Nay, did not *Lewis* himself, the Prince of *Conde*, and Protector in chief of the *Hugenot* party, when time was, apprehend with great desire the overture of a marriage with *Mary*, Queen of *Scotland?* and which certainly had taken effect, had not the Admiral, for his particular interests, laid blocks in his way. But above all others, it is memorable, and by us *Englishmen* not unfit to be considered, what a bloody quarrel it was made, that King *Edward* the Sixth, who was a Protestant King, and the first that ever was known in *England*, might not marry Queen *Mary* of *Scotland*, a Papist, as all the World knew; yet the Protector made it no scruple of Conscience, to pursue that business to the utmost hazzard. *Calvinism* and *Lutheranism*, are themselves as opposite as the *Antipodes*, yet they enter-marry frequently, and their issue

Thuanus lib. Lesla. hist. *Scot.* in *Mariâ Stuartâ.*

Goodwins Annals, in *Ed.* 6.

iſſue bear witneſs thereof. 6.

Was it then tolerable in the Reformed Churches, and is it now intolerable with *Spain?* Or is there any particular cauſe of ſcrupuloſity and fear in this overture, more then in thoſe other? doth the State of the Kingdom, and fear of alterations, trouble them? that fear is vain. The Husband is head of the Wife, and though the *Infanta* be born *in Familiâ Imperatrice*, yet there is no Soveraignty inveſted in her, ſhe can make no mutation of State, leaſt of all without conſent of the State; and we have little cauſe to diſtruſt her, having had ſuch a preſident before of King *Philip*; who being king of *England*, yet neither did, nor could attempt of himſelf, any alteration. And if the *Engliſh* be ſure to hold their Religion, it were neither Juſtice, nor Humanity, if ſhe ſhould be denied hers. There is no man of Honor would offend a Lady of her Dignity, for a difference that concerns her Soul, her Faith, her De-

votion towards God. What then is the reaſon, why this Match ſeems ſo diſtaſteful? Is the name, are the qualities of a *Spaniard* become ſo odious amongſt us? Surely, *ab initio non fuit ſic*, of old it was not ſo, it is neither an ancient quarrel, nor a natural impreſſion in the *Engliſh*. In the time of *Edward* the Third, there was a firm and fixed amity between *England* and *Portugal*, and from that *Lancaſter* of *England* the Kings of *Portugal* are deſcended. As for *Caſtile*, *John* of *Gaunt* married *Conſtance*, the Daughter of King *Peter*, by right of whom the Crown of *Caſtile* appertained unto him; and his Daughter *Katherine* was married afterward to *Henry* the Third, King of *Caſtile*; upon which Match, as appears yet in the Records of the *Savoy*, *John* of *Gaunt* reſigning that Crown, the controverſie ended; and the Kings of *Spain*, as flouriſhing Branches of the Tree and Stock of *Lancaſter*, have ever ſince quietly poſſeſſed that Kingdom. So that Prince

Charls

Charls by this Match is likely to warm his Bed again with ſome of his own Blood. I might adde further, that King *Henry* the Seventh married his Son to King *Ferdinands* Daughter, on purpoſe to continue the Succeſſion of that amity. I might remember the Treaties of 1505. between King *Henry* the Seventh, and *Philip* of *Auſtria*, Son in Law to King *Ferdinand*, for the preſervation and ſtrengthning of that League: And how much the amity of *England* was eſteemed, and how readily embraced by *Charls* the Fifth, Emperor and Grand-childe of *Ferdinand*, appeareth very well by the Treaty *Arctioris Amicitiæ*, in the year 1514. And by that renowned Treaty of *Calice* (the greateſt Honor perhaps that ever was done to the *Engliſh* Crown,) and by the Treaty 1517. between *Maximilian* the Emperor, *Charls* King of *Spain*, and King *Henry* the Eighth; not to ſpeak of the Treaties for entercourſe in the years 1515. and 1520. nor of the

Treaty

Treaty at *Cambray* 1529. nor lastly, of that famous one 1542. Let it suffice, that by them all it is manifest, with what mutual, constant, and warm affections both Crowns, and both Kingdoms, entertained the strictest correspondence that could be; till the Schism of *Henry* the Eighth, and disgrace done to Queen *Katherine*, by that unhappy Divorce, and the Kings confederating with *France*, made the first breach: So as in those days we see, there was no such unkindness, no such hatred, no such Antipathy betwixt the two Nations. The first spark of difference between them brake out in Queen *Maries* time, about the matter of Religion; no other pretext could be found, to make that breach which *Wyat* desired. Yet neither is this the true, nor the sole motive of the grudge, which is now taken: There is an other impostume, which will not be cured without lancing: The remembrance, the hatred ever since Eighty Eight, *Manet altâ mente repositum*,

repoſium, Sticks ſtill in our Stomacks; and it is moſt true, *Hinc illæ lachrymæ*, from hence ſprings all our pain. Well; but let us be as indifferent as we can; let us conſider, not onely their attempts upon us, but the provocations, that is, the wrongs which we firſt did unto them. Let us remember the Money intercepted, which the King was ſending unto *D'Alva*, the want whereof, at that time, hazarded well nigh the loſs of all the *Netherland* Provinces, ſo lately reduced; the aſſiſtance given to the Prince of *Orange*, by *Gilbert*, *Morgan*, and others; the firſt voyage of Sir *Francis Drake*; the ſacking of Saint *Domingo*; the Protection of *Holland* by *Leiceſter*; the infinite Depredations, Letters of Mart executed to the infinite damage of the *Spaniards*; beſide, the *Philippicks*, the invectives which were in every Pulpit, the Ballads and Libels in every Preſs were provocations, ſuch as Fleſh and Blood would not endure in the meaneſt perſons. I ſpeak

Strad. de bell. Belgic.

Camd. in *Elizab.*

nothing

nothing at all of the *Portugal* voyage, nor of the ſurprize of *Cales*, nor of the *Iſland* voyage; but can any wiſe man think, That the King of *Spain* ſhould not be ſenſible of ſuch indignities? Was it not probable, nay, was it not equal, that he ſhould ſend a fury to *Kingſale*, to revenge theſe wrongs?

7. And yet notwithſtanding this Hoſtility, when His Majeſty came to the Crown, how friendly, yea, how quickly did the King of *Spain* alter his courſe, and ſend the Conſtable of *Caſtile*, as the Dove out of the Ark, to ſee if the Flouds of Enmity were any whit faln, and to ſeek Peace with an Olive branch in his hand, to eſtabliſh a general *Amneſtia*, or Perpetual Oblivion of all unkindneſs paſt, to bury all quarrels, and reconcile the two Crowns and Kingdoms into an everlaſting Friendſhip. And ſurely, curſed will he be, that ſeeks to violate this Peace, and under colour of Religion to extirpate Charity and publike concord. And I pray, what

what would be thought of the loyalty of that man, who ſhould now ſet himſelf to trouble and exaſperate mens mindes with the old feuds and quarrels, which this Nation hath had with *Scotland?* But ſtay here, my Pen muſt intrude no further, without warrant, into the Labyrinth of this ſecret Councel: I know not whether it be agreeable to the Kings pleaſure, or no; or fit matter for private Subjects to diſcourſe upon. I know very well, how unſearchable the ſecrets of Princes are, in what an abyſs they lie, and how much too deep to be ſounded by every ſhallow diſcourſer. I remember alſo, what Praying and Preaching here was againſt the Match of Queen *Elizabeth* with Mounſieur, a buſineſs of very like nature with this in hand, and declaimed againſt, upon the ſame pretended peril of Religion, alteration of Government, and what not? Yet it is very well known, That thoſe of the Councel, who did moſt oppoſe it, were men, which of all others,

others, were thought to care leaſt for Religion. Sir *Philip Sidney* indeed, (like a Noble and worthy Courtier, as he was) endeavored by a ſhort Treatiſe, to preſent unto Her Majeſty the unfitneſs, diſproportion, and inconveniencies of that Match, both in relation to Her Perſon, and the whole Realm; but he did it privately, and with diſcreet circumſpection. *Stubs*, like an indiſcreet and fiery Zelot, taking the queſtion in hand, and proſecuting it in a way more likely to incenſe and corrupt the people, then to adviſe or inform the Queen; his hand paid for his preſumption. And though ſome of the greateſt and wiſeſt of the Councel appeared very earneſtly for it, as a thing which was likely to unite the whole Kingdom of *France* unto *England*, and would ſurely bring along with it the offer of the *Netherlands*, by the Prince of *Orange*, and the States, whereby *England* was like to become a potent Monarchy; yet was the whole Body of the Kingdom caſt into much

Camd. in *Elizab.*

much diſtemper and jealouſies thereby: Some upon partiality and faction, others upon diſtruſt of the practiſes of *France*; ſome for their own; ſome for their friends ſiniſter ends and ambitions; as in this very caſe, I am perſwaded, men are not a little poſſeſſed with the ſame diſeaſes and humors. And if I did not well know the nature of the multitude (which is a Beaſt with many heads, and as mad brains) I ſhould wonder, how they durſt oppoſe the deſigns of their Sovereign, a Prince of ſo great Experience and Judgement, and who hath managed this buſineſs from the beginning with ſuch warineſs, caution, and prudence, as this great Conjunction cannot portend any other effects, then honor, comfort, and proſperity to the whole Nation. Is he not the fitteſt to judge in his own caſe? And his caſe being the caſe of the Commonwealth in general, if any private man ſhall arrogate to himſelf either more wiſdom to amend what is already done,

done, or pretend more affection to the State, or more providence to foresee and prevent inconveniences; certainly he must needs fall into the custody of the Court of Wards, till he recover himself. But having said this, I shall leave the whole matter as a deliberative still; and tell you in few words, what the occasion was of this Discourse, which followeth.

The occasion of the following Discourse.

1. THere met at a Merchants House in *London* (where Merchants, for their Table and Hospitality, do worthily bear the Bell from all the Merchants in *Europe*) divers persons of quality, where being together in a Garden before Dinner, *T. Aldreds* Letter, the Pamphlet aforesaid, and some strange reports of seditious practises from *Amsterdam*, were read, and discoursed upon. In the midst of all, comes in a fine

fine Chaplain, belonging to a great perſon in *England*, and one that was of the Merchants acquaintance; who hearing but a little of the diſcourſe (which at that time was the common Table-talk of City and Country) with much vehemency he affirmed, the Match was likely to breed great troubles and miſchief to the Kingdom; and that (forſooth) in regard, as well of the increaſe of Catholikes within the Realm, which it would occaſion, as alſo in regard of *Spain*, which he ignorantly called an ancient Enemy. Hereupon alſo he took occaſion to rail bitterly againſt the Church of *Rome*, as the Seminary of all the commotions in *Europe*, and the contriver and plotter of all Treaſons in *England*. And being reſolved to ſhew his Rhetorick in the Ruff, and to omit nothing, which might exaſperate the company againſt Catholikes, he alledged for examples, in thundering language, the death of King *Edward* the Sixth, (ſillily enough that, *Heywards* Reign of *Edw. 6.*

that, you will say) the many conspiracies against Queen *Elizabeth*; but especially that horrible project of the Gun-powder Treason, which being undertaken onely by a few desperate Male-contents, in justice might rather be buried with the offendors, then objected perpetually to innocent men, who do generally with great sorrow abhor the very memory of the fact, and were publikely acquitted thereof by the King himself in the next Parliament following. Besides this he urged, That Princes be disquieted, yea, endangered many times by Excommunications, Bulls, and other censures from the Pope, by the Catechisms and Doctrines of Jesuites; and that the Subjects of *England* are withdrawn by them from their obedience to their lawful Princes: Lastly, That they are a people so full of treacheries and disloyalty, as no Nation can shew the like. He forgat not, you must think, to arm himself with the authority of Doctor *Morton*, whose

See the Kings Speech in Parliament.

Maxim

Maxim it was, *That we may now as well expect a white Æthiopian, as a good Subject of that Religion.* He produced a Book entituled, *A discovery of Romish Doctrine in the case of Conspiracy and Treason*; wherein, the Author playeth his master-prize against poor Catholikes with equal malice and indiscretion, charging them with an infinity of scandalous accusations, able to drive men into despair of the Kings Grace towards them, and to breed in His Majesties Royal Heart an everlasting distrust of them. He urged Parson *Whites* rash and uncharitable judgement against them, That all their Religion was full of such Doctrines, as afforded Monsters of conspiracy against the State; that they teach men to murther Kings, to blow up Parliaments; and that since *Bells* time, never was there such a ravenous Idol found, as are the Priests of the Seminaries. *Ormerode* also, that famous Picture-maker, was alledged in this heat, who by a great mistake, took upon him to condemn

the

the singular and renowned Doctor *Allen*, as affirming, That Princes may be slain by their Subjects, from the Text, *Numb.* 25. At length he concluded all with that Rhetorical flourish of Monsieur *Lewis Baily* in his Book of *The Practice of Piety*, pag. 783. which he produced with much ostentation, as if it alone had been enough to cast the whole Society of the Fathers into a fit of a Quartane: *Jesuites and Priests*, saith he, *are sent to withdraw Subjects from their Allegiance, to move Invasion, and to kill Kings: If they be Saints, who be Scythians? Who are Cannibals, if they Catholikes?* This conclusion, for the art and wit of it, could not but deserve a plaudite; so the company went to Dinner, and after Dinner this fine Chaplain was gone in haste. Thereupon, some of the company, not so much taken with his Rhetorick, as were the rest, desired a Gentleman then present, who well understood the World, and was a freeman, not obliged to any particular order, further then as

as a Son of the Church, to deliver his opinion of the Miniſters invective; which at laſt, upon their much importunity, he was perſwaded to do, in ſuch maner, as is here, with his leave, and particular information, repreſented to you.

After ſome pauſe, *Claudius accuſat Mœchos*, quoth he, *Catilina Cethegum.* This is moſt ridiculous; who can endure to hear a *Gracchus* inveigh againſt *Sedition?* A man may perceive by the Prologue, That Proteſtants have ſet it down as a decree againſt Catholikes, and labor to imprint it as an Eternal ſcandal in the hearts of the people; that Catholike Religion and Doctrine is dangerous to the State, an Enemy to Sovereignty, and therefore neither allowable nor tolerable in a well governed Monarchy. Now this being a matter of ſo great importance, as indeed it ought to be eſteemed (for *querelam Eccleſiæ quilibet Catholicus facit ſuam*, every good Catholike thinks himſelf injured, when the Church is wrong-

2.

ed.)

ed.) I will endeavor to sift out the truth, and shew you, what is therein to be holden as matter of infallible verity; as well to justifie them, *viz.* the Catholikes, as to inform my self in a point, which I know hath made many good men in *England* to stagger much. And that I may not wander in my discourse, nor lead you up and down in a Labyrinth, I will shew you first the true state of the Question to be argued, and the method in which it is most regularly propounded.

3. First therefore we demand, *Whether to be a Catholike*, that is, one who professeth due reverence unto the Church of *Rome*, *and to be a true Subject to his Prince and Country*, be incompatible, or no? Secondly, If they be incompatible, *whether this incompatibility*, or repugnancy that is betwixt them, *be general*; that is, as unto all Principalities and States; *or particular*, that is, to some one, or to some few onely? Thirdly, Whether it be so *originally*, and ever, or onely *casually*; that is, at some

ſome particular time, or upon ſome particular joyncture of affairs in State? Fourthly, Whether it be ſo *ſimpliciter loquendo*, and as *malum in ſe*; that is, whether the being a Catholike, be lookt upon as a thing *evil intrinſecally*, and in its own nature; or that it be onely *accidentally ſuch*, or made ſo by particular Statutes and Laws? Laſtly, whether *Lutheraniſm* and *Calviniſm*, be not more incompatible with *Loyalty*, more oppoſit and contradictory thereto, and that *ab origine?* To judge rightly betwixt Catholikes and Proteſtants in this grand charge which we have in hand, it is neceſſary, that every one of theſe particulars be cleerly conſidered and reſolved; and ſo I oblige my ſelf to do, at leaſt to endeavor, before I end my diſcourſe: But yet to pay Maſter *Parſon* ſome thing in his own coyn, I ſhall make bold to begin with the laſt Queſtion firſt, and in lieu of his general, or rather hyperbolical accuſations of our Doctrine, to return him double

measure, both of Doctrine and Practise, in each kinde, from his own men: That is, I will examine and declare *obsignatis tabulis*, and by evidence of fact, That the Treasons, Factions, Seditions, Tumults, which have so troubled all the Kingdoms of *Europe*, and filled Christendom with blood and calamity, for these hundred years last past; have sprung not so much from any opinions or practises of Catholikes, as from the opinions and practises of Protestants; and that the egg of this Cockatrice was not laid at *Rome*, nor *Rhemes*, nor *Doway*, (as the World must be made to believe) but indeed, and very truth, at *Wittemberg*, at *Smalcald*, at *Genevah*. And this I shall do not Theologically, or like a Divine, (for I will not arrogate so much to my self) but Historically, sincerely, plainly, being one that desires to defend the Loyalty of Religious and Innocent men, rather then their Opinions and Doctrines, which they are best able to maintain themselves; and

as

as a faithful relator of what my ſelf have both known and ſeen, and learned the reſt from others; of whoſe authority and credit in this kinde, no juſt doubt can be made: Neither ſhall I affect any rhetorical flouriſhes, or elegancy of ſtile in this diſcourſe. Integrity and Truth (which I profeſs) appear always moſt gracious in their own unborrowed beauties; they need no paintings, no art, no colours. Come we then, by the Will of God, to our intended buſineſs.

Titulus Primus.

LUTHERANISM; OR The Troubles in GERMANY.

1. IN the year of our Lord, 1514. the whole Church of God enjoyed Peace, and her ancient Priviledges; all Princes with great devotion were Nurſing Fathers and Protectors of her; no Storm did trouble her, no Schiſm to break her Unity: There was an harmony, a good correſpondence (as to matters of Faith and Religion) between the Church of *Rome*, and all the Princes and States of Chriſtendom; and till then, neither in *England*, nor in any other Country of *Europe*, had there been ſuch a Queſtion ever

ever disputed, *viz. Whether a Catholike might not be a good Subject.* In the year 1517. *Martin Luther*, an *Augustine* Fryer, a man of a turbulent spirit, learned, but never counted any famous Clerk, was the first that broke this long and happy Peace. This man unhappily interposing himself in the business of Indulgences, which were sent at that time by Pope *Leo* the Tenth into *Germany*, although it concerned not him further, then he made himself the Proctor and Advocate of his Order; yet having once begun to inveigh against the injury done to his fraternity, as he conceived, (for as much as the Preaching or publishing of those Pardons, was committed unto the *Dominicans*, and not to them, *viz.* the *Augustinians*, as had been usual before) he fell afterwards to tax the abuses and covetousness of the Collectors, and then to question even the authority of them, by whom those Collectors were nominated, and such a levy of money required in

Surius in Chron. *An.* 1517.

that nature. This was a popular and plausible Introduction, fit to win upon the vulgar, who can never well endure the pressure of Contributions, especially extraordinary, and where the covetousness or scandal of Officers gives any occasion of murmur. He quickly therefore found many favorers; but much more, when he began to exclaim against the ambition of Prelates, against the ryot and disorders of Religious men, taxing some for Tyranny, some for Avarice, some for Idleness and Ignorance, all for corruption and abuses. In this maner he stood in arms, and, as it were, a challenger for some years, onely against the defects of the Clergy, and without much danger: For divers good men at first conceived, That he onely intended and sought Reformation of disorders, and restoring of Ecclesiastical Discipline, punishment of irregularities, and amendment of life. And this they did not without some cause: For Saint *Hildegardis* had

fore-

foretold a ſtorm to the Church for their ſins; *Savanarola* a *Dominican* had awakned *Italy* with predictions of terror; and Frier *Thomas* of *Guien* propheſied a *Va, Va,* a ſcourge and deſolation to *Bourdeaux*, an inundation of miſery to *France*, and the whole World: All theſe not long before *Luthers* time.

Who finding thus, *Populo placere,* 2.
quas feciſſet, fabulas, that the ſport, which he had begun, did take with the people (as novelty is ever welcome to the World) and that his actions and deſigns ſeemed generally to be applauded; that many of the beſt wits (eſpecially ſuch as had been bred in *Eraſmus* his School, and were any way touched with his humor) were ready to ſecond him; yea, perceiving that ſome of the greateſt Princes in *Germany* were content, (though for other ends) not onely to give him hearing, but incouragement alſo in his proceedings; the mans ambitious and vain conceipts of himſelf were infinitely raiſed above his firſt projects:

Whereupon, as a man ſick in his ſpirits, and of a fiery diſeaſe, he begins now to rage againſt, and to defame all Church Government, he abandons his Cloyſter, throws of his habit, breaks, yea, tramples upon his vows, renounceth all obedience to his Superior, Preacheth againſt the whole State of the Clergy, and eſpecially againſt the Superiority of the Biſhop of *Rome* (which was ever unto this time, held Sacred in matters Eccleſiaſtical) as againſt a Tyranny in the Church; perſwading the people not to render any kinde of obedience to them. The Pope himſelf (whom yet not long before, and ſince the beginning of the difference, he had honored with the title of Chriſts Vicar, and proteſted unto him very much humble Reverence and obedience) he now calls *Sathaniſſimum Papam, Meſſire Aſino:* The Prelates he calls Blinde guides, the Religious men Swine, Candles put under a Buſhel, and what not? And why, think you, Preacht he all this?

this? Becauſe (forſooth) otherwiſe the people ſhould live in darkneſs ſtill, in the ſhadow of death, ſtill be fed and miſled by ignorant and blinde guides, ſtill remain in ignorance, and in the Captivity of *Babylon*. This Prologue having gained him attentive Auditors, he begins the Tragedy, which was afterwards acted, as you ſhall hear, with ſuch incredible Sedition and Tumults: His whole ſtudy was now bent to undermine the Church, and to aboliſh all Eccleſiaſtical order; which by conſequence was of neceſſity to ſhake the Foundations, and hazzard the State it ſelf: Yea, this humor fed him with ſuch vain and extravagant hopes, That he imagined to conquer the whole World, and to ſubdue the Pope himſelf, whom he was the firſt, that ever abſolutely affirmed to be *that Antichriſt*, *Man of ſin*, and deceiver of the World, whom the Apoſtle mentioneth, 2 *Theſ.* 2.

He was the more encouraged in theſe proceedings, for that now, 3.

1519. *Maximilian* the Emperor was dead, whose power and wisdom he had great cause to dread, and that *Charls* the Fifth was chosen to succeed him; a yong Prince, not fully Twenty years of age; whom therefore he vainly hoped, he should be able to perswade to subdue the Popes power, to keep his own Court at *Rome*, and make the Castle of Saint *Angelo* subject to his commands; and that by the assistance of such an Emperor, *Martin* should be able to reform the Church, and cast it into what mould he pleased; especially seeing *John Frederick*, the Elector and old Duke of *Saxony*, was already his sure Friend and Patron; who for his strength, riches, alliance, and other abilities, was far Superior to any other Prince of the Empire.

Surius in Chron.

4. Hereupon therefore first of all, he proclaims, as it were, open war and defiance to all the Bishops and Ecclesiastical State of *Germany*, endeavoring, what he can, to weaken their authority, to abrogate their power; yea,

yea, to make them odious and contemptible to the whole World: Therefore in his Book intituled, *Contra Statum Ecclesiæ, & falsò nominatum ordinem Episcoporum:* He sends out a Bull against the said Bishops, in these words, *Attendite vobis Episcoporum umbræ*; *Hearken*, saith he, or rather, *Look to your selves, ye Mock-Prelates, ye Bishops in shew, or shape onely*; *Doctor* Luther *intends to read you a lesson, which he thinks, will not be much pleasing to your tender ears*; as indeed, it was not likely it should be. For after a short Exhortation, he gives advise, what his godly Auditory should do well to see performed, *viz.* To this horrible intent or purpose. *Quicunque opem ferunt, bona, famam, sanguinem impendunt*; *Whosoever*, saith he, *will venture their Lives, their Estates, their Honor, and their Blood, in so Christian a work, as to root out and destroy all Bishops and Bishopricks (which are the Ministers of Satan) and to pluck up by the Roots, all their Authority and Jurisdiction in the World*; Hi sunt dilecti

Tom 2. oper. Latin. *Jenæ*

dilecti filii Dei, &c. *These, yea, these, are the true children of God, and obey his Commandments.* And again in his Book against *Sylvester Prieras*: *Si fures furcâ, latrones gladio, hæreticos igne tollimus. If*, saith he, *we dispatch common Felons with a halter, Malefactors at the block, and Hereticks by fire.* Cur non magis hos magistros perditionis; *As for these sons, yea, masters of perdition; these Bishops, Cardinals, Popes*, &c. *Why should we not fall upon them with open force, and not cease, till we have bathed our hands in their blood?* Was there ever such an Incendiary heard Preach? But, *Objicient*, saith he going on, *periculum esse; Perhaps some body will be telling us, it may cause Tumults and Sedition in the common people: Tush*, saith he, *I answer, must the Word of God be prohibited, and the people perish for fear of Tumults?* The two Mar-Prelates of *England* and *Scotland* were not possessed with such a spirit as this; and though they were mad enough, yet they came not up to such a height of

Tom. 1. oper. Latin. *Wittemberg.*

of fury. Let the Lawyers therefore judge, *Brunus*, *Minſinger*, *Gail*, whether this Sermon and Proclamation of *Luthers*, would not bear an Action of Sedition and Conſpiracy; and whether it were conſiſtent with the Laws and Peace of the Empire, any more then it was with the duty of a good man. For hereby was the people taught and encouraged (when they ſhould be able) to pull down and deſtroy thoſe principal Pillars in the State of *Germany*, *viz.* The Archbiſhops of *Mentz*, *Colen* and *Triers*, the Primate of *Magdeburgh*, the Archbiſhop and Prince of *Saltzburgh*, the great Maſter of *Pruſſia*, the Biſhop of *Wurtzburgh*, *Bamberg*, and many others; who, beſide their Spiritual Relations (which were ſo eminent in the Church) had alſo a voice and place in the Imperial Dyet, and thereby a great influence and hand in the Government of *Germany*. Can this be avowed to be the act of a dutiful or loyal Subject of the Empire? Doth any Law, Reaſon, or Example

warrant

warrant it in Civil Government? That a private man, himself a Subject, of himself alone, should attempt thus insolently against the chief Magistrates, and Princes of the Country where he lives? That a Sheep should presume to depose the Shepherds? And by such wicked suggestions, stir up Insurrections and Rebellion against persons of so eminent quality, both for Place and Calling? Nor did he ever cease, or give over these Preachings, till out of *Saxony*, *Hess*, and *Wittemberg*, yea, generally out of all places, where his Seditious Doctrine prevailed, he had expulsed, or procured to be expulsed, the very name, as well as the Authority and Jurisdiction of Bishops.

5. Neither staid he here, but as fury and success lead him, proceeded further. At *Wittemberg* he took upon him to burn, not onely the Popes Indulgences, Bulls, and such like, but even all the Canon Law it self, that he could but get into his hands. If you ask, by what warrant?

Cochlæus in act. Luther.

rant? He gives you none but his own Authority, his private ſpirit was Commiſſion, and pretence of the Goſpel (as he called it) all the Apology he could make for ſuch pranks. An inſufficient pretence certainly: For although it be true, That the Canon Law, for the moſt part of it, be *originally* nothing but the Conſtitutions of Popes at ſeveral times and occaſions publiſhed, yet much of it is alſo the decrees of Councels, Provincial, National, and Oecumenical, and all of it ratified by preſcription, (which is Common Law) by general approbation and uſe of the Country, and by the Imperial Laws themſelves; and therefore his audaciouſneſs was intolerable, in giving ſo publike an affront to the Government of *Germany*, as well Civil as Eccleſiaſtick: And the Laws themſelves (how needleſs or inconvenient ſoever, this vain man could imagine them, yet) could not be lawfully and orderly ſuppreſſed in the Empire, but by the Authority of the

Empire

Empire it ſelf. But as he did thus preſumptuouſly, and of his own head, abrogate (ſo far as he could) the Canon Laws; ſo did he vilifie and deſpiſe the Civil Laws alſo, as ſhall be ſhewn hereafter in due place; for as yet we muſt trace him in his extravagancies and furies againſt the Church.

6. Having loſt his own ſenſes through pride, and overmuch confidence of himſelf, he was willing that all the World ſhould be blinde; therefore he endeavors to introduce Barbariſm, and to put out the eyes of his *Almayns*; that in ſuch ſtate they might not be able to ſee, either his errors, or their own folly, to be ſo much abuſed and bewitched by a Sot. Univerſities muſt down; which becauſe *Cambridge* and *Oxford* will not (perhaps) believe, I ſhall produce his own words in his Book againſt *Ambroſius Catharinus: Ad Evangelium funditùs evertendum, nec aſſutius, nec efficacius commentum, &c. The Devil*, ſaith he, *never invented a*

more

more cunning, and more pernicious means to root up utterly the Gospel of Christ, then the design of founding the Universities. And that no man should go about to colour or excuse this Paradox, by some favorable interpretation and sense, he seconds it with another elsewhere, full as absurd or worse: For dissuading the people from sending their children to be bred up in the Universities, he passeth a sentence of condemnation on them in these words: *Academias per idolum* Moloch *figuratas puto. I am of opinion,* saith he, *that the Idol* Moloch *in old time was a Type of these Universities:* And therefore, that it was as unlawful for the people to send their children thither for breeding, as it was of old for the children of *Israel* to give of their sons to be consecrated unto that Idol, of which we read, *Levit.*20.2,3,4. The reason he gives is like his assertion, *Ex isto enim fumo: for out of the smoke,* saith he, *of these Universities do arise all those Locusts, which at this day possess the Chairs;* Lib. de abrog. *Missa.*

Chairs; that is, the places of Dignity and Honor in the Church. But why will the man have all Universities thus suppressed on the sudden? Is it because Catholike Religion and School-divinity was taught in them? that can hardly be thought. For why did he shut up the School-doors at home, at *Wittemberg*, where he prevailed for many years together? Why did he neglect the teaching and educating of youth in his own Religion and Profession? Why did he forbid *Aristotle*, *Tully*, and other Authors to be read, who meddle not with Religion? Why did *Carolstad* chuse rather to go to Plough, then read a Lecture? Nay, his own *Fidus Achates*, *Philip Melanchthon* in his Book called *Didymus*, commends *Witcliff* for a wiseman, *Qui omnium primus vidit Academias esse Satanæ Synagogas*: Because *he*, forsooth, *was the first that discovered the* Christian *Universities to be Synagogues of Satan*. Well said Master *Philip!* in whom indeed so loose an assertion was the more to be

Cochlæus in Act. Luther.

Ulemberg. in vitâ ejus.

be wondred at, being himself otherwise so great a Scholar. But thus we see, what a spirit of confusion and giddiness possessed them at the beginning, and how uncertain they were all, what to hold or maintain: But above all others, this was true of *Melanchthon*, who was indeed a very *Academick*, always *Sceptical*, inconstant and wavering; so as neither himself, nor his own party knew well, what he was: And for this opinion in particular against the Universities and Humane Learning, he retracted it in his Book *Ad Waldenses*, which *Carolstad* would never do; and therefore died very miserable and poor in the Country. *Ulemberg. in vitâ Philippi.*

7. You may perceive by this, that at the first rising of these men, and their Preaching of Reformation, the spirit (to which they pretended had not in many years perfectly illuminated them, nor cleared their judgement from many and stupid absurdities of Error, to which men of but common discretion are not usually

uſually Subject; which we may not a little wonder at, ſeeing men extraordinarily called by God (and ſuch they would be thought to be;) as for example, the Prophets, Apoſtles, St. *Paul*, and others, were compleatly fitted for their work, from the firſt inſtant of their vocation. It appears alſo, what *Luthers* deſign was, *viz.* At three blows to have cut down three great Cedars of the Empire, *The Clergy, the Canon Law, the Univerſities:* For without *Univerſities* the Clergy could not well be educated, nor without *Laws* could they be governed; and ſo being neceſſarily chained together, he could not break the Link, without ſubverting all. Neither did he, as it is cleer, ſeek a Reformation, but an Extirpation of them all together. And this I dare affirm, That all thoſe hundred *Gravamina* preſented unto the Emperor *Charls* at *Noremberg*, did not contain one quarter of the danger, miſchief, and publike calamity, which theſe three Articles would

would have brought upon *Germany*, could they have been executed to his minde. And yet behold a greater miſchief followeth, if greater be poſſible; for I am now to lay down ſome few of his Poſitions of State, by which it ſhall appear yet further, what prodigious incivility, arrogance, and preſumption was in the man; and to how great contempt and prejudice his proceedings tended, not of Eccleſiaſtical Prelates, and perſons onely (whom he made it, as it were, matter of Conſcience, and a part of his Goſpel, to revile and ſlander) but of the Emperor himſelf, and the other Princes of *Germany*, yea, of all Princes, States, and Magiſtrates whatſoever, that ſtood in his way, and complied not with his ſtrange and exorbitant courſes. And to diſcover his ſpirit the better, you ſhall have a taſte in the firſt place of his behavior with King *Henry* the Eighth of *England*, a Prince at that time famous and renowned, as any in the World; and whom, but a little

little before, upon report of his disgust with Cardinal *Wolsey*, he had extreamly flattered and bedaubed with praises: But now finding by some tartness in the Kings answer, That it was but to build castles in the air, to expect any favor or countenance from him; the poor Frier runs presently mad with rage, and fowl language. The King is no longer now a King with him, *but an evious mad fool, full of bastardy and baseness; he hath not a vein of Princely blood in all his body; he is a Basilisk*, to whom this impudent *Apostata denounceth damnation. A glorious King indeed, that lyeth most stoutly, and like a King.* Nay, *He is a lying Fellow covered with the title of a King*; not a King, but *a Sacrilegious theif.* Lastly, which is the height of all imaginable scurrility and rudeness, *Jus mihi erit, Majestatem tuam stercore conspergere: If I were neer you*, saith he, *I should make bold to dress such a Majesty as it deserves.* The passage is so extreamly fowl, that to render it otherwise,

Lib. cont. Reg. Anglia.

otherwiſe, would both offend the Reader, and defile the Paper. I omit infinite more of the ſame ſtamp and ſtain, which the Reader, if he pleaſe to be further curious upon ſuch a ſubject, may finde gathered togethter by no leſs honorable a perſon then Sir *Thomas Moor*, Lord Chancellor of *England* in thoſe times, and publiſhed by him in a Latin work of his againſt *Luther*, Printed at *Lovain* in the Year, 1566.

Nor was his behavior towards the Emperor himſelf and Princes of *Germany*, much better. He not onely wrote a Book expreſly with this title, *Againſt the Two Edicts of Cæſar* (which we muſt alſo know were Edicts legally publiſhed, and with conſent of the other States and Princes of the Empire) but therein he openly chargeth the Emperor himſelf, and the other Princes with falſe play. *Turpe eſt* Cæſarem *ac Principes manifeſtis agere mendaciis. What a ſhame is it*, ſaith he, *that an Emperor and Princes ſhould lie* 8. *Surius* ad annum. 1521.

lie thus palpably. And in the same Book, of the same persons speaking, *Deus mihi dedit negotium. It is Gods will,* saith he, *that in this business I should not have to do with reasonable men; but, I see, these wilde Beasts of* Germany *will murder me, if they can.* And therefore more bitterly, maliciously, and traiterously afterwards, *Oro cunctos pios Christianos. I beseech,* saith he, *all godly Christians, that they would onely pray for these blinde Princes, by whom God afflicteth them in his great wrath; but,* saith he, *let us not follow them by any means, let us not serve them in their Wars, nor give them any Contribution against the Turk:* (For that was a thing either then in debate, or but lately consented to by the States of the Empire,) *For the Turk,* saith he, *is a Prince ten times wiser, and more honest then they: And what good, I pray, can such fools expect against the Turk, who do themselves so horribly blaspheme and offend God?* Will any man think this tolerable? but he proceeds. In his Book against the Five hundred

An. 367.

hundred Articles, *Quid ergo boni in rebus Divinis? What good, think we,* ſaith he, *can ſuch impious and wicked Tyrants appoint in matter of Religion?* Before they were fools, now they are Tyrants. And ſtill he goeth on from worſe to worſe, that is, higher and higher, as it were, by degrees in his impudence. For in his Book *De Sæculari poteſtate*, concerning the *Civil Magiſtrate*, or the *Powers of the World*, He delivers his opinion of all Kings and Princes in general; and how he would have them eſteemed, in theſe words, *Scire debes, &c. You muſt know,* ſaith he, *that from the beginning of the world to this day, it hath ever been a rare thing, to finde a wiſe Prince; but more rare, to finde one that was honeſt: For commonly they are the verieſt fools and knaves in the world.* And again, *Quis neſcit, &c. Who knows not,* ſaith he, *that Princes are like Veniſon in Heaven*; very dainty and rare, it ſeems; ſcarſe one of a thouſand perhaps ſaved. This was the charity of the man towards Chriſtian Princes in general; as

for the Emperor himself, in his Book *De bello contra Turcas*, he expressly denieth him to be *the head of Christendom*, or so much *as a defender of the Faith*; and least this might be capable of some tolerable sense, he explicates his meaning plainly in the reason which he giveth, *Eos namque esse pessimos hostes*; *For*, saith he, *Emperors and Princes are commonly the greatest enemies, which Christianity, and the Faith have*: Yea, in his Book *Contra Rusticos*, against the Boors, (which was an occasion and subject, where, if ever he meant to do it, a man would think, he was obliged to favor Magistracy and Civil Dignities, yet even there) his Language is the same, or worse. *Sciatis, boni domini, Deum hoc procurare, quod subditi nec possunt, nec debent, &c.* You must know, my good Lords, saith he, That God will have it so, that your Subjects neither can, nor will, nor ought any longer to endure your Tyrannical Governments. Mark well that *debent*, they ought not, it was not put in for nothing,

nothing, I warrant you. Thoſe good men, the Boors, were not altogether, or too much to be diſcouraged by that Book of his, though titled againſt them; it having been from his Sermons and Doctrines commonly divulged, that they took the cheif grounds of their Inſurrection.

Did ever man before him vent ſuch ſeditious Paradoxes with impunity? Can ſuch aſſertions as theſe come from the Spirit of God? Did ever any of the Prophets, Apoſtles, Martyrs, uſe ſuch barbarous liberty of ſpeech, againſt the worſt of *Neroes*, *Diocleſians*, *Julians*, that ever perſecuted the Church? Did *Elias* ſpeak thus to *Abab* and *Jezabel*? and yet his flatterers commonly call him the *Elias* of *Germany*. St. *Paul* (if he had pleaſed to regard him) gave him a far better example, uſing *Feſtus* the *Roman* Gover- Acts 26. nor with much more reverence. 25. And without all doubt, no true Chriſtian zeal can be ſo irregular, ſo rude, ſo intemperately paſſionate 9.

and ſcurrilous. To revile, and ſpeak evil of dignities, is the property of another ſpirit, then the Spirit of
Jude 8.9. God, or elſe Saint *Jude* deceives us. To give *Cæſar* his Sovereign, and all the Princes of *Germany* the lie, although it were very inſufferable, yet it may ſeem but a perſonal, or particular contempt; but to proclaim them all *Savages*, *Fools*, *Knaves*, *Tyrants*, and to ſay that the *Turk* was a wiſer and honeſter man then any of them, in whoſe Government, as all the World knows, the Sacred Law of Chriſt our Saviour is wholly abrogated, and the blaſphemous Dreams of a wretched Impoſtor ſet up, and maintained by force in ſtead thereof, and the Moral Law of God publikely and daily, by a contrary law of *Mahomet*, in many reſpects violated and broken, (to the great diſhonor of God, indeed, and ſhame of Chriſtendom,) is a Language ſo abſurdly ſeditious and ſcandalous, as it can never be ſufficiently deteſted. Then to give out to the world, and publiſh

liſh in Print, as it were in open ſcorn and contempt of all authority, That a wiſe and good Prince was as rarely found, as a black Swan; that commonly Kings and Princes be the moſt doting Fools, or wickedſt Knaves in the World, and that they are ſuch a Reprobate crew, as there is ſcarce a place in Heaven for them; what is it, but by ſuch epithets and execrable boldneſs, to bring Majeſty it ſelf, and all Governments into contempt, to take the Crown from Princes Heads, and to expoſe Magiſtracy, and the juſt preheminencies thereof (without which no Government could long ſubſiſt) to the malice, contempt, yea, fury too, of the meaneſt of the people.

But you will ſay, perhaps, he uſed his own Princes with more reſpect; and all this was ſaid to Catholike, that is, Popiſh Princes, and his Enemies. Well, admit it were ſo, that they were Popiſh Princes, yet were they Magiſtrates notwithſtanding, and at leaſt in as

10. Something to be added here from *Page* 87. of the Book.

good capacity as *Nero*, and those
Rom. 13. others, to whom St. *Paul* commands *every soul* to pay obedience and honor; yet were they the Lieutenants of God upon earth, they had the Image (that is, the Authority) of God upon them; and for that Image sake, were to be used with due reverence. They had the Laws, the Customs, the Constitutions of the Empire on their side; they were not his Enemies, further then his irregularities and offences, together with their own duty, obliged them to be so. Neither is it true, that he used his own Princes of the House of *Saxony* much better. Surely, as for *Duke George* of *Leipsig*, his bitterness and incivility towards him was notorious, calling him, *The Apostle of Satan, Enemy of the Gospel, Murtherer, Tyrant*, and what not? *Surius* Anno 1533. Last of all styling him with a most scurrilous kinde of contempt, *Illustrissima inclementia vestra: Your most Illustrious Surliness.* And as for the Prince *Elector* himself, his Grand Patron and Protector, old *John Frederick*,

Frederick, Duke of *Saxony*, it was not possible he should scape without some dirt in his face, as well as the rest. For whereas the Duke had granted Commission to certain persons, *viz.* unto *John Plaumitz*, a Nobleman, *Jerome Schurffius*, a Lawyer, *Philip Melanchon*, *Hawbitz*, and others, to make a visitation of *Saxony* (which themselves had filled with disorders) *Luther* was much offended at this, and therefore when they returned their Commission, and made report of things, he took occasion to shew his scorn and contempt of their proceedings arrogantly enough: *Trotz*, quoth he, *A fig for these visitors, they have done nothing*; and all this, because himself was left out of the Commission: That was it which vext his ambitious soul, so as he could not hold, but must discover himself in his very Sermons, *Nescio quâ de causâ: I cannot tell*, saith he, *why the Prince should neglect me in this business.* But because he was neglected, see how he takes it, Serm. in Dominicâ *Intravit.*

and what respect he professeth to the Orders agreed upon in that Visitation. *Si licet mihi decretales Papæ*; *Is it lawful for me*, saith he, *for Christian liberties sake, not onely to neglect, but to contemn and trample under my feet the Popes Decrees, the Canons of Councels, the Laws and Mandates of the Emperor himself, and of all Princes*; Vestrasne res gestas, &c. *And think you*, saith he, *I shall value your Orders so much, as to take them for Laws?* No, I warrant you; himself must, and will be judge always, what is fit to be Law: Neither the Duke, nor his Commissioners, must prescribe rules to him, further then his own humor pleaseth. And therefore, whereas the Duke had once presumed to forbid him writing any thing against the Archbishop of *Mentz*, (because he being so great a Prelate, and a Prince Elector of the Empire, it might occasion some publike disturbance,) speaking of this to *Spalatinus*, a famous *Lutheran*, and great friend of his; What saith he? *Non feram, quod*

Lib. cont. Ambros. Catharin.

Loc. Com. Class. 4. cap. 30.

quod ais, non paſſurum principem, &c. I cannot endure, ſaith *Luther, that you ſhould ſay, The Prince will not ſuffer me to write againſt him of* Mentz, *nor that the publike Peace ſhould be broken; rather then this ſhall be, I will looſe both thee, and the Prince too;* (if I tranſlate him well.) *Si enim Creatori ejus Papæ, &c. For,* ſaith he, *ſeeing I have reſiſted his Maker, the Pope, I will not ſurely ſubmit now to his Creature. No,* Spalatinus, *no, that ſhall never be.* Potius te & principem ipſum perdam.

And thus much of *Luthers* perſonal doctrine and ſpirit, by which you may ſufficiently judge of the man, and perceive, how contrary they were, both of them (perſon and doctrine) unto the Peace and Eſtabliſhed Government of the Empire. We are next to ſee what Tragedy followed this Prologue, and what effect ſuch principles of Sedition as theſe had upon the people; which indeed was very anſwerable to them. For when as this Wilde Boar in the Church of God (as he may be juſtly termed) had broken 11.

down the Pale of Order and Discipline, and the common people by his means had received such a pleasant new Gospel, as taught them, That they were exempted (now) from all Canons and Injunctions of the Church (made to restrain licentiousness and disorder;) That true Christians were freed from the Captivity of *Babylon*, that is, from all such Constitutions and Ceremonies, as they found burthensom, or less pleasing to themselves; That there was a more compendious way to Heaven lately found out, then had been formerly thought upon, that is to say, By Faith onely, with freedom from merits, and all the burthen of good works; That *Rome* was *Babylon*; That Bishops had seduced them for a long time together; That Religious men were Idolaters, and all Princes that favored or protected them, Tyrants; That the Will of God was not to suffer the poor Commonalty any longer to bear so heavy a yoke and subjection under such oppressors;

oppreſſors; when, I ſay, the common people had well drunk in, and were become mad with theſe intoxicating doctrines of Sedition and Liberty, no long time paſseth, but they riſe in Arms, make Inſurrections, and commit Outrages and Ryots all the Countries over: Each man was a drum and firebrand to his Neighbor, every one gave alarm to other, to riſe and root out ſo corrupt a Clergy, and depoſe ſuch unworthy Princes. Firſt of all, the Boors and Peaſants in *Germany* run together and make havock of all things in *Sœvia*, *Franconia*, *Alſatia*, and in many of the Imperial Towns alſo: They in *Franconia* profeſs they take Arms to expel the Nobility out of *Germany*, and to cut down thoſe Oaks of the Church, which ſtood in their way, *viz.* The Biſhops, Archbiſhops, and other Prelates, to aboliſh the old Laws, and to eſtabliſh others new in their ſtead. The heads of theſe tumults, and, as it were, Tribunes of the people, were

cheifly

cheifly *Thomas Muncer*, and *Phifer* his Comrade, with one *Chriſtopher Schaplerus*. *Muncer* was a moſt audacious fellow, and, as ſome report, of a Prieſt, was become an Apoſtate: He had been formerly Scholler to *Carolſtad*; yet *Melanchon* confeſſeth, That he came alſo to *Luthers* Lectures; which is not improbable, ſeeing he acted ſome of his doctrines ſo much to the life. In *Alſatia* he firſt began to Preach againſt the Pope, yet diſſented in many things from his Maſters doctrine; becauſe, as the Popes Laws were too ſevere, ſo *Luthers* (even in his opinion) gave too much liberty. There he alſo firſt preached againſt Maſs, and againſt the Baptizing of Infants, becauſe it was not expreſly commanded in the Scriptures. There he taught, That Chriſt did not take fleſh of the Virgin *Mary*; and that Magiſtrates did forfeit or looſe all Authority, ſo often as they committed Mortal ſin; and laſtly, That the people (that is, ſuch a rabble of the people as

Melanct. in Hiſt. Ana.

Cent. 15. p. 475.

as followed him tumultuously, and without any lawful order) might correct Princes when they offend. This fellow, to make his name and practices more reverenced by the people, pretended, as others did, extraordinary vocation from God; That what he did was by revelation and warrant of the Holy Ghost; that he had received from God the Sword of *Gideon*, *cogere universum orbem*, as the *Centuriſts* write of him, thereby *to compel the whole World, to acknowledge and ſet up the new Kingdom of Jeſus Chriſt*; to fight for *Iſrael*, and to depoſe Idolatrous Magiſtrates: And with ſuch phantaſtical pretences as theſe, he made ſhift to draw into the Field infinite numbers of people of *Franconia*, by whoſe help he won by force the ſtrong Town of *Winſpurgh*, ſlew the Count *Lodowick* of *Helphenſtein*; and either killed, or captivated all the Noblemen of the Country, whom they could encounter. Beſides, they ſacked and deſtroyed all Churches, Monaſteries, and Religi-

ous

ous places, where they came; Insomuch, as *Conradus Wimpin*, and other Authors affirm, That in this onely Circle of the Empire, they pillaged and spoiled neer upon Three hundred Monasteries, Castles, and Forts; and yet these wretched people could pretend, they took arms *for edification*. Is it not likely they did so? At last for want of Victuals, and other necessaries (as multitude and fury are seldom provident) they were forced to divide their Camps; so some of them marched towards the Dutchy of *Wirtembergh*, where by *Truchses*, General of the League of *Swevia*, they were all put to the Sword, or flight; yet very great numbers of them remained still in *Franconia*. Whereupon, because their tumults and proceedings tended so manifestly to the destruction of all State, Laws, and Government whatsoever, at last *John Frederick*, Duke of *Saxony*, (who had before connived at *Muncers* Preaching in *Alstadt*) his Uncle Duke *George* of *Leipsig*,

Surius Chron.

Leipſig, together with the other Princes, (the Emperor himſelf being then in *Spain*) joyned their forces, and at *Franckhuiſen* made a bloody ſlaughter and execution of thoſe Peaſants in their Camp; where *Muncer* and *Pheifer*, both, were taken priſoners and executed, and above a hundred thouſand men loſt their lives in theſe Tumults and Rebellion.

Yet could not ſuch a fearful warning as this abſolutely quiet their ſpirits: For in *Alſatia* they made new uproars, and above Twenty thouſand of them were ſlain by the Count *Palatine*, and *Anthony*, Duke of *Lorrain*. After this an other multitude of them put themſelves in Arms at *Peterſheim*, in the Territory of *Worms*, but were likewiſe defeated and put to the Sword. To conclude, no part of the Empire was perfectly cleer from this plague of Conſpiracy: For as the Boors in the Country, ſo in the Imperial Towns the common people would needs 12.

be

be reforming of Religion, and removing of such Magistrates, as did any way support the old. At *Erford* they degraded and committed all the Officers of the Town; at *Franckford* with more fury they spoiled the Churches, banished the Clergy, and put all the Authority and Government of the City into the hands of Twenty four Commoners; they created all inferior Magistrates new, made new Laws, expelled the old Senators, the whole Clergy, not without much threatning and terror; they selected and set forth Forty and seven Articles out of *Luthers* new doctrine, which they decreed should be observed religiously, and professed by all men; they sent them also to their Brethren at *Colen*, and *Mentz*, who had attempted the like pranks there, standing in Arms, and being Masters of the several Cities for some days together; but in the end failed. In the Territory of the Bishop of *Triers*, one *Francis Sicking*, a private *Lutheran*, yet out of his

Surius in Chron.

his zeal, and to comply, as ſome ſay, with the inſtigations of *Bucer*, and others, feared not to take up Arms, and to invade in hoſtile maner the Country of that Biſhop; took by aſſault a ſtrong place of the Princes own poſſeſſion; marched with his Army up to the very Walls of *Triers*, with intention to beſiedge it: But as his cauſe was wicked, and undertaken without any juſt ground of War, ſo the ſucceſs was anſwerable; his forces being ſuddenly compelled to retire, himſelf with many of his complices apprehended and attainted, and their Lands confiſcate. Briefly, and to give you the ſum of all theſe miſcheifs under one view, This Inundation, and, as it were, Firſt fury of theſe Reformers of *Germany*, was ſo general and violent, that all Church-Goods whatſoever, where they came, became prey and booty to them; Cathedral Churches were broken down, and ſhamefully defaced; Monaſteries ranſacked and robbed; Biſhops and Biſhopricks

ſpoiled,

ſpoiled; as *Magdeburgh* for example, the Seat of the Primate of *Germany*, and a Prince of the Empire; *Breme*, *Lubeck*, and no leſs then fourteen more beſide: So as the Imperial Chamber at *Spires* was for a long time after much diſquieted, and troubled with Actions, Petitions, and Complaints, about thoſe ſpoils; the Emperor himſelf marvellouſly perplexed, how to procure a Ceſſation of theſe diſorders, and to ſtop the Torrent of theſe Reformers: Neither could he do it effectually till many years after, *viz.* *Anno* 1544. when by an Edict he appointed Commiſſioners particularly to enquire *in bona Eccleſiæ invaſa*, after all Church-Goods purloyned. Till that time, himſelf had his hands full, and at ſome time more then enough to do, to make reſiſtance againſt their fury, and to pacifie the troubles, which continually grew upon him from theſe beginnings, as will hereafter more clearly appear. All which things are reported and teſtified to the

the World by *Jo. Cochlæus*, an Author beyond all exception, whose writings, out of which, most of this hath been taken, were published in *Luthers* life time, and never yet challenged by any man of false play. They are reported also generally by *Pontanus*, *Hortensius*, *Surius*, *Mountford*, *Florim. Ræmundus*; yea, by *Sleydan* himself, and others. And for my self, I can but protest to have used all sincerity in citing the evidence, which I had from so many worthy Witnesses: And that I do, as the *Romans* were wont to say in such cases, *Ita me Jupiter, si sciens fallo*; Let me not live, if I forge any thing, which I know to be otherwise.

Jo. Cochlæi Acta & Scripta *Lutheri.*

Flor. Ræmundus de ortu & Progress. Heresium.

But it will be replied perhaps by some, that I do *Luther* wrong, to charge him with these Tumults, and the Insurrections of the *Anabaptists*; seeing that he vehemently reproved their proceedings, gave them no encouragement at all, ever disliked those wilde phantasies of *Muncer*, and his followers, ever Preached 13.

Preached in defence of Magiſtrates and Civil Government: Thus pleadeth Doctor *Bilſon*, and ſome others in his behalf; but their labor is like the waſhing of a Blackamoor, all they can do will not make him white: For let the World judge by what hath been ſaid already, whether ſuch Poſitions and Exhortations, as we have inſtanced in out of his own writings, vehemently delivered by him, and as greedily ſwallowed by the people, could be any thing elſe, but fire to this fewel. Let his Bull againſt the Clergy, his Invectives againſt all Eccleſiaſtical Perſons and Orders, be well conſidered, and they will plainly appear to tend to nothing elſe. For what man is ſo ſenſeleſs, that would not be moved to contemn Authority, and endeavor by all means to enfranchiſe himſelf, when he ſhall hear Preached by an *Elias*, a man whom he ſuppoſeth to be ſent extraordinarily from God, to teach and reform the World, That Princes were

were Tyrants, Bishops blinde and false guides, Religious men Idolaters; and all the Powers of the World generally such, as by their corruptions and wickedness had forfeited their Authority; and that Christians had, and ought to enjoy, such a Charter of Liberty, as did exempt them in Conscience from all Humane Laws and Constitutions? I say, what man of sense can imagine, but the people fully perswaded of such maxims as these, from the mouth of such a Preacher, should not be always ready, and in a posture to rebel upon any occasion offered? And that *Luther* had taught them this, and much more in substance, is manifest, as I said, by what hath been alledged before; yet, as to that last particular, *Of exemption in point of Conscience from Humane Laws*, it may require a word or two more.

Not to insist therefore any further upon that which *Cochlæus* alledgeth out of his First Book, *Exhort. ad Pacem*, in these words, *In sæculari regimine* 14. *Cochlæ.* in Miscel.

regimine nihil amplius facitis: You Princes of the World, saith he, *what do you else, but fleece and pillage your poor Subjects to their very skin, to maintain your pride, till they can bear no longer?* Nor upon that which follows, *Non sunt Rustici*; *They are not the Boors, but God Almighty himself, which is coming against them for their Tyranny*: These shall pass as peices of his accustomed Malapertness with them, or, if it be possible, with some tolerable interpretation. But certainly that which follows, admits none. In his Book, *De captiv. Babylon. Ab omnibus hominum legibus, &c. We are*, saith he, *freed from all Laws of men whatsoever, by vertue of that Christian Liberty, which is given us in Baptism.* And in the same Book, *Scio nullam rempublicam, &c. I know*, saith he, *very well, there is never a Commonwealth in the World well governed by these Laws of men*: And therefore concludes it to be, *Turpe & iniquiter servile*; *A shameful thing, and a slavery unworthy of a Christian man*

Cap. de Baptism.

Cap. de Matrim.

Cap. de Sac. Ord.

who

who is free, to be subject to any Laws, but the Laws of God, and of Heaven. I know some men endeavor to put Interpretations even upon these Passages, to make them seem less scandalous. Doctor *Whitacre* in particular telleth us, That *Luther* meant not, that men are so exempt from Humane Laws, as that every one might do what he list; but that the Conscience of a Believer was free from all Humane Laws, *in respect of Religion.* As if to *obey Magistrates*, in obedience to the Will and Ordinance of God, as Magistracy is plainly, *Rom.* 13. and as we ought to do in all the obedience we give to them, 1 *Pet.* 2. 13. were not *matter and duty of Religion*; As to do it for Publike peace sake, and in regard of that Authority which they have by consent of men; and for our good, is an act of Morality or Civil Justice, due unto them upon the account of Natural Right and Humane Reason, abstracting from the Law of God: or, as if, out of the case of scandal,

Respons. ad rat. 8. *Campian.*

scandal, peril, or some other such extrinsecal considerations, a man might neglect, or not observe, the just Laws of men, at his pleasure, without offence against God; or lastly, as if to resist lawful Magistracy out of a mans private Authority, Passion, or Spleen, were not a thing contrary to Religion. But let *Luther* interpret himself, *Dico itaque, neque Papa, neque Episcopus, &c. I say therefore*, saith he, as Sir *Thomas Moor* cites him in his Latin work abovementioned, *That neither the Pope, nor Bishops, nor any mortal man whatsoever, hath authority to lay the least syllable of command upon a Christian, unless it be by his own consent.*

Lovan. 1566.

15. Nor do we insist so much here, what studied or strange sense may possibly, perhaps, be put upon his words; but how they sound outwardly, and how they are apt to be understood by common people, who do not usually stand much pondering about words, but take them as they sound; especially when

when they found Liberty, or any thing agreeable to their corrupt Passions and Humors, as these do. And that we may see his design did drive directly against the Laws themselves, and not onely against such impertinent and imaginary niceties, which men might raise about the observing of them, in his Book *Ad Nobilitat. German.* he absolutely vilifies the Law it self, so far as to prefer the *Turks Alcoran* before it. *Men say*, saith he, *there is no better Government in the World, then with the* Turk, *and yet he hath neither Canon nor Civil Law, onely his Alcoran: But with us it is plain, there can be no worse Government found, then that which we have by the Canon and Civil Law:* What did he mean, think we? What rule did he leave the people to be guided by, but their own Humors and Passions, who before had traduced the Princes themselves for Tyrants, for Oppressors; and now debaseth the Law (that is, the onely rule by which the Princes pretended to

govern) even beneath the *Alcoran* it self? Adde hercunto, that his own friends, and such as follow him in most things, do for this very reason charge him directly, *To have been no small cause of the Wars in* Germany; yea, his own *Osiander* testificth, That the Boors, who made such havock for a while in *Germany* by their conspiracies, and especially against the Clergy, did not onely pretend *the Gospel*, and *the Liberty of the Gospel* for their doings, but did even appeal therein to *Luther* himself: *Ad* Lutheri *judicium provocaverant*; *They appealed*, saith he, *to* Luthers *judgement*: Not to urge what *Erasmus* hath to this effect, nor what *Menno Simonius*, an Anabaptist, acknowledgeth in his Book *De cruce Christi*, *Quàm sanguinolentas seditiones* Lutherani, *&c. What bloody Riots and Murthers the* Lutherans *have committed, for some years past, to maintain their Doctrine?* And as to that part of the Objection, that *Luther* did reprove, yea, write against the Boors, it is the poorest fallacy

Hospin. Hist. Sacram.

Centur. 16. p. 16.

Hyperaspist. adverss. *Lutherum.*

fallacy of all: He did it, but how? With such calumniating and taxing of the Princes themselves, as they could be little secured by his writing, and the Boors as little discouraged. He did it, but when? When it was too late; when he could forbear no longer; when he found himself generally censured, and murmured at by the Nobility, and better sort of people, as an occasion at least, if not an Instrument and Fautor of those mischeifs. Lastly, He did it, but when? When he saw the Boors go down, that they were not likely to maintain their quarrel, nor to go through with their work; then indeed he left them in the Bryers (wisely enough) though they appealed to him, though they used, yea, alledged his own Homilies and Sermons, for what they did, though they were all for Reformation, all for Liberty, all against the Church of *Rome*, and against Bishops, yea, and that their very word in the Field was *Vivat Evangelium*; *Let the Gospel flourish*

16. Hitherto we have discourſed cheifly of *Luthers* doctrinal extravagancies, and touched upon the evil practiſes, or fruits thereof, onely in ſuch men, as either for the privateneſs and meanneſs of their condition (being all of them Boors, Peaſants, and rude Country people) or for the unſucceſsfulneſs of their deſigns are generally diſclaimed: Such as neither *Luther*, nor any of his followers will readily own. I come now to give a further inſtance of the miſchief, which the doctrine and doings of this man brought upon *Germany*, in a buſineſs which was publikely owned, not by *Luther* onely, but by many of the Princes themſelves; who for the defence of his new Doctrine, and protection of his wretched perſon, bandied themſelves againſt the Emperor, their Sovereign Lord, and againſt the general body of the Empire, of which they were both Members and Subjects, and by the Publike Laws, whereof themſelves in that relation ought to have been

been governed. The beginning, proceedings, and iſſue of which confederacy was briefly thus.

Old *John Frederick* Elector, and Duke of *Saxony*, the *Landſgrave* of *Heſſen*, with ſome others, already caught with the Liberty, and other advantages which they made of *Luthers* new doctrine, (beſides an old and inveterate emulation in moſt of them againſt the Houſe of *Auſtria*, which then was, and ſtill is Imperial) firſt enter a League at *Smalcald*, which is a Town of *Heſſia* upon the Frontiers of *Saxony*, onely (as they pretended) for their own defence, and to maintain their Religion and Liberties againſt ſuch men as would invade or perſecute them. We muſt obſerve here firſt, That the Religion ſpoken of, was a Religion but then newly and privately taken up of themſelves, contrary to that which was publikely received and acknowledged in the Empire; and by vertue, or rather pretext whereof, they were obliged to do, and ſuffer to be done many 17.

things, which were expresly contrary to the Constitutions of the Empire; which Constitutions, the Emperor, together with themselves, were by oath solemnly bound to observe, and see observed. In this League were also comprehended, the Duke of *Wittemberg*, and some of the Imperial Towns: They renewed it again at *Franckfort*, and after that again at *Aufpurgh*, confirming it with a general and solemn Protestation of what their opinions were in matter of Religion; which Protestation being then exhibited unto the Emperor in their names, the Title, or Sirname of Protestants, became thenceforward appropriate to that party. After this, *viz. Anno* 1536. Suspecting some opposition would be made against them by the Emperor, and other States of *Germany*, for such proceedings, and not willing to be taken at unawares by him, they bring (*viz.* themselves first of all) an huge Army into the Field, commanded by the yong Duke of *Saxony*, *John Frederick* (his Father

Father being dead,) and the *Landſgrave* of *Heſſen*, with reſolution by force of Arms, to finde or make themſelves right, as they called it. The Duke of *Wittemberg*, the Imperial Towns, *Auſpurgh*, *Ulm*, *Strasburgh*, and *Franckfort*, ſent them aid. The Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine* had levyed Two hundred horſe for them, but upon better thoughts revoked them, when they were upon their march. The Duke of *Brunſwick* and his ſons, the Duke of *Luneburgh*, the yong Marqueſs of *Baden*, the Prince of *Anhalt*, the Counts of *Furſtenburgh* and *Mansfield* joyned with them, either in perſon or power. Their Army conſiſted of about Seventy thouſand fighting men, and among them Seven thouſand and ſeven hundred at leaſt were Horſe; they had an hundred and twelve Cannon and Field pieces, with ſuch an infinite quantity of all ſorts of Proviſions, as gave them an aſſured hope and confidence of Victory. The eyes of all Princes were upon this action; *Surius* in Chron.

and *Germany* it ſelf trembled in expectation of the event and ſucceſs of ſuch an Army prepared, as they ſaw, to ſwallow up the Emperor, (if they could) and to ſubvert the whole Government and Religion of the Empire; I mean that Religion and Government which was then eſtabliſhed, and had ſtood ſo eſtabliſhed many hundred years, before the Fathers or Grand-fathers of any of thoſe Princes, now in Arms to deſtroy it, were born. The Emperor had onely God, and a juſt cauſe on his ſide; for his friends, thoſe I mean, who openly and avowedly appeared for him, were few; *viz.* The King of the *Romans*, his Brother, the Duke of *Bavaria*, and the Duke of *Cleve:* For though Duke *Maurice* of *Saxony* followed him, yet in regard of his affinity with the *Landſgrave*, whoſe Son in law he was; as alſo for his Religion, being a *Lutheran*, he could not but be ſuſpected. However, it pleaſed God, notwithſtanding this huge Army of the Princes, that the Emperor

Emperor became Master of the Field, with a most compleat and signal Victory; yea, (which was an accident more rare) the two Generals (*Saxony* and *Hessen*, both of them) became prisoners, and their whole Army was defeated. The yong Duke of *Saxony* (a person much honored and pitied) had his life given him, with some connivence for his Religion; yet his impregnable Fort at *Gotha* was demolished, and the Electorate with all the Lands thereunto belonging, were bestowed by the Emperor upon Duke *Maurice*. The like mercy for life was shewed the *Landsgrave*, who after some time, obtained his liberty also. The Duke of *Wittemberg* for Two hundred thousand Duckats; and the Imperial Towns, partly with Money, and partly upon their humble Petitions and Submission, made their peace at last with the Emperor. And thus, by the good Providence of God, and happy conduct of *Cæsar*, was the Empire preserved *in Statu quo prius*;

the Electors Eccleſiaſtical and other Prelates, continued, and their Dignities maintained; whereas, in all probability, had the Princes prevailed, as they had already by the inſtigation of *Luther*, and ſuch Preachers, ſwallowed the Revenues, extinguiſhed, yea, wholly buried the Title, State, and Authority of Biſhops in their own Provinces, ſo would they have done all the Empire over.

18. Now as Greatneſs and Innovation ſeldom want Patrons, nor wit to colour their faults, ſo it muſt be confeſſed, there are ſome, who endeavor to excuſe *Luther* and *Lutheraniſm* of the odiouſneſs of this Action, yea, and the Action it ſelf from the imputation of Rebellion.

Differences of Chriſtian Subjects, &c. Firſt of all Doctor *Bilſon* affirmeth, That the Lawyers of *Germany* do in ſome caſes permit reſiſtance to be made againſt *Cæſar*; but he names not one: Then he ſaith, The States of *Germany* are not abſolutely ſubject to the Emperor, but onely upon ſome conditions.

Secondly,

Secondly, the Divines of *Magdeburgh* plead, That if the Magistrate pass the bounds of his Authority, and command things wicked and unlawful, he may well be resisted, and must not be obeyed. Thirdly, *Sleydan* saith, We may resist *Cæsar* with good Conscience, when he intends the destruction of Religion and Liberty. Lastly, *Philip Melanthon* with great confidence gives Authority to the Inferior Magistrate, to alter Religion and overthrow Idolatry. So they all conclude the War lawful, both by Gods Law and Mans: And this indeed is the substance of the Reasons, alledged by the Duke, and the *Landsgrave*, both when the League was first made at *Smalcald*, and when they first proclaimed War against the Emperor.

Centur. 16.

Lib. 19. fol. 263.

Consil. Evangel. Part. 1. p. 314.

But, as it is easie to perceive, these Doctors Assertions do all of them suppose certain things, which ought first to be proved; as for example, 1. That *Cæsar* passed the bounds of his Authority; for if he did not, it

19.

it is clear, they passed theirs. 2. That he commanded things wicked and unlawful. 3. That he went about to destroy true Religion, and their Liberty: All these must be proved, before it be lawful to take Arms, and resist him, by their own confession. I demand therefore of them this Question, When *Cæsar* or the Supream Magistrate commandeth any thing to be done, which is not apparently contrary to the Laws of the Empire then in force, who shall be Censor, who shall Judge, whether *Cæsar* passeth the bounds of his Authority? and whether the things which he commandeth be impious, or no? They answer, he absolutely sought to destroy their Religion and Liberties: But I reply, it hath been an old and usual stratagem of Satan, to oppose Religion against Religion, thereby to bring in *Atheism*, and leave us no Religion. Beside, making *Lutheranism* to be the onely true Religion, and their Liberties to consist in the free profession of that, they take that for granted

granted which *Cæsar* both at *Worms* and *Auſpurgh* made the greateſt Queſtion. So they argue not well, becauſe they do not proceed *ex conceſſis*; yea, it is manifeſt, that when they did preſume to ſet up a new Religion, they paſſed themſelves the bounds of their Authority; and the World might judge *Cæsar* a very ſimple Prince, if he ſhould either change his own Religion, or tolerate theirs upon the bare credit of *Luthers* private opinion and ſpirit, or upon the bare Proteſtation of the Confederates. For were they competent Judges againſt the whole World? or can Religion be lawfully and orderly changed by Civil Magiſtrates onely? and when neither a General Councel, nor National Councel hath decreed it, nor any Imperial Dyet eſtabliſhed it? may every Elector or Prince frame a new Religion for his own Province by Law, without conſent of the Emperor and States? Give me an Inſtance, ſhew me a Preſident, when any ſuch Innovation was ever made

made in the Empire, without an Imperial Dyet. Shew me a Law, or some colour of Law, by which it might be done, or else confess, That the Princes taking up Arms against the Emperor was without Justice, and their quarrel without lawful ground. Beside, was it lawful for the Confederates to coyn a new Religion, and maintain it by Arms, and was it not more lawful for the Emperor to defend the old, which was already received, and to reform them? The Boors took Arms upon the self-same pretences, *viz.* For Religion and Liberty; yet the Princes with their own forces, and with no less Justice and Honor, subdued them. Why might not therefore *Cæsar* compel the Confederates unto the same terms, as they did the Boors, *viz.* To exercise that Religion which was established, at least with *à quousque*, until a legal Reformation could be had, and to obey the Laws in force, and to keep the Peace of the Commonwealth? Doth the degree or dignity of the

persons

persons make the cause so different? I trow not. And for any designs of *Cæsar* upon them, under colour of Religion, it cannot be made good: They were first in the Field; the Emperor had not any forces ready a long time after; yea, they pursued him with their Army, and compelled him to fortifie himself: So that if mens Councels may be guessed at by their actings, it is clear, they had rather designs upon him: And his favorable dealings with all of them after the Victory, do more then refute such a calumny. But, saith Dr. *Bilson*, The Emperor is not absolutely to be obeyed by the States: It is no matter. He is to be obeyed in seeing the Laws and Constitutions of the Empire observed, and that is enough to justifie his proceedings in the case. How far he is absolute, and how far the Princes do owe fealty and homage to him, and obedience to the Publike Constitutions of the Empire, their several Oaths taken at the Coronation of the one, and

P. Avila, de bello Germanico

Investitures

Inveſtitures or Inſtalments of the other, do beſt ſhew.

20. But I will leave skirmiſhing and come to the main point. It is moſt certain, That *Cæſar* did obſerve the Law, and that the Confederate Princes did violate both the Laws and Liberties of *Germany*. For what Prince ſoever ſtands *Rectus in Curiâ*, having the ancient and known Laws of the Kingdom on his ſide, muſt always be judged to hold a better plea then Subjects, who arm themſelves againſt him illegally, diſorderly, and by authority of their own private opinions onely. At that time *Cæſar* was bound by Law to extirpate *Lutheraniſm*, and to maintain the Popes authority in *Germany*, as it was acknowledged in the other parts of Chriſtendom, he was bound to maintain Catholike Religion, and the Immunities or Rights of the Church; ſo manifeſtly, that even their own *Goldaſtus* doth acknowledge it to be the Emperors Oath ſo to do; which is not a new Oath neither:

neither: For the ſame in effect was taken long ſince by *Carolus* 4. *Otho* 1. and 3. and by *Carolus Magnus*, which is a preſcription every way good and indiſputable. The like profeſſion alſo we finde made by thoſe ancient and religious Emperors, *Theodoſius*, *Gratian*, *Valentinian*, *Juſtinian*, and others, both in the *Code* and *Novel Conſtitutions*. How therefore could the Emperor, either maintain or ſuffer any other Religion in the Empire, then that which he found already eſtabliſhed, and allowed by all his Predeceſſors, declared by ſo many Councels, continued ſo many Generations, ratified by all the Imperial Dyets, and laſtly, by his own Oath? Beſide, did the Duke of *Saxony*, or the *Landſgrave*, when they were priſoners, ever plead the Law on their ſide? did they ever uſe any ſuch argument, any ſuch excuſe? No; they ſubmitted abſolutely, and craved pardon for their lives, from his hands to whom they were forfeited; and how ridiculous alſo

had

had the plea been? For shall the Duke of *Saxony* take arms for the defence of *Lutheranism*, and may not the Count *Palatine* of *Rhine* do the same in defence of *Calvinism*, which yet the *Lutherans* will not endure? or an *Halberstat* for *Epicurism*? or a *Muncer* with his Boors for *Anabaptism*? and so by *Anarchy*, under pretence of Conscience and Liberties, rend in peices the Empire, and open the Ports of *Germany* to the *Turk*. But to stop the mouth of Learned Ignorance, I will discover more particularly, and lay down the foundation of this great quarrel betwixt *Cæsar* and the Confederate Princes, and the legal order and method of proceeding, which the Emperor constantly observed therein.

21. In the year 1521. The Emperor conferred personally with *Luther* at *Worms*, and out of his special Grace and Benignity, further required the Archbishop of *Triers*, and the Elector of *Brandenburgh*, to treat with him, and perswade him to Conformity;

Conformity; but perceiving him obſtinate, and reſolved not to ſubmit himſelf to any due Authority, and finding that all his Courſe, Books, Sermons tended to nothing but Sedition, and making further diviſions among the people; at laſt he made a Decree, with the general conſent of the States, not to put him to death, ſuch was his mercy, but to baniſh him the Empire, wherein was ſhewn, as appeared afterward by the event, much more lenity then juſt providence. In which Decree, after the Cauſes and Reaſons of ſuch proceedings at large declared and ſet down, he concludeth thus. *Mandantes de eorundem Statuum conſenſu, ſub crimine læſæ Majeſtatis, &c. Commanding by and with conſent of the ſaid States, under pain of High Treaſon, and forfeiture of whatſoever, Lands, Principalities, Goods or Priviledges holding of us, and of the Sacred* Roman *Empire; as alſo of Proſcription, or our Imperial Ban to be* ipſo facto *incurred, &c. That neither you, nor any*

of

any of you do presume to receive, maintain, or harbor the said Martin Luther, *&c. And that ye burn all those his foresaid Heretical and Seditious Books.* And this Edict was directed to all the Electors, Princes, Imperial Towns, and States. Now can you imagine, that the Duke of *Saxony*, or the *Landsgrave*, were exempted from this Edict? or that the Emperor had not as full power to call them to account for their contempt of it, as any inferior persons? or otherwise, that those Princes were the *Ephori* of *Germany*, and might curb the Emperor himself, if they saw cause? Then certainly the Emperor of *Germany* were but a poor shadow of an Emperor, a *Titulus sine re* indeed, a matter of nothing but empty Title, and it were true that which *Bodin* saith, that *Imperium in Imperio quærendum est*; A man might seek for an Emperor all the Empire over, and not finde him: Which yet by his leave, is a gross error. Well! The Duke of *Saxony*, notwithstanding this Edict, would maintain

Jo. Bodin, de Rep.

maintain and protect *Luther*; as he did at *Alstat* a Town of his own in *Turingia*; which place *Luther* with no small arrogance, or impiety rather, was wont to call his *Pathmos*; and in the mean time changed Religion, and established *Lutheranism* in all his own Dominions; and at *Smalcald*, as we said before, entred a League against the Emperor for maintenance of it.

Which actions of the Duke, that you may understand how directly they are against Law and Justice, *Andrew Gail* that famous Lawyer shall tell you, *Receptores bannitorum perinde puniantur, &c. The Receivors*, saith he, *of Outlaws or Banished persons, are lyable to the same punishment*, that such people are; and *Domini Prædiorum, The Lords*, saith he, *of those places where they lurk, are bound to deliver them up*; *viz.* To Justice. And again, *Qui bannito commeatum & annonam suppeditat, He that supplieth an Outlaw with provision or victuals, is ordinarily judged as a receivor. Brunus* shall also tell you, 22.

Gailius de Pace public. c. 10. sect. 36.

Adverf. Hereſ. lib. 1. c. 4.

you, That in *excommunicatis, qui bannitis*; *That the very entertainment of excommunicate and outlawed persons, is criminal and lyable to punishment.* If you suppose, that these Laws respected onely inferior receivors, and that the Duke was free, hear what *Gail* saith again.

Lib. 1. c. 1. sect. 9. *Conditio Pacis publicæ, &c. An Edict for the publike Peace, obligeth all persons in the Empire of what state, condition or dignity soever, as well the Princes themselves, as the inferior people; yea,* saith he, *though it were published against some one or more of the Princes.* The Duke therefore not obeying the Law, and knowing that the Emperor had oft written out of *Spain*, that the Edict of *Worms* should be executed, he aggravated his crime fearing the indignation of *Cæsar*; and thereupon took up arms, and entred into the League, as hath been said. And yet notwithstanding after this League entred, such was the lenity of *Cæsar*, that his Ambassador at *Spires*, in the year 1529. offered the

the Confederates moſt equal and moderate terms of accord, *viz.* No more then that *utrinque ab omni injuriâ, &c. That henceforward both parties ſhould abſtain from doing injury to others, and from all offenſive language or reviling each other; and that onely offenders againſt this agreement ſhould be baniſhed.* A man would think this were a reaſonable offer from the Supream Magiſtrate to the Inferiors, obnoxious both to him and the Law: Yet was it rejected by the Confederates. At *Auſpurgh* again in the year 1530. the Emperor moſt graciouſly entertained the Duke, and received a Petition from him, with as much favor and indifferency as could ſtand with his honor: And there again revived his Ambaſſadors motion at *Spires*, that no further Innovations might be made, no more Books publiſhed, but that at leaſt all things might abide in quiet State, till the Seventeenth of *May* enſuing: So much did his Imperial Majeſty yeeld for Peace ſake. And

yet

yet the Duke rejected his motion; which so much displeased the Emperor, that he forbore not to tell him, and the rest of the Leaguers, *That if they obeyed not, they should repent it.* And yet again, at *Spires* he labored to have prevailed with them by fair means; but thither the Duke (being grown more jealous and fearful of *Cæsar*) would not come. However by this course, which the Emperor constantly held towards them, you may see, how unwilling he was to disturb the Peace, or to begin the War; and how inexcusable they were, that rejected so often the offers of accommodation.

23. But beside this, if I should relate the malice and contempt they used to him, you might well think they ought not to have expected the least degree of mercy from him, in case they should fall into his hands, as it hapned they did. For in all their publike Letters they vouchsafed him no other Title, then *Charls of Gaunt, usurping the name of Emperor*;

Surius in Chron.

Emperor; whereby they renounced all obedience to him, and so far as in them lay, deposed him: Which was an indignity the meanest Prince of them all, would not have accounted sufferable in his own person. I must not forget, that the *Landsgrave* did usually, both by Letters and Messages, with no little bravery and confidence assure the Princes, and Towns of the League, that within three moneths they would force *Charls* to flie out of *Germany*, and leave the Empire to them. But how then did their pretences hang together? that this League was made onely *se defendendo*, and for their Lawful Protection? Surely they aimed at some thing more, when they talked of expelling the Emperor out of *Germany*. As they also did when they solicited the Kings of *France*, *England*, *Denmark*, the *Hans* Towns, and *Swisses*, to joyn with them, and dishonorably abused him by many foul and infamous aspersions. It is true, *France* indeed, (though his

enemy at that time) nobly denied them; *Denmark* lingred, expecting the ſucceſs; neither was King *Henry* forward, though his great Counſellor, and Favorite, *Cromwel*, ſollicited their buſineſs diligently, and was ſo forward, as to promiſe an hundred thouſand Crowns for their aid. At which time Doctor *Thirlby*, Biſhop of *Weſtminſter*, and Sir *Philip Hobby*, were the Kings Ambaſſadors with the Emperor, and by that occaſion witneſſes of the whole Tragedy.

24. And yet a little further, to diſprove their proceedings by Law: Let us remember firſt the Decree at *Worms* above-mentioned, which as *Gail* the Lawyer hath told us, in the caſe of publike Peace, obligeth all perſons alike: Let us remember the Decree of *Maximilian* the Firſt Emperor, about the year 1500. in theſe words, *Conſentientibus Statuum & Ordinum votis, &c. By the general conſent of the Princes and States of the Empire, an Edict or Conſtitution was publiſhed neceſſary for*

for publike Peace, called in the Language of the Empire *Landtfrieden. By which Conſtitution, Proſcription* or Baniſhment *was adjudged to all ſuch as diſturbed the publike Peace by force of Arms*; which *Gail* further explains to this ſenſe. *Omnia Bella, &c. All War*, ſaith he, *made without conſent of the Prince, and Commiſſion from him, upon private revenge or quarrel onely, is adjudged unlawful.* And Cap. 5. *In crimen læſæ Majeſtatis incurrit, &c. He commits high Treaſon*, ſaith he, *whoſoever within the Empire raiſeth Arms, but by the Emperors Authority and Commiſſion; becauſe he uſurps to himſelf, that which is the proper Prerogative Imperial.* Yea, their own *Goldaſtus* confeſſeth it to be ancient Law, *Nemo intra Imperii fines, &c. That no man preſume to gather Soldiers within the bounds of the Empire, but by conſent of the Prince of that reſpective Circle where he is; and that he give ſufficient Caution to the State, that he intends not to attempt any thing againſt the Emperor, or againſt any of the*

Gailius de Pace. lib. 1. c. 14.

Lib. 1. tit. 190.

Tom. 2. *States of the Empire.* And in another place he alledgeth a Decree of *Ludovicus Pius*, againſt the King of the *Romans* and his Confederates, as guilty of High Treaſon, for attempting againſt the Emperor. The like alſo of *Henry* the Firſt, againſt *Arnulphus*, Duke of *Baviere*, who rebelled againſt him; and of *Otho* the Firſt, againſt *Ludolphus*, King of the *Romans*; and laſtly, of *Maximilian* the Firſt, againſt *Emicho*, Earl of *Lingen*, whom he proclaimed Traytor, confiſcated his Lands and Eſtate, and gave them to other Princes of the Empire, onely for going to ſerve the *French* King in his Wars, though out of the Empire, contrary to his Proclamation. And as for the Imperial Towns, which confederated with theſe Princes, there is as little to be ſaid for them: For it is a Maxim of Law, recorded by *Gail*, *Ubi ſupra*; that *Civitatum Imperialium ſolus Imperator eſt dominus*. That the Emperor onely is Lord of the Imperial Cities, and not their ſeveral Magiſtrates:

ſtrates: And that they pretended their Liberties in this caſe againſt the Emperor, to no purpoſe.

And for *Luther*, who was the *primum mobile*, and cheif wheel of all theſe motions; or rather the *malus Genius*, that Fury which agitated the people, and ſtirred them up to all theſe diſorders, if the Princes and Towns were thus guilty, he could not be innocent. If the Flock did erre, the Shepherd which led them, was to blame. I ſhall not here charge him again with any ſmall faults, I will not accuſe him of belying *Cæſar* moſt impudently, when he wrote to his friend thus: *Wormatiam ingreſſus ſum. I entred* Worms, ſaith he, *at a time, when I knew that* Cæſar *would not keep Faith with me.* Nor of his traducing or vilifying that moſt Fundamental Conſtitution of the Empire in *Aureâ Bullâ*, making it one of the cheif miracles which Antichriſt was to work, *viz.* The tranſlating of the Empire from the *Greeks* to the *French*, in the perſon of *Carolus* 25. In Epiſt.

Tureſel. Epitom. lib. 6. p. 204.

Magnus, which was done by Pope *Leo* the Third: Nor of his uſurping upon the Emperor and Temporal Government, in thoſe pretended Laws of his which he publiſhed, concerning the Publike Exchequer; and how he would have Church-Lands and Abby-Lands to be diſpoſed, when he and the Princes ſhould be Maſters of all. It ſhall be enough, that I ſay, He firſt counſelled the Princes to take Arms, and oppoſe *Cæſar* in his quarrel; and this *Sleydan* himſelf acknowledgeth. And that all his Preaching, and all his endeavors were to overthrow the Eccleſiaſtical Electors, whoſe Dignities and Eſtates being eſtabliſhed by the *Aureâ Bullâ*, it was Treaſon, or Sedition in the higheſt degree ſo to do. The three Eccleſiaſtical Electors, are three Chancelors of the Empire, and in reſpect of their Regalities, immediately ſubject to the Emperor; ſo as there lieth no appeal from them to the Pope, but to the Emperor, and Chamber at *Spires*. *Luther* there-

fore

fore contriving their ruine, attempted treacherously to pull the fairest Flowers out of the Imperial Crown. Neither could he effect the suppression of them, but he must undermine and endanger the State of the Temporal Electors also; who, as links of the same chain, must necessarily have faln to the ground upon the dissolution of the other; for they had no other ground, nor could plead any other Charter for their Dignities and Immunities, then the Ecclesiasticks did.

Therefore, to draw towards a conclusion, concerning *Luther* and his practises, I shall adde one instance more of intolerable iniquity and arrogance, which *Cochlæus* relates, either of *Luther* (as is most probable, for the Author appeared masked, and was *Anonymus*) or at least of some *Lutheran*, published upon these differences betwixt *Cæsar* and the Princes. *Atque ut ora eis obturem*; *And that I may stop their mouths for ever*, saith he, *they are to* 26. *Cochlæ.* in Miscel.

know, ſpeaking of the Pope, Emperor, and other Princes Catholike, *That they are but Elective all of them, and that they may be depoſed for their miſgovernment, as hath been oftentimes done.* This is very modeſt, in compariſon of what follows; for having unto this Propoſition added an Aſſumption, as full of calumnies and ſlanders, he concludes very Logically againſt *Cæſar* thus: *Hunc ego exactorem; Such an Oppreſſor and Tyrant, as this, ſuch a* Moabite, *ſuch a* Phalaris, *ſuch a* Nero *to drive him out of the Country, to pull him out of his Throne, cannot but be a thing moſt acceptable to God.* How juſtly therefore may that ſage Counſel of *Mecænas* given to *Auguſtus*, be applied unto him, and thoſe of his Gang; as the Hiſtorian relates it. *Eos, qui in divinis aliquid innovant, odio habe & coerce. They that introduce Innovations in the matters of Religion, deteſt*, ſaith he, *and be ſure to reſtrain, not onely for the ſake of the gods (whoſe honor yet whoſoever neglecteth, doth ſeldom advance himſelf*

Dio Caſs. lib. hiſt. 52.

ſelf much) but alſo for thy own: For ſuch perſons by bringing in of new opinions, and new cuſtoms concerning the gods, do very much diſquiet the people, and make them deſire change in the Affairs of State: Whence proceed Seditions, Conſpiracies, Factions, and Tumults among them; all which, are things prejudicial to the Dignity of a Prince, and ſhould be avoided. How true this is, *Germany* and theſe other parts of Chriſtendom have been a ſad example, for theſe hundred of years. And how juſtly it might be done, *Luther* himſelf will tell you as clearly as any man, if you conſult him, when he is himſelf: For though he were a mad Doctor, yet he had his *lucida intervalla*, and could now and then diſcern Reaſon, eſpecially when he declaimed againſt Sacramentaries and Anabaptiſts; for then the Magiſtrate muſt do his office, and no man muſt complain. *Neque is Sectarius, quem animadvertitur per Magiſtratum, cogitur ad fidem.* For, ſaith he, *ſuch a Sectary as is puniſhed by the* *Enarrat. in Pſalm 82. Tom. 3. f. 488. Wittemb.*

Civil Magistrate, is not compelled to the Faith, as they commonly pretend; but his impious and unsound Doctrine is suppressed, his blasphemous mouth stopped, and the danger of corrupting of better Christians, prevented. And therefore, *Eat aliàs*; Let him go, saith he, *whether he will, let him go exercise his gifts among the* Turks *and* Pagans, *rather then abide here to corrupt Christians.* And again, *Nam ut sæpe dixi: For as I have often told you*, saith he, *they that will live in any City, are bound to observe the Laws of the place; nor are they to be endured, who shall presume to do or speak any thing contrary thereunto: Yea, they may be stoned, as blasphemers were by the Law of* Moses, *and condemned, even without tryal: And if such a course had been taken with* Muncer, Carolstad, *and the rest of that Rabble, in the beginning, when they first began to publish their opinions privately, and without any lawful calling, we had seen much less calamity in* Germany *at this day.* Thus sharply and truly, *Luther* against them.

Indictâ causâ & inauditâ.

them. But how is this evil Servant condemned by his own mouth! For is it lawful, and the duty of the Civil Magistrate to punish and restrain the Preaching of new unsound Doctrines in *Muncer*, *Carolstad*, and the rest of them; and shall it not be permitted to *Cæsar*, to take the like legal course with him, doing the same things? He must needs perish by his own breath, and by the verdict which he gives against his adversaries, he draweth an Indictment against himself; under which we leave him, and pass on, to see what pranks our Masters of the Reformation played, upon the like principles or pretences, in the other parts of Christendom.

Titulus

Titulus Secundus.

CALVINISM:

OR

The Tumults in *France.*

1. I Leave *Germany*, and launch out into an Ocean of as great miſeries in *France*, and enquire there, whether *Calviniſm* doth any better diſpoſe people to obedience (which is our grand quære) then *Lutheraniſm* did. The firſt founder of this Sect was *Huldericus Zuinglius*, whoſe followers *Luther* always called *Sacramentaries*, but now generally they have their title from *Calvin*; whoſe tranſcendency in evil, hath overſhadowed the others glory, and is ſolely reverenced as the Patriarch and Architect of *Genevah*; that framed all her State and

and Diſcipline, and ordered the motions of her ſphere with much art and policy. *Luther* was harſh and ſtern, uſing neither modeſty nor good maners with men: *Calvin* was more cautelous and of a ſubtler ſpirit, appearing at firſt to the World in Humility, and covered with a Foxes skin. *Luther* was the firſt cauſe, but *Calvin* glorieth that he gave perfection to all. Both of them were vain glorious; both bred in the Schools of Law and Contention; both ſpecial friends to the Fleſh and to Pleaſure, and neither of them commended much for Piety or Devotion. For the deſcription of the Life and Converſation of *Calvin*, of his Nature, Behavior, Dyet, and general Epicuriſm, I refer you to one, that ſat long by him to draw his Picture, and hath done it to the life. It is Dr. *Hierome Bolſec*, one that was uſed to feel his pulſe, and knew his humors. A man not hired, nor corrupted to do it; (as ſome have affirmed without any ſhew of proof, onely to weaken

Hier. Bolſec vita Calvin.

weaken his teſtimony, and maintain the credit of their *Caliphæ*) and who in the beginning maketh a moſt ſerious, yea, Religious Proteſtation of Truth and Candor in the buſineſs. *Francis Baldwin*, a man that lived long with *Calvin*, and knew well what blood ran in all his veins, concurreth with him: So doth *Florimundus de Ræmund*, a *French* Gentleman of eminent quality: *Claudius de Sainctes*, Biſhop of *Eureux*, and others; not to mention any *Lutherans*. Theſe have all left us lively Images of *Calvin*, and of his Succeſſor at *Genevah*; the fine Mr. *Theodore Beza*, who could as eaſily uſurp another mans Wife, as an other mans Pariſh, and was ever more in Love, then in Charity, as they that knew him well, ſay. But I intend not to meddle here with their lives or vertues; nor yet with any of their School points and Doctrines, which I leave to the more learned to diſcuſs. That which I ſhall inſiſt upon here, ſhall be according to my principal purpoſe

Baldwin Apolog.

De ortu & progreſs Hereſium.

Pantal. in vitâ ejus.

poſe to deliver their ſeditious Paradoxes, and ſhew unto the World, how much their new refined doctrine doth derogate from Royalty, and that ſovereign Authority which belongeth unto all Kings, Princes, and States, rightly conſtituted; and how much it favoreth the worſt of Governments, that is, Pure Democraty or Popularity. And I ſhall begin with *Calvin*, who goeth more ſlily and cunningly to work, nothing ſo rudely and bluntly as *Luther*.

2. Firſt therefore, for the reputation of his Conſiſtory or *Sanhedrim*, at *Genevah*, he labors to debaſe Monarchy, and to prefer Ariſtocracy before it, *Non id quidem per ſe; Not in it ſelf* (forſooth, as if he had been very tender of the Rights of Kings) *but by reaſon of mens natural corruption.* Quia rariſſime contingit; *Becauſe it is ſeldom ſeen*, ſaith he, *that Princes can govern their Paſſions ſo well, or are ſo wiſe and prudent, as they ought to be, to uphold good Government.* So he makes it a rare thing, to finde a wiſe

Inſtit. lib. 4. c. 20. ſect. 10.

a wise and moderate King; and so concludes from a general defect, which he supposeth in Kings, that it is best *for many joyntly*, and not *one alone* absolutely to command. *For*, saith he, *where many govern, one supplyeth the defects of another, both in point of Counsel and Justice.* This was his way (politick and plausible enough) to prepare the hearts of his people at *Genevah* to the Discipline, which he intended for them. For you must know, the *Genevians* had now ejected their Bishop, who was also their Sovereign Prince, and had been so ever since the time of *Frederick* the First. So that their Monarchy was newly changed into a popular State, yet governed Aristocratically; which *Calvin* therefore smooths unto the people by such Reasons, as it concerned him to do, this change being as the First-fruits of his new Gospel in that City. So having given this first blow to Monarchy (though therein he seems to forget, that himself was born at *Noyon*,) and finding himself

Bodin de Rep.

safe

safe at *Genevah*, he proceeds; and to prevent your objection in behalf of Monarchy, That Kings have always grave and wise Counsellors to advise them, and to supply their defects, in case themselves be weak, he gives his resolution elsewhere. *Kings*, saith he, *make choice of such men for their Counsellors, as can best fit their humors and accommodate themselves to their appetites in the ways of cruelty and deceit.* So he makes them little better by having Counsellors, and stains the reputation of Counsellors themselves with a scandal intolerable. But *Chap.2. v.39.* he is yet more passionate: *They are*, saith he, *out of their wits, quite void of sense and understanding, who desire to live under Sovereign Monarchies; for it cannot be, but order and policy must decay, where one man holds such an extent of Government.* Yea, *Chap. 5. v.25. Kings*, saith he, *oftentimes forget they are men, and of the same would with others. They are stiled* Dei Gratia, *but to what sense or purpose, save onely to shew, they acknowledge*

Comment. in Dan.11. 26.

Daniel.

no

no Superior on Earth? yet under colour of this, they will trample upon God with their feet; so that it is but an abuse and fallacy, when they are so stiled. Which is a pretty descant, (is it not?) upon *Dei Gratiâ*; and therefore, *Voila*, saith he, *See what the rage and madness of all Kings is, with whom it is an ordinary and common thing to exclude God from the Government of the World.* And this he writ, not in quality of a Statesman, but of a Divine; in that master-peice of his, his *Institutions*: and in his *Commentaries* upon Scripture he delivereth these dangerous Positions, as matters of Doctrine and of Discipline, to be generally received by all; and makes a *Nebuchadnezzar* of all Kings: But rather out of his own spleen, then out of his Text, by his good leave. For to what purpose can such expressions tend, but to disgrace Scepters, and to scandalize all Governments, that are not framed according to his own mould?

3. And therefore, *Chap. 6. v. 25.* in *Daniel*,

Daniel, he chargeth them directly. *Darius*, ſaith he, *will condemn by his example all thoſe that profeſs themſelves at this day, Catholike Kings, Chriſtian Kings, and Defenders of the Faith; and yet do, not onely deface and bury all true Piety and Religion, but corrupt and deprave the whole worſhip of God.* This indeed is *work for the Cooper*, not by a Mar-Prelate, but a Mar-Prince. The moſt Chriſtian King muſt be new Catechiſed; he that is Catholike, muſt be taught anew by an Uncatholike, that is, a private ſpirit; and the Defender of the Faith, muſt have a new Faith given him to defend, by this great Prophet *Calvin:* And ſo by a new Model all the old Religion of the Church, and all the Laws of State concerning it, muſt be aboliſhed. Thus doth *Calvin* preſume to reform Kings and Government, and pretends to build an Ark (but it is of his own head) to ſave the World, having dreamt, that otherwiſe it muſt periſh by a deluge of Ignorance, Impiety,

picty, and Superſtition; of whom it may be truly ſaid, *Pluſquam regnare videtur. He muſt be much more then a Prince himſelf, who thus preſumes to play the Ariſtarchus, and cenſurer of Princes.* And that he may not ſeem to come ſhort of *Luther* his Predeceſſor, in any degree of immodeſty, *Les Rois* (Chap.6. v.3,4.) *ſont preſque tous*; *Theſe Kings*, ſaith he, *are in a maner all of them a company of Block-heads, and brutiſh perſons*; as wilde and ungoverned *as their Horſes, preferring their Bawds and their Vices*, above all things whatſoever. Yet did he write this in an age, when to ſay but truth, the Princes of Chriſtendom were not ſo extreamly debauched. *Lewis* the Twelfth, *Francis* the Firſt, and *Henry* the Second of *France*, have left a better fame of themſelves to Poſterities, then this: So have *Maximilian* the Firſt, and *Charls* the Fifth, Emperors in *Germany*. *Henry* the Eighth of *England*, degenerated onely in his latter times, and not till he was corrupted by ſome principles

ciples of this Reforming Liberty: In his children, *Edward* the Sixth there was much hope at leaſt, and in Queen *Mary* much vertue. In *Scotland* reigned *James* the Fifth, and two *Maries*, that might be canonized for their merits: And for *Caſtile*, and *Portugal*, their Kings never flouriſhed more for Government, Greatneſs, encreaſe of State, Plenty, Peace, then in thoſe times. What could his meaning then be, to cenſure them all ſo much for ſtupidity and vice, but to breed a contempt of Kings, and to induce people, that live under Free States, to deſpiſe and hate them; and their own people to caſt of their Government, and procure their Liberties at all adventures? eſpecially under the cloak of Religion; for at this he driveth altogether, as knowing well, That in popular and tumultuary States he ſhould prevail more, then where men of wiſdom, and diſcerning judgements ſit at the Helm. And as *Zuinglius* before him had found, That he could not induce

induce *Francis* the First to favor him, so *Calvin* well perceived that Kings, and *Dei gratiâ*, would be always blocks in his way. Therefore he is willing to remove them, so far as he can, out of the way, that they may not impeach the current of his Preachings; and to that end, tells them in plain terms, *Abdicant se potestate; Princes deprive themselves of all power, when they oppose God; and it is better in such case to spit in their faces, then to obey them:* Which irreverence yet he never learned from the example of any Apostle or Prophet. There is a respect due to the persons of Princes, even when they forget their office, if we be not much mistaken.

Dan. 6. 22.

4. Doctor *Bilson* labors much to save *Calvins* credit in this business with Princes, and to expound the words in some tolerable sense: He says, *Calvin* speaketh not a word of depriving Princes, or resisting him with Arms. That by *Abdicant se* he means not, they loose their Crowns, but their power to command

Christians subject to Anti-christs Rebellion.

mand unlawful things (a fine gloſs, they looſe a power, which they never had) but in lawful things they retain their power ſtill. The phraſe *Conſpuere*, he confeſſeth to be harſh, and that the compariſon was urged by him in vehement words, yet is willing to excuſe them. But as to the firſt plea, it is wholly impertinent, For what though he uſe not the words of *deprivation and reſiſtance*, are therefore the words he uſeth, excuſable? to ſpeak too plainly had been to erre too palpably, which ſtood not with *Calvins* craftineſs. Beſide, what was *Daniels* defence, which he urgeth, it was oncly in Humility, Patience, and Prayer? It was not after the violent faſhion of *Genevah*, he did not *ſpit* in *Nebuchadonozors* face, nor tell him, he was unworthy to live. And for the ſecond, *Abdicant ſe*, what means he that Kings do looſe? not *their Crowns, but onely their Power to Command*. Speak plain Engliſh, and be clear: You confeſs the King looſeth *his Power to Command*, but you

you adde obſcurely *in theſe things*, meaning in matters of Religion; for ſo it muſt be underſtood, though you caſt a cloak over the words, and cover the matter. But I deſire to know, what is a Kings Crown without power to command: He that teacheth, they looſe their Royal Power, doth he not ſay as much as that they forfeit it? and if they forfeit it, who may challenge and take the forfeiture of ſuch a Crown? But by ſuch Lectures and Doctrines as theſe, doth not *Calvin* plainly enough arm the Subjects againſt the Prince, when they *revolt for Religion?* And is not this the very ground of all the Combuſtion, and Civil Wars in *France?* Yea, but in *other things lawful, Princes retain their power.* Firſt, theſe are not *Calvins* words, but Doctor *Bilſons*, who writes and lives under a Monarchy. *Calvins* words are indifinite, *Abdicant ſe poteſtate*: They deprive themſelves *of the power they have*, without exception or limitation; abſolutely, not

not after a ſort; in all things, not in ſome particular; for altogether, not for ſome time onely, and then to be reſtored: For Princes, once diſpoſſeſſed, ſeldom recover their hold again. Secondly, what Court or Magiſtrates ſhall take cognizance and determine, wherein Kings looſe their power, and wherein not? who ſhall judge and decide the difference between the matters *lawful* and *unlawful*, that you ſpeak of? Though, as I ſay, *Calvins* own words import no ſuch reſtriction at all; which doth plainly appear by his harſh phraſe (as you call it) of *ſpitting in his face*, that is, to defie them openly, and to contemn them and their acts, according to your own interpretation. *But this*, you ſay, *is far from Rebellion*; true, but not from Treaſon. And therefore though he teach not the one, yet he may teach the other. Extenuate the words, as much as you can, yet they will be really heinous and ſeditious: For he that holdeth a King is not worthy *to be*, *or to live among*

men, doth he not sufficiently *excommunicate* him from his Government? As for your *Insurgunt contra Deum*, it is a stale and Arbitrary pretext, and serves onely to make them odious under a feigned charge of impiety; it convinceth nothing but much impudence and malice in the objectors, who should first learn to be vertuous themselves, before they charge vice so freely upon others, especially Princes: A thing which they never yet were, in any kinde, that the World knoweth. To conclude, this you grant in effect, That if the King of *Babylon* threatens *Daniel* with punishment, in case he will not worship his Idol; or the King of *France* commands his Subjects to obey the Laws, and communicate at the Altar of the Church, in both cases alike *abdicant se potestate*; the Kings loose their power, and Subjects ought not to obey them, but rather to spit in their faces. And this was the reason why Doctor *Allen* objected it to *Calvin*, as seditious Doctrine; and

Doctor

Doctor *Bilſon* well knoweth, that ſeditious Doctrines are not ſo dainty at *Genevah*. For there it was, that in hatred of three Queen *Maries* of *England* and *Scotland*, that *Calvin* firſt ſet a broach that more then ſeditious Paradox againſt *Gynocraty*, or the Government of Women; and by inſtruction and example from him, *Knox* and *Goodman* afterward publiſhed their ſeveral Books of that ſubject. Look but upon the Hiſtory of *Scotland*, Printed by *Wautroller*, *Page* 213. and you will finde, that *Knox* Apologized for all his practiſes from the authority and judgement of *Calvin*, viz. *That it was lawful for Subjects to reform Religion, when Princes will not.*

And that *Calvins* opinion in the point, may be yet more manifeſted, the practiſes of his darling and Scholar, Maſter *Theodore Beza*, muſt be conſidered; who perfectly underſtood his Doctrine, and did no leſs bravely put it in execution. In the Preface to his Tranſlation of the *New Teſtament*, which he maketh 5.

Anno 1564.

to Queen *Elizabeth*, he writeth thus. *Quo die* (Scil. 19. Decemb.) *Upon which day*, saith he, *two years since, the Nobility and Gentlemen of* France, *under the command of his Excellency, the Prince of* Conde, *being assisted with Your Majesties Auxiliaries, and some others from the Princes of* Germany, *laid the first foundation of the true Reformed Religion in* France, *with their own blood*. This, I hope, Master *Bilson* himself will confess to be Rebellion; yet *Beza* justifieth it openly, yea, gloriеth, that himself was not an accessory, but a principal in the business. For after he had commended some other good services of this nature, which the Reforming Parties had done at *Meaulx, Orleans, &c.* He concludes, *Id quod eò libentiùs testor; Which I speak*, saith he, *the more freely, because I my self, as it pleased God, was present at most of those Counsels and Actions*. It is true, there be some that would excuse even this Action of *Conde*, and the *Hugonots*, pretending, it was not against the King, but

but against an evil Counseller, and to deliver themselves from the oppression of *one*, who abused the Kings youth: That same *one* was the Duke of *Guise*, who being himself a stranger, say they, and hating the Nobility of *France*, on purpose to oppress them of the Reformed Religion, and to set the Crown on his own head, in case the King should die, armed himself into the Field, &c. That thereupon the Nobles of *France* perceiving his malicious designs, *viz.* To murder and destroy so many innocents, took up Arms to defend themselves against such a Tyrant. That, for the Kings consent it was not to be expected, nor, as the case stood, much to be regarded, seeing he was in the hands of the *Guises*; and had neither age to discern, nor freedom to deny, nor power to execute the Law. Lastly, say some, *Beza* teacheth obedience to Magistrates in his Book *De confess. fid.* very largely, and prescribeth no other remedy to private persons oppressed by a Ty- Cap. 5. Sect. 45.

rant, but *prayers and tears to amend their lives.* Touching the first point, the Apologists will seem confident, that this Battle of *Dreux* was neither against Law, nor the King; and yet afterward confess, that they understand not the Law of *France*, nor the Circumstances of the War. So they pretend certainty in a matter, wherein they have not Science; which is to beat themselves with their own weapon. But was indeed that War neither against the King, nor the Law? Assuredly against them both, as will appear by the Laws of *Charls* the Eighth, 1487. of *Francis* the First, 1532. of *Francis* the Second, 1560. at *Fountain Bleau*, which I shall cite hereafter in the case of *Rochel* and *Montauban*. Secondly, it is certain, that Battle was not in King *Francis* his time, but in the Reign of *Charls* the Ninth: And after the death of King *Francis*, all men not unacquainted with the proceedings of that time, know full well, that the House of *Guise* did bear no sway at Court; the Duke

Duke was made, as it were, a ſtranger to the State, the Queen-Mother, the King of *Navar*, and the Conſtable ſate at the ſtern, and ruled all. Therefore it is not true, that the King was in captivity under the faction of *Guiſe*; nor true, that the Duke armed himſelf into the Field, for the Conſtable commanded in cheif; he and the Marſhal of Saint *Andrews*, were the Kings Lieutenants, and had the Kings Commiſſions to warrant what they did. The Duke of *Guiſe* lead onely the Rear of the Army; and though it were his fortune to ſtand maſter of the Field, and to win the day, yet he had not any charge in the Battle, but onely of his own Companies. Thirdly, Neither did the Princes of *Bourbon* take arms onely to deliver themſelves from the oppreſſion of *Guiſe*: For if it were ſo, why did they not lay down, when they ſaw, not the Duke of *Guiſe*, but the Conſtable *Montmorency* coming againſt them, armed no leſs with the Kings Authority, then with

Monſ. *Lanow's* diſcourſes Monſ. *Mauviſſier*. Comment.

his Forces, to chaſtize them as Rebels. The Conſtable was a man, againſt whom they could pretend nothing; he was the Honor of the Admirals Houſe, the Admirals Kinſman, and his great friend, eſpecially when he was priſoner at *Melun*, by commandment of *Henry* the Second: He was now the Kings Vicegerent in the Field, why did they not reverence him? yea, why did they themſelves begin the fight? why did they firſt affront and aſſail the Kings Army? This therefore is but matter of meer pretext; for *Beza* himſelf confeſſeth plainly, This Field was fought *to reſtore or eſtabliſh their* pretended *Religion.* *Ubi ſupra.* Fourthly, Neither is it true, that the Duke of *Guiſe* is a ſtranger in *France.* Is he a ſtranger in *France*, who is deſcended clearly from the Stock and Line of *Charlemaign*, who is no ſtranger in *France*, I wis? Is he a ſtranger in *France*, who is a Peer of *France*, and Coſin-German to the Prince of *Conde*, their Protector? whoſe own Mother was *Antonietta*,

tonietta, Princeſs of *Bourbon?* whoſe Anceſtors have enjoyed the greateſt Offices and Honors in the Court of *France?* Neither, may we forget the great ſervices they have done for the Crown of *France*, at *Rome*, at *Metz*, *Verdun*, *Theonville*, and at *Calice* eſpecially, in a time when all *France* was in mourning, and diſtreſs too, for the loſs which Monſieur the Admiral had received at St. *Quintins*. Laſtly, that dream, *viz.* That the Duke ſhould aſpire to the Crown, is the pitifulleſt of all, a meer fable taken out of the *Legend of Lorrain*, and other Libels of that time. For how many Walls of Braſs were betwixt him and it? The King himſelf yong, his Brothers yonger; their Mother living, the King of *Navar* their truſty and Noble Friend, with the whole Nobility of *France*, as they themſelves acknowledge: Was it not then a likely object for ſuch a *Strangers* pretenſions?

It being then apparently falſe, 6.
That the King was in the hands,

that is, under the power of *Guise*; let us consider the last Proposition, *viz.* That the Kings Commission, which the Constable had, and the Prince wanted, and fought against at the Battle of *Dreux*, was not much to be regarded, because at that time the King had neither *age to discern*, nor *liberty to deny*, *&c.* As for Liberty, it is answered already. And for age, what if the King wanted age *naturally*, in his *politick capacity* he did not. We are to know, a King hath two bodies, or his person may be considered under a double capacity, that of Nature, and that of Policy. His Body politick, as it never dieth, so it is never defective of Authority or Direction. The acts of the Body politick be not abated by the Natural bodies access: The Body politick is not disabled to govern by the non-age of the natural. See 26. *Lib. Assis. Placit.* 24. where, by Justice *Thorps* judgement, the gift of a King is not defeated by his non-age. In the Book of *Assis. tit. droit. placit.* 24.

Anno

Anno 6. *Ed.*3. for a Writ of Right brought by *Edward* the Third, of a Manor, as Heir to *Richard* the First, the exception of non-age against the King was not admitted. For though the Natural body dieth, yet the Body politick (which magnifieth and advanceth the quality of the Natural) is not said to die. So 4. *Eliz*, The Leases of the Dutchy made by *Edward* the Sixth, were resolved by all the Judges to be good, though made in the Kings minority. So though the Kings Body natural, cannot discern or judge, yet that disableth not the King, that the acts of his Minority ordered by his Counsel and the Regent, should be of no validity; which their own *Hottoman* in his *France-Gallia* might have taught them. And let them resolve us, whether the Counsel and State of *England* would take it well, if a Catholike should affirm (as he might do, much more truly,) that the change of Religion made by *Edward* the Sixth, was not warrantable, being done in his Minority,

nority, and when he had neither *age to discern* what he did, nor *liberty to discern* any thing to the Protector, and *Northumberland*, in whose hands he was. If you approve not this Argument, why do you disallow the same plea for the Authority of the King of *France?* was the age of the one a Bar in Law, and not in the other? or was the one an absolute King, and not the other? was King *Edwards* consent sufficient to authorize his Uncles doings, and was King *Charls* his consent insufficient, and nothing worth to authorize the Constable with his Army to pursue and punish their Army of Rebels? *Beza*'s opinion therefore *In confess. fid.* is much contrary to what he alloweth and commendeth here. For if there be no other remedy, but *preces* and *lachrymæ* for private persons against the oppressions of a Tyrant, he betrayed the Admiral and the Prince very foully, to bring them into the fields of *Dreux*, to fight against the King for Religion.

Doctor

Doctor *Bilſon* hath taken up ſomewhere one notable ſingularity to excuſe the Prince of *Conde*, *viz.* That he was not an abſolute Subject of *France*, ought not *ſimple ſubjection* to the Crown; *Ergo*, might lawfully do ſomething more then others. But it argueth ſuch a groſs ignorance in the Laws of *France*, and in the ſtate of that Prince, that it deſerveth more to be pitied, then anſwered. Neither could it help the Admiral, who had no other Protection then that of his Sword, nor Priviledge, but from his new Religion.

But becauſe that ſmooth profeſſion of *Beza* above mentioned, is ſo much inſiſted on, and cunningly uſed, as it were, to caſt a miſt before the eyes of an unwary Reader, it will be neceſſary to clear that buſineſs a little further, by letting you ſee the man himſelf in more proper colours, as in relation to this point. Firſt, therefore read his Poſitions and Catechiſm of Seditions, *viz.* That Book of his called *Vindiciæ* 7.

dicia contra Tyrannos: There acting the part of *Junius Brutus* (a Noble *Roman* indeed, but great enemy of Kings) he propounds in the first place this Question, Whether Subjects be bound to obey their Kings, when they command contrary unto Gods Law, and resolveth presently, *Pag.*22. *We must obey Kings for Gods sake, when they obey God:* But otherwise, *Pag.* 24. we are absolved; *For as the Vassal,* saith he, *looseth his Fief or Lordship, if he commit Felony; so doth the King loose his Right, and his Realm also, viz.* By commanding contrary unto Gods Law: Which considering that *Gods Law* is onely as they themselves shall think good to interpret it, is dangerous enough. But *Pag.*65. he is more notable. *Conspiracy,* saith he, *is good or ill, according as the end is, at which it aimeth:* Which is a most pernicious Maxim, and a Doctrine fit for nothing but to encourage *Ravillac, Poltrot,* or some such villanous assassinate to his desperate work, or to be a buck-

ler

ler to the Conſpirators at *Amboiſ.* So *Pag.* 66. *The Magiſtrates,* ſaith he, *or any one part of the Realm may reſiſt the King, being an Idolater, as* Lobna *revolted from* Joram, *when he forſook God.* And *Pag.* 132. *The Government of the Kingdom is not given to the King alone, but alſo to the Officers of the Realm.* And again, *Pag.* 103. *The Kings of* France, ſaith he, Spain *and* England, *are crowned, and put, as it were, into poſſeſſion of their charge by the States, Peers, and Lords, which repreſent the people.* And *Pag.* 199. *There is a ſtipulation in all Kingdoms Hereditary: As in* France, *when the King is crowned, the Biſhops of* Beauvois *and* Loan *aſk the people, if they deſire and command, This man ſhall be King.* What if they do? it is no argument, that the people do therefore *chuſe him* to be King (for his Kingdom is confeſſed already to be *Hereditary,* and ſo the Succeſſion determined by Law;) much leſs that they *make him ſuch.* It is an acceptation onely, not an election; a declaration of their willing Subjecti-

on,

on, Obedience, and Fidelity towards him, and nothing elſe, as you may be well informed out of *Francis Roſſelets* Ceremonies at the Conſecration or Inauguration of the Kings of *France*. Was there ever an Aſſembly of Eſtates held to conſecrate or elect a King of *France*? or do the Kings of *France* count the time of their Reign from their Inauguration onely, and not from their entrance? was not *Charls* the Seventh full Eight years King of *France*, before he was crowned, as the *French Hiſtorians* themſelves report? or think you, that the Peers are *Ephori*? No, they are *Pares inter ſe*, but not Companions to the King. They are not States, as in *Holland*, to rule and direct all Affairs: For in *France* and *England* all the Authority depends upon the Kings; and what is the State, but the Authority of the Prince? Who onely by his Letters Patents createth Peers, diſpoſeth all Offices, giveth all Honors, receiveth all Homages in cheif, as being the ſole Fountain

Gaguin.
Giles.

tain from whence ſpringeth both Nobility and Authority: And he that would either reſtrain this Sovereignty within any narrower bounds, or communicate it to others, makes no difference between the Crown of a King, and the *Berrette* of a Duke of *Venice*. Many other Maxims and Rules he hath of this nature, fit for nothing but to introduce Anarchy, and confuſion in the World; moſt of them falſe, all of them dangerous: Vails onely to cover the ugly faces of Sedition and Treaſon; becauſe in their proper ſhapes, no man living can abide to ſee them.

I might here travel, and weary you further, with as much good ſtuff out of his Book *De Jure Magiſtratus*; for his it is, as moſt men think, or elſe *Hottomans*, who was his Comrade. But I ſhall leave them both; for indeed they touch the ſtring of Sovereignty with too rough a hand; yea, rather they ſtrain to break it, if they could, by ſuch groſs and miſinterpretable Paradoxes; 8.

Paradoxes; as when they say, *The States are above the King*; that is, the Body above the Head: As if any man could seriously make it a question, whether people should be commanded by the Master, or by some of their fellow-servants, by the Subject, or by the Sovereign, by the Prince of *Conde*, and the Admiral, or by their Lawful King and Sovereign, King *Charls*. And therefore had King *Philip* good reason to cut off the head of *that Justice of Arragon*, upon a just occasion, and to teach the people by example, what the true meaning was of *Nos qui podemos tanto come vos*. All which Paradoxes, it were easie to refel, but that I have undertaken onely to discover, and not to combate: And because they are both learnedly and piously confuted already by *Barclay*, *Baurican*, and *Blackwood*. Onely by the way I shall desire you to observe, how politickly they go to work. They profess not openly and absolutely any desire to change the State, or to depose Kings. But this

this they do, They labor by insinuation, first to breed some dislike of Monarchs in the mindes of people, and to shew how inconvenient it is, for such an infinite multitude and variety of people to depend upon the Edicts of one man. This being done, they know it is then easie, and they may much better advance the authority of inferior Magistrates; and by them, emboldned by such degrees to contest at last, and jar with their Superiors, under a pretence of Reforming abuses, and pulling down Idolatry, they become able to pull down Kings themselves, and to level *the Creators*; that is to say, the cheif Authors, and origin of all lawful Power exercised in their respective Kingdoms, with the most inferior *Creatures* themselves, upon whom it should be exercised. And after this, they are sure, their Consistories and Elders must rule all, be Judges both of Clergy and Law, Councel and King: They must be henceforward the onely Rabbies, and from

their

their onely *Sanhedrim* or *Genevian* Consistory, must the Oracles of all Government be fetcht both for Church and Kingdom. Neither can I forget how irreverently *Eusebius Philadelphus* (*viz.* Master *Theodore Beza* disguised) used his Sovereign King *Charls* in his other Book of *Reveille Matin*, where usually he calls the King Tyrant, and of his name, *Charls Valois*, makes this Anagram *Chasseur Desloyal*, that is, neither more nor less, *Perfidious Hunter*, *or Persecutor*, chuse you whether. Read his rimes and scandalous reproaches of the Queen-Mother, himself being a fugitive, for more crimes then one, deservedly most infamous. Peruse the Forty Articles recorded in that Book, for the better advancing of seditious Government: For example, *Art.* 25. All Generals and Commanders in cheif, must observe the Ecclesiastical Discipline ordained by their Synods. *Art.* 40. They are bound never to disarm, so long as their Religion is persecuted (as they

they ca'l it) by the King. This is the *patience of theſe Saints*: But what is become of their *Preces & lachrymæ* in the mean time? That pretending to reform the World, are ſo little maſters of their own Paſſions. But in Article fourteen and fifteen, their ſpirits and deſigns appear in their bravery, aiming at no leſs, then the utter overthrow of the King; and extirpation of the whole family of *Valois*, as any man may perceive that reads them. Theſe were thoſe Holy Articles of *Bearn*, *Anno* 1574. ſo much talked of over all *France*, coyned with *Beza*'s own ſtamp, and at *Melun* diſperſed, and communicated to their inferior *Moſchees*, all the Kingdom over, to the intent, as they expreſly avowed, *That they might make war more ſtrongly againſt their Enemies*, (who were no other but the King, and whole State of *France*,) *and till it ſhould pleaſe God*, ſay they, *to turn the heart of the Tyrant*; that is, of the *French King*, their Natural and Lawful Sovereign.

About

About the same time also was framed and published by their Emissaries, that libellous life of *Catharine de Medices* Queen-Mother, *Franco-Gallia*, the *Tocsan* of *Massacreurs*, together with that fine-piece mentioned before, called the *Legend of Lorrain*. For this is very observable, and it is an honor which the House of *Guise* hath had a long time, that no man ever professed himself an Enemy to the Church of God in *France*, but he was likewise at deadly feud with them.

9. All which proceedings were so notorious and unexcusable in those times, that even their fellow Protestants here in *England*; those, I mean, of better note and more moderated judgement do acknowledge them with dislike. *The Protestants of the French Church*, saith Doctor *Sutcliff*, *for thirty years together taught violent Reformation by the Nobility, people, and private persons.* And again, *Beza*, saith he, *in his Book* De jure Magistratus, *doth arm the Subject against the Prince, and in effect*

Answ. to a Lib. suppl.

effect overthroweth the Authority of Christian Kings and Magistrates. And the Book Vindiciæ contra Tyrannos *gives power*, saith he, *not onely to resist, but to kill the King, if he impugn Gods true Religion.* The same also is affirmed by the late Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Doctor *Bancroft*, in the *Survey of Discipline*, but most copiously and at large in the Book of *Dangerous Positions*, especially about *Pag.* 192. *& seq.* To these I may adde *Francis Baldwin*, a famous Lawyer of *France*, who lived a long time with *Calvin* at *Genevah*, and knew all their proceedings very well. *Mirabar*, saith he, *I wondred a long while, whether your fiery Apostle (viz. Theodore Beza) would tend, who in his Sermons here so much extolled that fact of the Levites running up and down the Tents of* Israel, *and slaying every man his Brother that had committed Idolatry: But I hear now, that your self are not much satisfied with such Ministers.* And again, *Pag.* 128. *Leviora sunt ista, All this is nothing*, saith he, *in comparison of*

Responsi. ultim. ad Jo. Calvin.

Exod. 32.

that

that which follows. For now men make war even upon the dead; The Statues, the Sepulchres, the very bones and bodies of Martyrs, Princes, &c. *scape not their barbarous hands; Cities are sacked, Churches robbed and spoiled,* &c. Which *Beza* is so far from excusing, that he justifieth them rather, and professeth to his Epist. 40. Friend *Christopher Thretius*, That for his part he *hath no thoughts of peace*, that is, that if such outrages and villanies should cease, *Nisi de ellatis hostibus, until the Enemies* (so he calls the Kings Army, and all the Catholikes of *France* with them) *be totally subdued.* But we ought not to wonder at it: It is *Morbus innatus*, to all Sacramentaries, a disease bred in their bones, that is, in the very vitals and entrails of their cause, to be seditious, and dangerous to their Princes. *Zuinglius*, their Patriarch, first taught them the Lesson, who *Tom.* 1. of his works, *Art.* 2. delivers this for an Oracle, *viz.* That *Reges quandò perfidè & extra regulam Christi egerint, &c. When Kings break*

break Faith with their people, and do otherwise then the rule of Christ directs them (which *rule* themselves will onely interpret.) *Possunt cum Deo deponi*; *They may be deposed with right good Conscience.* Doctor *Bilson* is here again entangled, and troubles himself and his Reader not a little to finde som Apology for this Paradox. *I undertake not*, saith he, first, *To defend each mans several opinion:* Wisely spoken. Secondly, *They may be deposed*, saith he, *when they advance ungodlines, as* Saul *was.* May they so? where is the *Samuel*, the Prophet extraordinarily, and on purpose sent from God, that shall do it? may the people do it? *No*, saith he, blushing, or afraid to affirm that, and therefore seems to leave it as a priviledge, or a matter reserved to the judgement of the Elders. But *Zuinglius* himself deals more plainly, and tells you, *Art.* 42. and 43. who shall do it. *Cum suffragiis & consensu totius aut majoris, &c. When*, saith he, *such a Tyrant is deposed by consent of all, or*

the major part of the people, it is well done, and as God would have it. Therefore in his Epiſtle to *Conradus Sonnius*, he profeſſeth, That *obedience* or reſpect, is due unto *Cæſar*, *onely upon condition*, viz. *That he permits them entire Liberty of Religion*; which yet is more then the *Lutherans* themſelves, their pretended Brethren, will do: Otherwiſe, ſaith he, it ſhould be *ſin in them*, and make them *guilty before God* to obey him. Thus boldly doth a Miniſter of Sedition take upon him to determine, whether, and upon what terms a Sovereign Prince, yea, the ſupream and cheif of all Chriſtian Princes, ſhall either hold his Dignity, or be dethroned. If *Cæſar* will be wiſe, and adviſed by them, they will obey; otherwiſe, they not onely may with Juſtice, but are obliged to take a courſe with him. To which end, and that they might be ready, when time and opportunity ſhould ſerve their turn, to put ſuch Doctrine in execution, in his Epiſtle to them of *Ulm*, one of the Imperial

Lib. 4. p. 868.

Lib. 4. p. 196.

Imperial, or free Cities of *Germany*, as they are called; he adviseth the fraternity of Ministers there, very properly, *viz.* That they remember *by little and little, warily, and by degrees,* Detrahere personam Imperio *Romano,* &c. *To pull off this vizor of the* Roman *Empire* from their Auditory, and make them see, what a folly it is for them *to acknowledge a* Roman *Empire in the midst of* Germany, *which is not regarded at* Rome *it self.* Could there be a project devised more wretchedly dangerous and disloyal, then this, against the Emperor? O the depths of Heretical malice and treachery! They must do it, not *suddenly,* not *openly, not all at once,* (for that were to spoil all,) but *sensim, paulatim, prudenter,* now a little, and then a little, as the people shall appear capable of such Counsels, and the poyson of Rebellious suggestions shall be most likely to be received, and to work upon them. Certainly a most plain and full discovery of the *Reforming Design*; and by it the Princes

and all States of *Europe* may see what they are to expect from that sort of people, when they have once given them power enough to pull their Superiors down.

10. Having thus declared the Principles and Aphorisms of this great Triumvirate of the *French Church*, viz. *Zuinglius*, *Calvin*, and *Beza*, those Ecclesiastical Tribunes of the people, and Ring-leaders of Rebellion; I am now to make it appear also *ex effectis*, or by the evident practise of such principles, That *Genevah* is, and hath been a School of Rebellion to all these parts of Christendom, and a Seminary in particular of all the Civil Wars in *France*. Neither shall I blot their names with any false aspersions: For as their practise is the best Commentary of their Positions and Writings; so it is the best tryal of their Loyalty, and can give in best evidence, whether they be (as they will yet pretend, and seem to be) good Patriots, and faithful Subjects. I shall shew both their first beginnings,

nings, progress, and continuance, at this present time; and this so much as may be, in a method, ordering their disorderly crimes under these general heads, *viz.* First, Their Conspiracies against the King: Secondly, Their Battles fought against the Kings Armies and Officers: And thirdly, Their horrible Outrages and Villanies committed, incomparable for cruelty, and incredible for disloyalty.

11. The first of their Conspiracies taken notice of, was that of *Amboise*; there they began the Scene of their Tragedy, on this maner. At an Assembly they had at *Nantes*, in the year 1560. certain of the *Calvinists* conspired among themselves to seize the Kings person, and surprize the Court; to apprehend the two principal of the *Guises*, upon an accusation, That they sought to invade and possess themselves of the Crown, and thereby to ruine the Princes of the Blood, and to suppress Religion. This being secretly, yet upon great deliberation con-

cluded by them in the Moneth of *Jannary*, was to be executed the Tenth of *March* following, at *Blois*. The cheif of the Conſpiracy was *Godfrey de Barry*, ſirnamed *de Renaudy*: By this man it was imparted to the Prince of *Conde*, who diſliked it not, but onely wiſhed it could be executed in ſome form of Law. While they ſtood thus at *Demurrer*, the buſineſs hapned to be ſtrangely, and beſide all their expectation diſcovered; firſt, by a Secretary of the Cardinal of *Lorrains*, afterward by more perfect Intelligence and Information from Cardinal *Granvellan*, out of the *Low Countries*. Whereupon the King ſuddenly removing to *Ambois*, the Conſpirators were diſappointed, both of time and place; ſo as the forces which they had levied and appointed for that exploit, wandered up and down for ſome while without any Commander in Cheif appearing, and were in a ſhort ſpace after, moſt of them apprehended and gathered up by the Duke of

Nemours

Nemours his Troops; among others there were taken, the Baron of *Caſtelnau*, and Monſieur *Pardillan*. *Renaudy* the General was ſlain, and ſome others executed. The Duke of *Guiſe*, in the mean time, providently took order for the ſafety of the King, and the Court, and ſo aſſured himſelf of the perſon of the Prince of *Conde*, that he had not power to attempt any thing to their prejudice. He was afterwards committed upon this buſineſs, yea, condemned to looſe his head: Yet nevertheleſs, *Charls* the Ninth, upon ſome politick Reaſons of State, and becauſe he was ſo neer a Kinſman, and a Prince of the Blood, not onely gave him enlargement, but, for his honor, and to aſſure his fidelity the more, if that had been poſſible, he acquitted him alſo, and declared him innocent of the Conſpiracy. This was the firſt attempt of the *Calviniſts* for Religion, and *Bonum Publicum*. Their ſecond ſhould have been executed at *Meaulx* upon the perſon of *Charls*

Monſ. *Caſtelnau* Comment.

the Ninth, in the year 1567. But by the noble ſervice of the Duke of *Nemours*, and of the *Switzers*, the King, though with ſome difficulty, eſcaped. Their purpoſe was here, as before, to have poſſeſſed themſelves of the Kings perſon, and of the Duke of *Anjou* his Brother, to have put the Queen-Mother with ſome others marked out, to death: but, as I ſaid, by the valor and fidelity of the Duke of *Nemours*, with the aid of the *Switzers*, they recovered *Paris* by a ſudden flight in the night, and ſo were all ſaved: Onely the Cardinal of *Lorrain* (a perſon, whom they principally deſired to entrap) was forced to take another way, yet he made ſhift to get privately to *Rhemes*, and there died. A third was at St. *Germans in lay* againſt both King and Queen-Mother; for which, although onely *Mole* and *Coconas* loſt their heads, through the ill management of the buſineſs; yet were there ſo many heads and hands both, engaged in it, That it was matter of great trouble,

trouble, disquiet, and danger unto *France*, for a long time after. And this onely of their Conspiracies, or of such Treacherous designs, as never went further then Intention.

To inform you of their open and actual Rebellions in the Field, where they sought by force of Arms, and with the Sword in their hands, to compel the King to grant them what Liberty and Terms of Pacification they liked; we are first to call again to minde, that so famous, and indeed furious Battle upon the Plains of *Dreux*, of which *Beza* formerly boasted, That the foundations of Reformed Religion in *France* were first laid, and as it were, *consecrated* therein. Let us remember also the Battle of Saint *Dennis*, the Battle of *Jarnac*, the Battle of *Coutras*, the Battle of *Moncontour*, together with the besiedging of *Roan*; and how much, and Noble Blood was spilt in all these Actions. At *Roan* the King of *Navar* lost his life; at Saint *Dennis* 12.

the Conſtable was ſlain; at *Jarnac* the Prince of *Conde*; and at *Contras* the Noble Duke of *Joyeuſe* ended his days. The Fields are yet ſtained, *France* was let-blood too prodigally, and ſtrangers brought in, as Surgeons to launce her wounds, who have left behinde them, greater cauſe of Lamentation, then Remembrance. At *Moncontour*, where the Admiral ſtood alone, as the ſole Champion of the Reformed Churches. The *Miſſa-pulta* teſtified what their quarrel was, which by *Beza*'s deviſe was advanced as a Baſilisk, to beat down the Royal Standard of *France*, and the *Labarum* or Croſs of *Conſtantine*.

13. Now as concerning the outrages, aſſaſſinations, and other miſchiefs done and committed by theſe ſpirits of Reformation, yet pretending nevertheleſs to be altogether innocent of Blood and Murther: *Poltrot* in this *Kalender* muſt have the firſt place, for killing the Duke of *Guiſe*, who was the Kings Lieutenant General at that time, ſo baſely

basely and treacherously as he did; confessing it afterward before the Queen-Mother, and avouching that *Beza* had both counselled and encouraged him to the Action. After him, we may remember how the Protestants in *Valentia* used *Signeur de la Motte Gondrin*, the Kings Lieutenant in *Daulphin*, who had assured them, in case they would live peaceably and quietly with the Catholikes, he would bring none of the Kings Soldiers upon them; yet notwithstanding this, they assembled forces of their own privately, surprized *La Motte*, and hung him up instantly in cold blood, without any provocation, save onely of their own malice; to shew their contempt of the King, and scorn of his Officers among them: Which was a villany not sufferable in any Commonwealth, especially where such favor and connivence had been offered, but immediately before. We may remember the Conspiracy of *Simon May*, a man induced by the fame

spirit,

ſpirit, and inſtructed out of the ſame School, to kill the Queen-Mother, and *Henry* the Third: But his purpoſe being diſcovered, he was apprehended, and had his deſert. Neither can the buſineſs be excuſed or ſhifted off with any colors; himſelf confeſſed it, and accuſed Seigneur *de la Tour*, and Monſieur *d'Avantigny*, two Gentlemen of good parentage, yet birds of a Feather, to have been his Counſellors and Abettors in the Plot: Whereupon they were both of them apprehended, but afterward releaſed by His Majeſty for private reaſons, not being willing, as ſome thought at that time, to ſearch too deep into the wound, either for the men engaged in it, or the matter it ſelf; yet this was not all. They proceed much further, and ſeize upon the Kings own Rents and Revenues; they coyn money, and ſurprize, either by fraud or force of Arms, the chief Cities of the Realm, *Orleans*, *Troyes*, *Poictiers*, *Tours*, &c. putting in Garriſons and

Governors

Governors of their own party, and for their own ends. They deliver one of the Keys of *France* into the custody and command of Forreigners: All which were attempts of the Highest Treason that could be, and usurpations of the Prerogative Royal, being done without colour of Commission, or Warrant from the King, and contrary to his expres's Will and the Law. *Nicholas Froumenteau*, a Minister of the new Edition, confesseth, That in *Daulphin*, onely the Army of the *Hugenots* killed Two hundred fifty and six Priests, and One hundred and twelve Monks and Friers, burnt Nine hundred Towns and Villages. And yet what a pitiful tale do the *Calvinists*, and others, tell of a Massacre at *Vassy*, by the Duke of *Guise*, as if no cruelty had been comparable to that? Which yet indeed was nothing at all in comparison of these, and was done without the Dukes consent; as not onely Monsieur *Chasteauneuf* in his Commentaries, but also *Thuanus*, who was a man

Lib. des Financ. de France.

Thuan. Historiar. lib. 29.

man never ſuſpected to be of the *Guiſian* Faction, do expreſly avouch: Yea, the blood that was drawn from the Duke himſelf, laboring to have appeaſed the fray at the beginning, was the cauſe, that ſome quantity more was drawn from thoſe *Hugonots*, by the Dukes ſervants, then otherwiſe there needed to have been. No, it was a toy and a trifle in reſpect of thoſe outragious exceſſive carnages of *Montbriſon*, of *Mornas*, and many other places acted by the *Hugonots*. But ſuch was the calamity of thoſe times, They which moſt juſtly deſerved, and unjuſtly complained againſt perſecution, did perſecute their Neighbors moſt unjuſtly and tyrannically. Let the world, and all indifferent men judge by this. In theſe Civil Wars there were no leſs then Twenty thouſand Churches deſtroyed by Proteſtants: and yet theſe men were born, as they ſay, to edifie the Church. Is it not likely? Could *Mahomet* himſelf edifie better? or was his Alchoran,

and

and Turkish Superstition set up any other way, then by the power of a Tyrants Sword, and pulling down of Christian Churches? I shall not commend any Act of Cruelty in whomsoever, yet let men that are impartial, consider, how they can justly blame *Charls* the Ninth, King of *France*, for his proceedings against this sort of people at *Paris*, and some other places, in the year 1572. The Admiral, being the principal Instrument and mover of all those Seditions and Troubles, which for a long time had disquieted *France*, and indangered so much the very life and person of the King, the Queen Mother, and other of the Princes, who can wonder, if his Majestie at last were compelled to use a mean extraordinary and somewhat rough, for the cutting off such a Pestilent Member with his Complices, who did nothing, but Gangren-like, perpetually corrupt and indanger the whole body of his State, yea and often threatned the Head it self. 'Tis

'Tis well known, he was come to such height at this time, that he Reigned in *France*, as it were some Petty King in a Common-wealth, meerly through the assistance of such people as had, by his Means and Sollicitation chiefly, revolted from their Lawful and Natural Sovereign; he maintained in *France* an open War against the King and Crown of *France*, he Sollicited and called in strangers to his aid, levied Contributions, exacted Tributes, coyned Mony, seized the Kings Revenues, invaded his Towns, contemned all his Laws; yea what actions of Sovereignity did he not usurp & exercise, in contempt of his Sovereign? For which, having been first proclaimed Traytor in the year 1569. he afterward met with the punishment, which both he and his, had most justly deserved, though the way of Execution was very extraordinary indeed, and hath no excuse, but necessity.

14 But perhaps you are ready to say, This age hath reformed those errors

rors, such violencies, as were formerly used, are now ceased, and that, at present more charitable, mild, and civil proceedings are held by the *Hugonots*. It is not so; They have the same principles, and the same spirits still, which upon occasion they are not slow to manifest: And to make this more plain, I shall give you a relation of the true state and condition of those reformed Churches (as they call themselves) in *France* at this very time, *viz.* *Anno* 1621. wherein, not to trouble you with any thing concerning the infinite troubles & great charges, which they forced their Sovereign *Lewis* 13. to be at, and endure all the last Summer and Winter; nor concerning their Garboils at *Tours*; nor the practises of the *Rochellers* to have put a Garrison of Six thousand men into *Saumur*, on purpose to have given work to the Kings Army thereabouts, and to hinder their March to *Montauban*; nor concerning their revolt and disloyal practises at *Gergeau*, standing out against

againſt the Count St. *Paul* Governour of the Province of *Orleance*; and at *Sancer*, againſt the Prince of *Conde*: nor to exaggerate the Treacheries and Conſpiracies of *Vattevile* in *Normandy*, which yet were ſo plainly proved by his own Papers and Inſtructions intercepted, that the Duke of *Longueville* was compelled thereupon to diſarm thoſe of *Deep*, *Roan*, and *Caen*, to prevent danger, and fearing, leaſt they ſhould joyn with *Vattevile*; I ſay, omitting all theſe, which yet were actions and paſſages, wherein much malignity and undutifulneſs to their Sovereign was apparent, I ſhall begin onely with the buſineſs of St. *Jean* d'*Angely*, which held out a long time, and refuſed ſubmiſſion, Notwithſtanding the King in perſon demanded it of them, and that Monſieur *Soubize*, Commander of the place for the *Hugonots*, were Summoned to render the Town, or to ſtand to the Peril and Attaynt of Treaſon; yet they contemned all, and held it out to the very laſt point,

point, that they had any hopes of help left them. At *Montauban* how was his Majestie defied and despited, as it were, to His Face? continuing in person at the Siedge thereof for a long time together, with an Army of Noble and most Expert Soldiers, many of whom (men of Eminent Desert and Dignity) were lost in that service, especially the two Brothers the Duke of *Mayenne*, and the Marquis of *Villars*, who were generally lamented. And to draw the Kings eyes the more upon them, it is said by some, They had set upon their Gates this insolent Motto, *viz. Roy sans foy, Ville sans peur*, importing, that the *King had no Faith* nor the *Towns no fear*. Yea so obstinate were they in their resolution of disobedience, that for the present, they forced His Majestie upon advice, to defer their merited punishment, and to raise the Siedge: Whereupon the Insolent *Burgers*, after the Kings Army was departed, lead the whole Clergy of the Town, as it were, in Triumph, using

using them with many scornful indignities, for which they smarted, not undeservedly, the year following. In *Montpellier* and *Languedoc* the *Hugonots* deprived Monsieur *Chastillon* of all his Governments, by a pretended Sentence of their Consistory, which is very observable; and razed at the least Six and thirty Parish Churches, and Chappels there. Nor do they usurp onely upon the Royalties of the King (though that be too much) they are as bold, where they prevail, with the Inheritances and Estates of Private persons. At *Privas* they would not suffer the Viscount *l'Estrainge* to enjoy his Lordship of that place, onely because he was a Catholike: They put him out of his own Castle at *Lake*, whereof the Marshal *Momorency* had but lately given him possession, and give it to *Brison* one of their own fraternity, upon a pretence that it belonged to him: yet was it none of the Towns of assurance, nor comprized in the list at *Brewet* in the year 1598. neither would

would they permit the Kings Justices, delegated thither to compound controversies, so much as to hear Mass, though private, or to have any exercise of their Religion.

What Society or Commonwealth can stand, if upon pretence of Religion, such petulant usurpers as these, may disseize Right-owners of their Estate at pleasure, and hold whatsoever they get, upon a pretence, that it is for the use and security of some Confederate Gospellers? But what cause have they to ryot thus upon their Neighbors, and Fellow-subjects? The King is content, they should quietly enjoy what is theirs, yea and securly use the liberty of their Religion. Will not this content them? Should not Catholikes, in all reason and equity, enjoy the same? Yet will they not live peaceably themselves, Notwithstanding such royal Favor, nor Converse peaceably with Catholikes. They obey not the Kings Laws for all this, not, I mean, in Temporal

15.

Temporal Affairs, wherein he onely pretends to command them. At Saint *Jean* d' *Angely* the King assured them, he would protect all those of the reformed Religion in *France*, that would obey him, and observe his Edicts. He promised and performed no less to *Mallaret*, who was sent to him, as Deputy from the Assembly of *Lower Guienne*: He did the like to the Duke of *Tremoville* Son in Law to Monsieur *Bouillon*, who came to that seidge tendring his service, and protesting obedience to His Majestie; was not the Government of *Saumur* that so famous, and considerable a place, given by His Majestie to the *Count de Sault*, Grandchilde of the Duke *Desdignieres*, though he were known to be of the Reformed Religion? Did he not long before, *viz.* in the year 1615. answer the Petition of the *Hugonots*, That he meant not by his Oath at Consecration (which was for the *Repressing of Heresies*) to comprehend therein, *Those His Subjects of the Reformed Religion, who would*

would live obediently under his Laws and Authority? And how graciously the King dealt with *Rochel*, all the world knoweth; how willing was he rather to regain and reduce it, then to destroy it? How much and often did His Majestie employ Monsieur the Duke *Desdiguieres* to perswade them to conformity and obedience? How much and often did he (the said Duke) solicite them accordingly by Letters, to return to their duty, proposing them Articles, which all the world, but themselves would have thought reasonable? Yet the Deputies *Chalus*, and *Favas*, obstinately refused them, till it was too late: What can a King do more then seek the winning of his Subjects, so far as 'tis possible, by fair and gracious means? Yet see the recompence, which His Majestie found from such Spirits: It was no other, then a long and frivolous Declaration published against his proceedings, wherein, instead of acknowledging their own Crimes, they tax His Majestie of much in-

justice,

justice, persecution, and I know not what other designs, which they charge him to prosecute by the counsel and inducement of certain persons, that were *Enemies of the State*, as they said, and *of their Religion*, the Cankerworm of it.

16. To discover and disprove the vanity of which pretences, I shal search *ab origine*, and deliver you the true causes of the Kings proceedings against these *Male-contents*; and how great reason, or necessity rather, he had by Arms to maintain his Royal Authority, which they by Arms sought either to contemn or usurp: that is, wherefore he was constrained at *Myort* to proclaim *Rochel* and all their Adherents Rebels against him, and guilty of treason. First it appears by the Edict of *Nantes*, *Art.* 77. That King *Henry* the Fourth had discharged the Protestants from holding any Assemblies General or Provincial; likewise from all Unions and Leagues, and from holding of any Counsel, or Decreeing and Establishing any

Acts

Acts by them: Likewise *Art.* 82. from holding any Correspondencies or Intelligences without the Realm: Yea *Art.* 32. They might not hold any Synods Provincial, without the Kings License. All which Articles they also promised to observe; but, as all *France* and the world knoweth, have broken them every one. And not onely so, but they have intruded upon the State it self, taking and fortifying places of assurance, without any Warrant from the King,; and contrary to an expres order set down in *August*, in the year 1612. whereby it evidently appeareth, to be of the *Kings Royal favor and goodnes* to assign them places of surety, and not for them to chuse, or usurp where they please. Adde to this their notable presumption, and disobedience shewen, in laboring so much to introduce the reformed Churches of *Bearne*, and to annex them to those of *France by an Act of Union* (as they call'd it) *both Spiritual and Temporal*, passed at *Rochel*

in the year 1617. In which buſineſs they were ſo confident, That they did not onely juſtifie their pretended act by Apology, but promiſed all poſſible aſſiſtance to *Bearn*; yea, and bound themſelves by Oath, Firſt, To obſerve and execute whatſoever was determined in that Aſſembly; Secondly, To venture their Lives and Eſtates in maintenance thereof; and thirdly, Not to reveal or make known any Propoſitions, Advices, or Reſolutions taken or made in that Aſſembly, unto any perſon whatſoever, no not to the King himſelf. All which was done by them, not onely irregularly, and without Law, but moſt contemptuouſly alſo; in as much as they well knew, that the King of *France* had ſent to all the Provinces, and expreſly forbad that *Union*; yea, and had made a Decree of his Councel to the contrary. Beſides, how they uſed *Regnard*, whom the King had ſent into *Bearn* as his Commiſſioner about the Church Goods, and what diſorders they

they committed at *Paw* againſt him, is ſcarce credible. Not to ſpeak any thing of their Aſſembly holden at *Loudun*, with moſt obſtinate diſobedience to the Kings command. At *Grenoble* the King was content, and gave them leave to hold an Aſſembly; but that all the World might ſee, what a factious and froward ſpirit governed them, they refuſe the place, and by their own authority aſſemble at *Niſmes*. At *Chaſtelrault* and *Saumur* the King ſuffered them to Aſſemble, onely to chuſe two Deputies, who were to remain at Court, and receive the Kings Orders concerning them, and to exhibite from time to time their own Plaints and Grievances, as occaſion ſhould be: Contrary to this they make an *Act of Union* there alſo, and take the ſame Oath, which the Confederate Catholikes, then in Arms, had not long before taken; yet with this difference, That whereas the Catholikes proteſt their ſervice to His Majeſty, *ſo long as he continued Catho-*

like; which was to oblige him to no more, then his Oath and the Interest of His Royal Office required of him, so long as he lived: These *Hugonots* protest theirs onely on this condition, *viz. Le Sovereign Empire de Dieu demeurant tousjours en son entier*; that is to say in effect, *So far as may stand with their duty to God:* Which, whosoever knows, what a *Hugonot* thinks *is his duty to God*, will confess to be a restriction of an equivocal and perillous signification to a King of *France*. And so they did plainly shew, sending presently after to the Camp at *Sansay*, and offering to joyn with those Frenchmen, who had taken arms to oppose the Kings marriage. And not onely this, but they established in each Province of *France*, a Councel of their own to hear Affairs, and to take notice, what the Order and Government of the Country was; yea, and importunately urged to have Counsellors in the Parliament at *Paris*. Lastly, to shew in one *Act*, as in a Mirror, the

the height of their Presumption and Treason, in the year 1621. at *Rochel*, out of their own onely authority and arrogance, they divide the Provinces of *France* into Seven Synods, which they call Circles, adding *Bearn* for the Eighth. And having formerly resolved to have War with the King, and to make good their actings by force of Arms; in this Assembly now they make Orders for the Government of their Army; they chuse a General and Officers for every Circle, (which what other thing was it, but to Cantonize *France?*) They Decree, That no Treaty, nor Truce should be made without this Assembly. They Order, That this pretended General Assembly of theirs, in respect of the great charge, which they must necessarily undergo, should arrest all the Kings Rents, and Money due for Tails, Ayds, Gabels, *&c.* They appoint Officers for collecting the same. *Art.* 36. They order the seizing and letting to Farm of all Goods Ec- *Art.* 35.

cleſiaſtical, and profits of Churches, Revenues of Parſonages, &c. *Art.* 41. They take the ſame order for all the profits of the Admiralty. And when all was done, the Articles are every one of them ſigned by their Preſident *Combart* very ſolemnly; yea, as foul as their fault was, and beyond all colour of excuſe; yet there is nothing pretended in the buſineſs, but Juſtice and Loyalty, and His Majeſties ſervice: All is covered with that falſe mantle of Religion, and *Publike good.* But wiſely, and truly, was it long ſince obſerved by the Orator, *Totius injuſtitiæ nulla capitalior, &c. Of all injuſtice,* ſaith he, *none is more odious and abominable, then where men act their villanies under a vizard, and pretence of good.*

Tully.

17. I for my part ſhall not inſiſt much here upon the opinion of the *Civilians,* what a *Secti* is, what meetings of people are juſtly called *Conventicles,* and declared to be againſt the Prince, and the ancient Laws; nor how *Faction* and *Conſpiracy*

ſpiracy are defined by the Lawyers, and when they fall within the compaſs of Treaſon; as conceiving it matter, though not altogether impertinent to my ſubject, yet ſomething more then I have undertaken. For this therefore, I refer you to *Farinacius*, Part. 4. to *Decius*, Lib. 7. c. 7, 20. to *Boſſius*, to *Gigas*, and others, who can with greater authority reſolve you. I ſhall onely alledge the Municipal and Common Laws of *France* in ſuch caſes, which heretofore have uſed to be a rule, and bridle of Juſtice, and to be able to keep men in aw. In the year therefore 1477. this Decree or Law was made by *Lewis* the Eleventh, King of *France*; *viz.* All Treaties againſt the Kings Perſon, or his Eſtate, or againſt the Realm, are declared to be Treaſon: Which was revived, or a new Law enacted to the ſame purpoſe and effect, by *Charls* the Eighth, in the year 1487. and in the year 1532. by *Francis* the Firſt; in the year 1560. by *Francis* the Second at *Fontainbleau*;

and by *Henry* the Second, in the year 1556. All men were forbidden to bear Arms, or to hold any particular Intelligences, Councels, or Assemblies for Conference, but in Town houses, or publike places. By *Henry* the Third, at *Bloys*, in the year 1579. prohibition was made against the assembling or gathering of any Troops, upon occasion or pretence of private quarrels; or to enter into any such kinde of Association. It was also Enacted, That to hold intelligence, to make Leagues offensive, or to have participation with such, either within or without *France*; to levy Soldiers without the Kings License, should be judged and deemed High Treason, and offenders herein to be holden as disturbers of the State. All which Laws are set down in the *Code* of *Henry* the Third, Printed at *Paris*, 1597. And all the Lawyers of *France* affirm the same; *viz. Francis Rogueau des droicts Royaux.* Bodin *de Repub. Le grand Coustumier*, and others. And surely with

with great reaſon: For, as without Order there can be no Peace, ſo without Juſtice no Society. And *Calviniſts* in this reſpect, differ not at all from the worſt of *Anabaptiſts*, if they refuſe ſubmiſſion to the Superior Magiſtrate, and to the Law. Magiſtrates, as King *Joſaphat* ſaith, 2. *Paralip.* 19. *Non hominis, ſed Dei exercent judicium*; *Do execute the judgement, not of man, but of God.* And verily it cannot be denied, but that this ſeditious Sect and Doctrine of *Calviniſm* hath caſt the State of *France* into a very deſperate diſeaſe, under which it laboreth at preſent, and ſuch as may ſeem to require more then an *Æſculapius*, to give it perfect cure. For as much as neither the Majeſty of their King, nor the Forces of his Armies, nor the Wiſdom of his Councel, and Parliaments, nor the Authority of the Eſtates ſo often aſſembled, nor the Obedience due to Juſtice, nor their own Peace and Safety, together with that of the whole Kingdom, can move a few deſperate Out-

Laws, ſheltring in *Montauban*, and *Rochel*, to yeild up themſelves and their Arms to the King, and to ſeek from His Royal Grace and Favor that Peace which all other his dutiful Subjects, even of their own Tribe and Profeſſion elſwhere, do ſecurely enjoy.

Titulus

Titulus Tertius.

KNOXISM:

OR

The Troubles in SCOTLAND.

BUt perhaps this Fiery Zeal of the Rabbins of *Genevah*, if it were transplanted into some colder Climate; as for example, into *Scotland*, it would cool somewhat, and be found of a better temper. Not one jot better. *Cælum, non animum, mutant:* It is to change air onely, not complexion. Their *spirits*, that come from thence, are too much *fixed* upon mischeif, to be easily *dispersed*; much less to be *sublimated* unto true goodness and vertue. As experience hath shewn, in 1.

in the example of an infamous Empirick ſent from *Genevah* thither, whoſe practices have inflamed the whole Body of that Kingdom, and filled it with ſo much irregular Zeal, and abundance of ill Humors, as thereby hath grown a Pleuriſie of Troubles in that State, which hath coſt much blood, and is not perfectly cured to this day. The Authors of the Tumults and Alterations in *Scotland*, with the Actors alſo, were as violent as Whirlwinds; they blew down all that ſtood in their way, even Royalty and the Crown it ſelf. *John Knox*, *Goodman*, *Gilby*, and *Buchanan*, were the principal Inſtruments of the Work, and emiſſaries of Maſter *Calvin*; yet bravely ſeconded by Maſter *David Fergerſſon* (a Learned Shoemaker, but Miniſter at *Dundee*,) by Maſter *Coverdale*, *Willox*, *Rous*, *Harriot*, and *Montgomery*. *Victrix Legio*, a man may well ſay, Et *Novatores ſtrenui*. Men of invincible obſtinacy in their way, and as perfect Innovators, as could be deſired. All of them

Miniſters,

Miniſters, and of ſuch *Salt-peter Spirits*, as were fit to blow up, and put into Combuſtion any Nation in the World. By theſe was the Church of *Scotland* Reformed, according to the Standard of *Genevah*, and the Platform of thoſe Elders. *Knox* was their *Nehemia's*, but far unlike him, both in proceedings and qualities; yet he pretended to act his part: How properly and piouſly his Countryman will beſt inform you, who wrote of his vertues. *Buchanan* was ever a rude and ſlovenly *Swiſs*, of a preſumptuous audacity, and by nature factious. He was one of them, that in the time of *James* the Fifth, at *Edinburgh*, did ſolemnly in *Lent* eat the Paſchal Lamb; and being convicted of that *Judaiſm* (a buſineſs which the King himſelf examined) his Companions were condemned and burnt for the Hereſie; but he himſelf eſcaped, and fled over into other Countreys, as a man reſerved to be a ſcourge to his own. But to diſcern their ſpirits cleerly, and to judge

Langius vitâ *Joh. Knoxi.*

judge of their *peaceableneſs, patience, ſanctity, &c.* which yet they ſo much pretended, we muſt firſt read their Theorems, and by the Maxims of their Doctrine, we ſhall finde them *Doctors extraordinary* indeed, and ſuch as were ſcarce to be matched again in the whole World, for the buſineſs which they came about.

2. I ſhall begin with *Knox* firſt, who in his Book to the Nobility and people of *Scotland*, inſtructs them thus in the point we treat of, *viz.* Of obedience to Princes, and Loyalty, *Neque promiſſum, neque juramentum obligare poteſt, &c. Neither promiſe,* ſaith he, *nor oath can oblige any man to obey, or give aſſiſtance unto Tyrants, againſt God.* It is true; no man ſaith that they can, when the Tyrant expreſly *commandeth*, that which God expreſly *forbiddeth*; but that is not the caſe: All the World knoweth, in the ſence of *Knox* and *Genevah* there is much pretended to be *againſt God*, which is not at all *forbidden by God.* And when a Chriſtian Prince *commands* nothing, but

but what his Office and the Laws of his Kingdom do require him to *command*, certainly we may not ſo haſtily preſume it to be *againſt God*; ſome better Authority muſt declare it to be ſo, then the bare opinion of a *Knox*, or a *Buchanan*. So in his Hiſtory of *Scotland*, *Princes*, ſaith he, *may be depoſed by the people, if they be Tyrants againſt God and his Truth; and their Subjects are free from their Oaths and Obedience*. Secondly, *Goodman* his Companion and Fellow *Boutefeu* ſings to the ſame tune out of *Exodus*, in a Book which teacheth any thing, more then what the title promiſeth. *Toti populo hoc onus incumbit, &c. This is a duty*, ſaith he, *which lieth upon all the people in general, to ſee that Idolaters be puniſhed, whoſoever, or how great ſoever they be, none muſt be excepted, neither King, nor Queen, nor the Emperor himſelf.* This is his Homily; *If Governors fall from God* (and ſtill we muſt remember, what it is *to fall from God* in his ſenſe) *ad furcas abripiant*, away

Goodm. de obedientiâ.

away with them, God requires it of the people, that they fall upon them, and *Hang them up instantly.* Most excellent Consistorian Doctrine verily! such Spirits, and such Preachers deserve the countenance of the State. Neither is *Buchanan* much behinde in such grave and wholesome Counsels. For first he tels you, *that the people is above the King, and of greater Authority then he.* If he means this of the *people Collectively taken*, and Legally represented; albeit it were true, yet is it not any way pertinent to his purpose; for never did he, nor any of his reforming brethren beyond the Seas, act any thing by the Authority of the people in that sense: if he means, as he must do, of *the people dispersedly*, and rising, in tumults heer and there of their own heads, it is apparently seditious, and destructive of all Governments whatsoever. After he hath said this, and that *the people may bestow the Crown at their pleasure* (notwithstanding that the Law ordereth the descent

Buchan. *de jure regn. apud Scotos.* p. 61.

ſcent thereof in a particular and certain ſucceſſion) he falls at laſt into a Dialogue worth your obſerving. *They hold*, ſaith he, meaning Royalliſts, *that Kings muſt be obeyed good or bad. It is blaſphemy to affirm that*, ſaith Buchanan. But, *God placeth often times evil Kings*, ſay the Royalliſts: *So doth he oft private men to kill them*, ſaies Buchanan. But *in* 1 Tim. *we are commanded to pray for Princes*, ſay they. *So are we commanded to pray for Theeves*, ſaith he. Bnt ſay the Royalliſts, *S.* Paul *commands obedience to Princes. Saint* Paul *wrote ſo*, ſaith Buchanan, *in the infancy of the Church; if he lived now, he would write otherwiſe.* It hath been ſaid, that *nullum magnum ingenium ſine aliquâ mixturâ inſaniæ*, Theſe great high-ſoaring wits have commonly ſome tincture of frenzy following them. *Buchanan* in his time was counted for ſuch, a great wit; but queſtionleſs had he been perfectly ſound, he could never have let ſlip ſuch a Hyſteron-proteron, as this is, from his Pen; he would

would never have set the Cart thus before the Horse, the people above the King, arming them to kill their Princes, under any undeclared, unjudged pretense of Tyranny: For when such a thing is done without justice and publick order, what can be more impious and abominable? yet *Knox* not onely justyfieth it, but could be content, *there were publike rewards appointed for such Assassinates*, and Murderers of Tyrants, as he calls them, *which there are for such as kill Wolves*. So far doth the zeal and light of their new Gospel carry them. The sword of *Gideon* is now in their hands, and all are *Midianites*, *Moabites*, and Enemies of God that stand in their way. But I pray thee good Reader what is Anarchy, Sedition, Treason, if this be order or good government?

Histor. of *Scotland.* P. 372.

3. I shall not need to trouble you further with instances of Doctrine: The book of *Dangerous positions, &c.* gives a general Sentence, that *such Divinity as this, is not holden by* Knox *and* Buchanan *alone*, but *generally*, saith

saith he, *for ought I can perceive by the chief Consistorians beyond the Seas.* He means the Presbyterian Divines, *Calvin*, *Beza*, and the rest of their Gang; whose opinions have been but too much reverenced here in *England*, since the year 1570. and it would be very unhappy, that such shops of sedition, as their Consistories be, should be ever set up, or opened: here *Whittingham* in his Preface to *Goodmans* Book *of Obedience*, testifieth from *Genevah*, that it had been allowed, and much commended by the chief Divines of that place. *Calvin* himself *Epist.* 105. to *Knox* doth applaud his practices, and encourage him to proceed. *Buchanans* works pass'd for a long time as currant in *Scotland*, as if they had been Printed *Cum privilegio*; till the King at last found it necessary to prohibite them. So we see, it was not *Goodman* alone, nor *Knox* alone, but the whole Congregation of Presbyterians, that defended such dangerous Paradoxes; and not in one Country, but generally

rally where they were admitted; not lately or newly, but originally and from the beginning of their sect. Yea their *Genevah* Bibles pretend to prove it from 2 *Chron.* 15. 16. where they allow the deposing of Queen *Maacha*, by her son King *Asa*, for Idolatry. But it is an example, which by no violence they can use, will be fitted to their purpose. For first it was done, not by private persons, but by *Asa* the King. Secondly, not by *the King alone*, but with the full consent, yea, Covenant of all the people, *V.* 13. and not contrary, but according to the express Law, *Deut.* 13. 9. What is this to private persons, or the people tumultuously runing together against their Princes, and killing them not only without any publike order or authority acknowledged, but even contrary to the Laws established, and while the Princes themselves are doing nothing, but what the Laws established and their Office oblige them to do? Such practises as these are not allowed at *Doway*; nor are there

Mark that.

there any such notes to be found in the Rhemists Testament. The Bishop of *Ross* chargeth them, but *Knox* especially, that in his Sermons he bitterly inveighed against the Nobility, *Quod Jesabelem illam ex medio non sustulerunt, &c.* because they were slow in removing that *Jezabel* (so he calls the Queen Regent of *Scotland*) *either from the Government, or out of the World:* For it is not certain, which he meaneth, and the phrase, as his Spirit, inclines to the worse. And therefore, because the Nobility, as it seems, would make no more haste, they begin the Reformation themselves, *viz.* He and thirty more of his company; first of all, by surprizing the Castle of Saint *Andrews*, and murdering of the Cardinal *Betun.* This was in the year 1546. The Queen hereupon summoning him to appear, and answer for such outrages, he refuseth; she proclaims him Traytor, he contemns her Proclamation; and having secured himself at Saint *Johnstons* from any danger

Lesleus Hist. lib. 10.

danger of apprehenſion by the Queens Officers, who ſought him, he was ſo far from relenting, or ſhewing any reſpect to the Queen Regent, that at the ſame time he perſwades the Burgeſſes of the place, *viz.* Saint *Johnſtons*, and of *Dundee*, to ſuppreſs the Frieries, to pull down Images in the Churches, and overthrow the Abbeys of Stone, and Saint *Andrews*: Which they did, keeping Forces in the Field two moneths together, taking the Coyning Irons into their cuſtody, and proceeded ſo uncontroulably, and without reſiſtance in their diſordrous courſes, that it even brake the heart of that Noble and Religious Queen Regent to ſee it. After whoſe death, in the year 1560. (the Queen being then in *France*) by the inſtigation and procurement of *Knox*, it was enacted, as a Law perpetual and fundamental in the State, *That Catholike Religion ſhould be aboliſhed*, and that whoſoever defended the Popes Authority in *Scotland*, ſhould be baniſhed,

baniſhed, and that all former *Acts to the contrary ſhould be repealed.* This was pretended to be done *by the three Eſtates*; but the Queens Commiſſion could not be ſhewn, nor any conſent of hers to confirm ſuch Acts; beſide the oppoſition which the Clergy or State Eccleſiaſtical generally made againſt ſuch proceedings, not onely in the Parliament or Convention of States, where they happened to be overborn, but all the Kingdom over. Therefore to make that ſeem good by a colour of Law, which was at firſt begun by meer Faction and Violence, ſome years after; *viz. Anno* 1567. and after the depoſition, or rather unjuſt and forced Reſignation of their lawful Sovereign the Queen, they procure an other Parliament to be called (the Earl *Murray* being then Regent, and the King ſcarce out of his Cradle) which confirms the Acts of the Parliament, 1560. and preſcribes an oath to be taken by all ſucceeding Kings, to maintain the Religion

See *Jo. Leſlæus* hiſt. of *Scotland.*

Cap. 9.

then

then received (to which as yet no King had ever consented) and establisheth the Confession of that Church. The Queen provoked with their many and insufferable indignities, had, before this time, sent for some *French* Forces into *Scotland* to oppose them: But this they take so ill, and the Preachers of new Doctrine in all parts of the Kingdom, improve the occasion so much to her disadvantage, and to the further incensing of the people, that at last, they not onely make shift to exclude her from all Government, putting her in condition of a private person, but dishonor her beside with most capital and criminous Accusations; yea; and cast her into prison, not without great danger of her life. *Beza* (that *Tibullus* of *Genevah*) instigating and encouraging them much thereunto, who is pleased in his Reformed Zeal and Eloquence to call her *Medea*, *Athaliah*, and what not? *Nullum ejus sceleribus nomen, &c.* The Good Man, it seems, could not finde

words

words bad enough to expreſs her guiltineſs; and yet how well is it known, he had ſtore of them always at command; and how maliciouſly he pleaded againſt her, while ſhe was priſoner in *England*, onely out of hatred to the Houſe of *Lorrain*, appears abundantly in his Book called *Reveille-Matin*.

I confeſs, generally tis better to bury old quarrels, then to renew their memory; yet to juſtifie the Innocent, and to detect perfectly the evil practiſes of theſe men, I cannot forbear to inſiſt a while on this Subject, and to declare more particularly, what inducements they pretended, for ſuch exorbitant courſes. They accuſed the Queen of procuring the death of her Husband, the Lord *Henry Darley*, out of a deſire and intention to marry *Bothwel*, who was principal in the murther. Therefore ſay they, for zeal to Juſtice, for the Honor of the Realm, and ſatisfaction to Forreign Nations, it is neceſſary, that ſhe be under re- 4.

ſtraint, til ſhe cleer her ſelf from the imputation of ſuch heinous crimes. Theſe were their Accuſations and pretenſes. But touching the Murther it was very unlike to be true; and certainly required manifeſt proofs, if ever any cauſe did. Her Sex was not fit for ſuch a Butchery; and her nature known to be too Royal, to harbor ſuch diſhonorable Treachery: though ſhe had ſome juſt cauſe of offence againſt him. If ſhe had deſired to put him to death, he was her Subject, and ſhe might have done it, openly, legally, and by courſe of Juſtice. He had been of the Confederacy for the killing of *David Riza* her Secretary; his own Dagger was found in his Body. The Earl *Morton* being fled into *England* upon that offence, he preſumed to revoke him, and call him home without the Queens knowledge or allowance. Neither was he Loyal to the Queen in reſpect of Conjugal affection and duty; his offenſiveneſs in that kinde was very

very notorious and ſcandalous to all the Court, and occaſion of much diſquiet and difference betwixt the Queen and him; and from whence their common Adverſaries took advantage, in a ſhort time, to ruin them both: What then is the proof of ſuch a crime? what evidence bring they to convince her guilty of the Fact? Firſt they object, that *Douglas*, Earl *Bothwels* man, was executed for it. True. And that it was he, that brought a Box of Letters of the Queens to *Bothwel*, which he had received of Sir *James Balfoor* at *Edenburgh* to carry to his Maſter; by which Letters intercepted, their juglings and practiſes (*viz.* of the Queen and *Bothwel*) were diſcovered. It is anſwered, Lyes have commonly one Leg ſhort; and ſo 'tis here. For is it probable, that either the Queen, or the Earl ſhould repoſe ſuch confidence, and ſo great ſecrets in a man, that was known to be at the devotion of a contrary Faction, as Sir *James Balfoor* was? Is it likely

ſhe would at all ſend ſuch a Packet, which ſhe knew contained matter of great Peril, but of no conſequence at all to her ſelf? For ſhe directs them to be burnt, and might have done that her ſelf well enough without the labor of ſending them to him. Beſide, the Queen ever denied thoſe Letters to be hers, though her hand had been counterfeited to them; neither was there Superſcription, Indorſement, Seal, Date, or any thing elſe, that might poſſibly diſcover more cleerly, whoſe they were, or from whom coming. Her hand was onely Subſcribed, the Letters themſelves of another Character; and truly it is not probable, that in a buſineſs of ſo great privacy, ſhe ſhould require the State of a Secretary, and that of ſome Stranger too? for had it been the hand of any of her ordinary *Amanuenſes*, the caſe had been cleer, and a diſcovery would have been eaſily made. Neither could he, who delivered them, ever be found out to diſcover the Pack;

and

and *Douglaſs*, who was the man accuſed to carry them, proteſted at his death, that he never knew of any ſuch Letters. Laſtly, ſuppoſing that ſhe had indeed ſent them, yet was there no expreſs proof of any unlawful act, attempt, or practiſe to charge her with. Suppoſe ſhe had deſired to have her husband murthered: doubtleſs it had been a great offence againſt God, and odious to all men; but was it a ſufficient cauſe for her own Subjects to take Arms againſt her, and to depoſe her? Was not *David* in a like caſe, in the buſineſs of *Uriah* and *Bathſhebah*? Yet he forfeited not his Crown. Saint *John Baptiſt* reproved *Herod* for his Adultery, yet did neither exhort nor counſel the people to deprive him of his Dignity, though he were both a ſtranger of *Idumæa*, and an uſurper. *Edward* the fourth of *England* was not depoſed for keeping another mans Wife, though he committed a great ſin; Nor *Henry* eighth for cutting off the Heads of

so many of his own Wives, and committing as great sins, *Spectante populo*, in the view of his Kingdom and of all the world. Surely these *Boutefeux*, while they presume to punish their Kings for sin, without any good authority or proof, do precipitate themselves unhappily into far greater. Zeal in them is like a Sword in a mad mans hand, dangerous to himself and others. But to the matter; What other probabilities did they produce against her? Many, She mourned faintly for his death, which is a sign, she was weary of his life. She acquitted *Bothwel* for his death, and did not punish him, as he deserved, *Ergo*, let her die. But what a *Nugipoliloquides* is this *Buchanan*? are such conjectural presumptions, as these, matter of evidence sufficient to depose Princes? As for her Mourning and the Funerals, His Body was Embalmed, and laid by *James* the fifth her Father; the Lord *Tracquaire*, Justice *Clerk* and others attended the Corps; indeed most

of

of the Counsel being Protestants, the Catholike Ceremonies were not permitted: and in *Scotland* it is not the custom to reserve the Corps Fourty days. Nor was it decent, that the Queen her self should have been there personally mourning, as a Subject: therefore she mourned privatly, as his Soveraign and Wife; which she did so long, that her Counsel, and Physitians both were forced to dissuade her from it, and to cease. All which Sir *Henry Killegrew* might witness, who was sent from *England* to condole and comfort her. What could be required more of a Wife?

But as concerning Earl *Bothwel* and the Marriage following, herein the jugling of *Murray* and his faction was most admirable, and worthy to be known. For First, was not *Bothwel* acquitted for this crime by his Peers? was not *Murray* himself, (who best knew the Plot) together with the Lord *Lindsey*, *Sempil*, and other adherents, principal to pro- 5.

cure his purgation? The Queen did not acquit him out of her own affection, or will onely, but by their advice and Counsel, who were the chief *Pilots* of the State, at that time. Nay, did not the same parties *Murray*, *Sempil*, &c. procure others of the Nobles to joyn with them, and sollicited the Queen to Marry *Bothwel*, pretending it necessary for her to take such a Husband, to defend her in troublesome times; yea did they not in some maner force her to it? and by their Hand-writing to *Bothwel*, did they not binde themselves to obey him, in case he would marry her? did not they themselves, *viz. Murray*, *Sempil* and the rest, (in order to this) procure the Divorce of *Bothwel* from his first Wife, sister to the Earl of *Huntly*? and are thereby most cleerly convinced of double dealing? But what follows? The charg of the Murther. And of this *the Lord* Harris *accused* Murray *himself*, *viz.* that at *Craigmillar*, he, *Morton*, and *Bothwel* did consult, conspire, and determine the Kings

Kings death; for the effecting whereof Indentures were there drawn and ſubſcribed by them. And to convince it more evidently, *Pourry*, *Paris*, and *Hay*, who were all three Executed for the Murther, confeſſed at their death, and called God to witneſs, that thoſe two (*Murray* and *Morton*) were the principal contrivers of it. The like did *John Hepburn*, *Bothwels* ſervant, at his Execution for the ſame Fact; proteſting that he had ſeen the Articles and Writings drawn to that purpoſe, as we ſaid. To blinde the world therefore a little, *Murray* and *Morton* take up Arms upon a pretence to apprehend *Bothwel*, and ſend out ſhips to purſue him at Sea, whom themſelves had ſent away; yea had ſent the Lord *Grange* on purpoſe to him, to adviſe and will him for his own ſafety, to be gone, promiſing, that no body ſhould purſue him: as indeed none did very haſtily: for he ſtayed after this no leſs then two Months in *Scotland*, *viz.* until *Murray* was re-

turned out of *France*. Then of neceſſity he muſt be gone; otherwiſe by his ſtay, or their taking him, they would be all betrayed themſelves: So he finding himſelf overreach't by his Aſſociates in the Conſpiracy, and being as ſure to be overpowered by them, if he ſhould abide it, was content at laſt to withdraw, and be offered up as a Sacrifice to the cenſure of the world for their purgation. This therefore was the Texture and ſum of the Plot concerning the death of the Lord *Darley* Husband to the Queen, and the Queens Marriage of *Bothwel*. Theſe two Catilines (*Murray* who was the Queens baſe Brother, and *Morton*) cauſed the King to be ſlain, uſing *Bothwels* conſent and aſſiſtance in it; which *Bothwel* they perſwade afterward to Marry the Queen, and deal as effectually with the Queen, that ſhe ſhould be willing to Marry *Bothwel*: and this on purpoſe, that they might have ground hereby to ruin them both, and poſſeſs themſelves of the government;

vernment; as in a short time they did, upon a colourable, though feigned, accusation brought against them, *viz.* against the Queen and *Bothwel*, as conspiratours and contrivers of the Kings death. Tis well known, the Earl *Murray* never truly loved the Lord *Darley*. He was once in Arms and in the field to have kild him; and thereupon fled into *England*. After this he perswaded the Lord *Darley* to give his consent to the Murthering of *David Riza* the Queens Secretary; in which action a Pistol was also set to the Queens Belly, being then great with Childe, to terrifie her, and, if it could have been, to procure her Miscarrying: but the Lord *Darley*, having obtained the Queens pardon for this, yet fearing lest *Murray* should inform Her Majestie concerning him, further then he liked, he resolves with himself to kill *Murray*; but first, out of I know not what reason, discovers his intention to the Queen, whom he supposed to be very much incensed

incenſed againſt *Murray*; but ſhe utterly diſſiked the buſineſs, and would not endure him to ſpeak of it: which coming afterwards to *Murrays* knowledge, as he had before practiſd to eſtrang the Queen from her Husband, and offered to procure her a Divorce from him, (which ſhe alſo utterly condemned,) ſo now he reſolves to make away him *viz.* the Lord *Darley*, and to that end Plots with the Earls *Morton* and *Bothwel*, as hath been ſaid, yet himſelf cunningly, to divert ſuſpicion, and that he might be thought abſolutely innocent in the buſineſs, when as now all things were agreed upon, withdraws himſelf, from the Court firſt, and then goes into *France*, a little before the Murther was committed. All which paſſages, being indeed the moſt intricate maze of Treachery (one of them) that ever was deviſed by wicked men, were made to appear plain enough unto Queen *Elizabeths* Commiſſioners at *York*, as is manifeſt by Sir *Ralph Sadlers*

Sadlers Notes concerning that buſineſs, which I have ſeen; but afterward more cleer then the Sun, at the Tryal and Execution of the Earl *Morton*. For *Murray* had met with vengeance before; having been Piſtolled by a man of his own profeſſion, as he rode in the Street at *Edinburgh*, about the year 1570. Surius. *Chron.*

6. Yet upon ſuch falſe and treacherous Foundations as theſe, do they ground all their diſloyal proceedings and hard uſage of the Queens Majeſtie their natural Sovereign afterward, *viz.* That which they uſed towards her at *Carbery hill*, their ſlanderous Libels, their impriſoning her at *Longh-Levin*; and their Act of Parliament for her depoſition, as appeareth by the words of the Statute. Laſtly the reſignation of her Crown; which yet they ſtoutly affirmed at *York*, to have been voluntary and of her own ſeeking. But whether it were ſo or no, their courſe of proceeding will beſt manifeſt. For firſt, themſelves had drawn up the form of Re-

Resignation, before she understood any thing of it. Then *Athol*, *Liddington* and the rest send Sir *Robert Melvin* to her, to signifie from them the great danger she was in; and to perswade her to yeeld to their Motion touching her Resignation: yea they alledged, as out of duty and wellwishing to her, as they said, that in case the condition of affairs should change, what she should do now, could not be any prejudice to her, *being it was extorted*. Sir *Nicholas Throcmorton* was about this time arrived in *Scotland* from the Queen of *England*; upon other pretenses indeed, but a most fit man to further such a work: which he did, so like a cunning Artificer, that what wind soever blew him thither, he deserved well at his return to have been created Lord *Hurly*. At last comes the Lord *Lindsey* (one whose hands had been formerly washed in the Secretaries blood,) with a Commission from the Counsel to the Queen, and with stern looks tenderd the writings

tings of Resignation to her, threatning fearfully, in case she should refuse to sign them. Whereupon she subscribed, beeing prisoner; and to save her life, lost her Crown. Was this a Free Resignation, think you? Their Act of Parliament indeed calls it so, but the world will judge. Beside this they make her give power to the Lords, *Lindsey* and *Ruthen* (*as her deareſt Friends*) to renounce the government in her name, and to appoint *Murray* Regent, which was the thing he had long & earnestly gaped for: when this was done, and she was now become, as it were, a private person, they decree, *Chap.* 12. that she shall remain prisoner until her Tryal. And *Chap.* 19. They draw up her Indictment most scandalously and falsly. Among the causes they pretend of her Resignation, they say first, That *she was weary of the Government*. But, their Tyrannous and Disloyal proceedings had made her so, if she were. Secondly, That *she was not able in Body and Spirit to endure the pains.*

pains. She was in the flower of her age, and a Princess of no mean Vivacity, quickness, and Magnanimity of Spirit, as they themselves and the world knew. And thirdly that she might in her life time, *see her Son setled in the government*. She would gladly have seen him first of age to govern himself. This was the direct way to loose both her Son and her self, for ought she could expect or foresee otherwise: But 'tis true, *Domini est salus, qui evellit de laqueo pedes suorum, Salvation is of our Lord, and he deliver-eth the Feet of his people out of the Snare.* For as it happened, the Queen maketh a very strange Escape: and at *Hamiltoun*, the house of a Noble Family, and at that time well affected, she revoketh all, whatsoever she had done in her imprisonment, Confessing and Protesting that it was all again her Will, and by Force and Violence extorted from her; That no form of legal proceeding had been observed in it; That the Noble Earls of *Huntley*, *Argile*, Lord

Lord *Harris* and many others, never consented to it. That in the Parliament, where it was transacted, there was not above Four Earls, Six Lords, One Bishop, and Three Abbots. With such manifest partiality, and dislike of the greater and better part of the Kingdom was the business carried!

I would tell you some other, no mean inducements, occasions, motives, which perswaded the se Heads of the *Scottish Nation*, to cast themselves into such a Gulf of disloyalty against their natural Sovereign, as they must needs either perish themselves, or run the whole State of the Kingdom upon a Rock, and wrack it; but for some reasons I must do it under the Vail of an Apologue; For all things are not to be spoken plainly. 7.

IN Africa *then there were two great Forrests neer adjoyning; In the one a Lyon governed the Beasts, in the other a Lyoness. The Lyon was Rich and full of Prey, yet feared, least his Neighbor*

Neighbor the Lyoneſs getting her a Forreign Mate, ſhould gather ſo much ſtrength and courage, as to pick ſome quarrel with him, and invade his Foreſt. Wherefore calling a Counſel of his Beaſts, he conſulted with them, how they might ſecure themſelves of the Lyoneſs: The Bull, preſumptuous of his ſtrength, and uſed to gore all that came in his way, together with the Boar, and the Bear contemned ſuch vain fears, as not worthy of the Lyons courage: yet the Major part of the other Beaſts concurred in opinion with the Lyon, That there was ground of fears and jealouſies: *which an old Ape perceiving, that had lived long in the Foreſt, and was uſed to counterfeit, gave adviſe preſently, that the Lyon ſhould faign kindeneſs,* for, *ſaith he, being an old diſſembler,* Great hearts are ſooneſt won with faire ſemblance. *Neither did Reignard the Fox diſlike this Counſel; but knowing that the Lyoneſs had many hungry Wolves and Wily Foxes about her, adviſed the Lyon to ſend the Goat, a grave Bearded perſonage, to viſite the*

the Lyoneſs and renue Freindſhip: and under colour of ſuch friendly Negotiation, to deal privately with ſome of the Wolves and Foxes about the Lyoneſs, and breed in them ſome fear and apprehenſions of her cruelty; yea and if he found them inclinable to ſuch Counſels, to perſwade them to ſtand more upon their own guard, and not to ſuffer the Lyoneſs to rule ſo Arbitrarily, as ſhe did, but rather, if they could, to make themſelves a Free State, and to be under no other command, but their own. The Goat performed this ſervice ſo wiſely, that the Mongrel, a Beaſt much uſed and very neer the perſon of the Lyoneſs, upon hearing the Motion, reſented it ſo well, that he undertook to perſwade ſome other of the Counſel. But, ſaith he, we have ſome cruel Beaſts among us, which favor the Lyoneſs much, as The Tyger, the Leopard, the Unicorn, &c. if they perceive this, they will oppoſe us inſtantly, and make a Party too ſtrong for us. Fear not that, ſaid the Goat, we can ſpare you a Regiment or two of ſuch Maſtiffs, as ſhall defend

and

and guard you sufficiently: onely be sure, that you stand to your business; and when you are once Masters of the Field, there will be Prey and spoile enough. Upon this the Mongrel, the Wolves, and the Foxes, with such other Brutes as adhered to them, lay their Heads together, and never leave consulting and conspiring, till they had entrapped the Lyoness, and drawn her into such a Pit-fal, as she was not able to recover her self, but they seize upon her, disongle her at their pleasure, and put her in ward. Reignard a great Counseller of the Lyon in the other Forest, and a Contriver of this Treachery, hearing what success it had, and that the Lyoness was secur'd, sends another Messenger to the Mongrel, advising him to make sure of the Lyoness Whelp, and then he might securly rule and govern all: For, *saith he,* Possession is the chief point in Law: *and when you have him, you have all. Perhaps, out of sullenness and restraint, he may die; however, if he lives, he shall be sure to live at your pleasure and disposing, if you take him in time,*

so

so he did accordingly. This is the Fable. The Moralizing of it, I leave to those that expound Riddles; though this be such, as needeth not an Oedipus to declare it.

I might here end my discourse of this pretended Church of *Scotland*, and of its irregular and tumultuous Reformation, but that I desire to satisfie the Reader a little further in the true cause of this particular distemper, or more special abuse and contempt of Civil Magistracy, which the Reformers of this Church seem to have shewen all along their work. It proceeded without all doubt from the Spirit and humor of *Calvin*, who first devised it; and was himself a bitter enemy against all Magistrates, in whose Counsels he could not rule: In so much, as at *Genevah* it self, he was at first expelled *for a seditious person* by the Magistrates of that City; and compelled to go live with *Bucer* at *Strasburgh*. Yet afterward, the party, which favored him, prevailing at *Genevah*, he 8.

was

was recalled back again; but refused to return, unless upon condition and promise, that his discipline should be received. So it was promised by a general consent of the City, and at his coming performed; His consistory, that is to say, an Oligarchy of certain pickd Elders, was erected, as it were the Inquisition of *Genevah*. This, by the way, was a strain of policy much beyond *Luthers* dull reach, and which madded him all his life long. For by this *Calvin* did not onely set up a Church Independent of him, and without consulting at all with him, *viz.* with *Luther*, but became a Dictator general, as it were, to all the Protestant or reformed Churches abroad; and so very much Eclipsed *Luthers* glory. But the seat of his Dominion was at *Genevah*, as we said, having fetled his discipline in such maner there, that by colour and pretence of it, he was able, not onely to censure offenders at his pleasure, but to carry on designs against any opposition

position whatsoever: For indeed through the concurrence of his Eldership (who were commonly all at his beck) he was upon the matter invested with a kinde of Sovereignety both of their Town and Church: He and his Elders ruled all there. And to the end it should be received abroad with due reverence (though it were indeed the Idol of his own fancy, yet) they set it down (*viz. Calvins* Presbyterian Discipline) for a mark of the True Church, and joyn it in equal rank with the Preaching of the word, and Administration of Sacraments. So that by means of this Discipline he not onely in a short time became himself the great Soldan of the Lake, but sent his Mammalukes also out into all the Provinces of *France*, and planted Reformed Churches there after his Model of *Genevah:* The Sinods or more general Assemblies whereof, seating themselves in the principal and chief Towns of the Kingdom, are thereby inabled to hold such cor-

correſpondence with the Nobility and Gentry of the Nation inclined to novelty, as that they are ſure of a conſtant and ſtrong ſupport from them upon all occaſions; yea to engage them perfectly in their way, they take them many times, very politickly, into their Conſiſtories in the quality of Lay-Elders, and do queſtionleſs nouriſh in themſelves no faint hopes, to be able one day by their means to ſubvert thoſe Pillers of the Catholike Church, which ſo much obſtruct their proceedings, *viz.* the Biſhops, Archbiſhops, and other Prelates of *France*; and to ſet up *Calviniſm* and their Conſiſtories all the Kingdom over. This, I ſay, is the Train of their Policy, and the reaſon, why they are ſo implacable in their hatred, and inceſſantly violent and active againſt all ſuch Princes and States, as do oppoſe the introduction of their Diſcipline; which is the Medium whereby, in *France*, *Scotland*, the *Palatinate* and elſewhere, they have made, or endeavored

endeavored to make themſelves Supream heads and Maſters of miſrule over all others: as hath been in part declared already, and ſhall be further manifeſted in the ſequel of this narration. Hence it is, that all commanders, Generals, and all other Officers whatſoever in their ſervice, are ſo ſtrictly injoyned by the Articles of *Bearn*, as hath been ſaid, to obſerve the diſcipline Eccleſiaſtical, as it ſhall be from time to time, ordained by their Synods: And hence, that is to ſay, from this Arrogant confidence of theirs it was, and indiſcreet zeal, that they refuſed when time was, at *Rochel*, ſo much as to ſpeak with Monſieur *Byron*, the Kings Embaſſador; and uſed Monſieur *la Nove* with ſo much, and ſo long incivilities, that at laſt he was conſtrained to forſake them. *Art.* 25.

And out of this fiery zeal for their Diana of the Diſcipline it proceeds, that they oppoſe, proſecute, and vilifie, with ſo much bitterneſs of ſpirit and ill language, where 9.

they can or dare, all other Eccleſiaſtical government whatſoever all Order of Divine Service, Rites and Ceremonies, which are not exactly after their Mode, or framed according to their Pattern. And in this particular the Proteſtants church of *England* hath, from the beginning ſo much taſted of their ſpleen, or madneſs rather, that Mr. *Butler* of *Cambridge* may ſeem to have ſhewen no leſs judgement, then wit, in the definition which he once gave of a Puritan, *viz.* That *he was a Proteſtant frayed out of his Wits*; which King *James* in the Conference at *Hampton Court* diſliked not. The reaſon whereof may be this. We finde by experience, that Ceremonies and Solemnity have ever in the Church of God ſtirred up and bred a reverence and devotion in the hearts of good people towards the ſervice of God; that they help to elevate and awaken their ſouls in time of prayer and other Divine worſhip: alſo that the order, and gravity

of

of Bishops and other Prelates of the Church were, not onely wont to finde, but apt to procure estimation and respect with the people. Now ask a Puritan his opinion of a Rochet, a Surplis, cornerd Cap, or any other Habit, which distinguisheth Ecclesiastical persons from the Laity, he tells you presently, They are the raggs of Antichrist, badges of Superstition; The Communion Book he calls the Portess and Breviary of Satan; set prayers extinguish zeal with him, yea are *tantum non* flat Idolatry; The Ecclesiastical Courts are the Synagogues or Shops of the Devil, and but the excrements of a corrupted discipline, which they would fain reform. As for the Authority and Government of Bishops he subscribs to Doctor *Ames*, *Hunc Episcoporum ordinem & medio tollendum, &c. That either this Hierarchy of Bishops must down, or Popery will come upon us, do what we can. Cujus contrarium verum est.* But let that pass. The Clergy of *England* they count

Atheists, call them soldiers of Antichrist, and a Bastardly Ministery. And from the Fountain of this frenzy sprang in late times, all those infamous and scandalous Libels of *Udal*, *Penry*, *Brown*, *Greenwood*, *Martin*, *Marprelate*, *Martin* junior, *Hay any work for a Cooper*, The supplication to the President of *Wales*, and many other to the late Queen, and troublesome to the State. But the spring-head of all was *Calvin* himself, who *Epist.* 105. declares *magis sibi placere*, &c. *that he* (forsooth) *did rather approve the Scottish Reformation, then that of England.* Gramercy good Sir *John.* You like it better; why? because it was the issue of your own happy Brain: 'tis well known, *Knox* fetcht his Coales from your Fire, and cast his Engin of Reformation in your Mould; and so upon the matter, in commending it, like a wise man, you commend your self. So *Epist.* 26. he tells *Cranmer, reliquiam esse congeriem, That there was a great heap of Popish superstitions*

ſtitions yet remaining in the Church of England, *which did not onely dim, but even much darken, and corrupt the purity of Gods worſhip.* Hence it was, that during all Queen *Maries* Reign, The *Engliſh* Church at *Genevah*, as they calld themſelves, was Antagoniſt, and at defiance with the Engliſh Church at *Franckfort*: for they at *Franckfort* defended the Authority of Biſhops, and uſed the Leiturgy and Ceremonies which were commanded by King *Edward* the ſixth; notwithſtanding Mr. *Calvin*, writing to the Protector, by whoſe Authority they had been eſtabliſhed, was ſo modeſt, as to call them ſcoffingly and by way of contempt, *Tolerabiles Ineptias, certain fooleries*, but yet ſuch, as *might be born withal* for a time.

It is therefore we ſee, no Hyperbolical charge or Calumny, to ſay that this *Presbyterian Diſcipline* is the *Palladium* of *Calviniſts*, for which they do not onely contend but fight, *tanquam pro aris & focis*, a- 10.

gainſt all Kings and Princes that oppoſe it, more eagerly and bitterly, then for any other thing: which no man will deny, that knowes, what their proceedings have been, & are in *France*, *Scotland*, *Low-countries*, *Bohemia* and elſewhere; or that hath read *Bſialicon Doron*, written by a Pen, that had cauſe enough to be ſenſible of their diſorders; or that Book of *Philippus Nicolai*, which is ful of predictions of what lawleſs attempts and practiſes they would ſerve themſelves to advance their conſiſtory above the court, which have not all prov'd untrue: or laſtly that of *Joannes Schutz* a learned *Lutheran*, who tells them plainly that *they truſt onely upon their Sæculær power, That they are ſeditious people, and defend their opinions beſt with a Sword in their hand.* But that which King *James* himſelf ſaith of them, is moſt remarkable *Ego a Puritanis, &c. I*, ſaith he, *have been vexed with theſe Puritans from my very Birth, yea they perſecuted me, while I was yet in my Mothers Belly*

De regno. Xti.

Lib. 30. *cauſ.*

Præfat. monitor.

Belly, and it miſt but little, that they had not murdered me, before I was born. Among which Pranks that of the Miniſters at *Sterling* muſt not be forgotten; who appeared themſelves in the field, under the Command of ſome of the Nobility of that faction, and forced the King to yeeld his perſon to them, and to ſuffer a new guard to be put upon him, and his old removed. For which inſolent attempt the chief of them, *viz.* Mr. *Patrick Galloway*, *Pollard*, *Carmichel*, and *Andrew Melvin* were glad afterwards to take covert in *England*: yet *James Gibſon* ſtood to it, and called the King *Jeroboam* and perſecutor; *Lawſon* oppoſed and affronted him to his face: *Pont* and *Balcanqual* by open Proclamation and in the preſence of a publike Notary, cenſur'd him very formally, and did what they could to withdraw the peoples Loyalty and affection from him. When *Philautia and Phantaſia*, that is, ſelf-love and ſelf-conceit do meet in Conjunction in the

Brain, there must needs be a great Eclipse of the understanding; and a Heart swollen and blown up with singularity doth so far contemn, yea hate, whatsoever opposition is made against her, that being not able to govern the strong passion, and those fervors of a proud spirit which boyl incessantly within her, Men run like so many furies, upon rash and inconsiderate attempts, both against the reverence due to Majestie, Justice, and all good government. A thing manifestly observable in these *Zelots*. And therefore the *Zuinglians*, who are (otherwise) more then their half Brethren, can scarcely approve them in the point of the Consistory. For saith *Gualter* Minister of *Zurich*, *Galli habent sua seniorum Concilia, &c. The Reformed French*, saith he, *have their Consistories of Elders, in whose hands all power and authority Ecclesiastical is, as it were, deposited; and in These all counsels and resolutions are taken, all Taxes and impositions layd for the maintaining*

Comment in 1 Cor. c. 5.

maintaining of War against the King. Proper work doubtleſs for the Miniſters of Gods word, as they will be called, and for a Spiritual Court, as it pretends to be, and to as good a purpoſe. *Muſculus* alſo ſheweth as little eſteem of them, in his *Loci. Commun.* cap. 10. But above all *Schultingius* in his *Hierarchica Anachreſis* doth moſt graphically and to the life diſcover their exorbitant and abſurd practiſes, *ſhewing how all Kings, Princes, and Governors are made ſubject to their Excommunications, that truly* Brutum Fulmen, *of their elderſhips. How Nobility and Commons both muſt aſſemble at the Summons of the Paſtor, who is more then half Pope in his Pariſh, being attended by Aſſiſting* Elders, *rather to countenance what he will have done, then to do any thing contrary to his minde. Laſtly,* Calvin *at* Genevah *is the Supream Oracle, beyond whom there is no appeal, really* Papa, *though out of a diſſembled humility he ſeems not willing to be called Doctor.* So he. De *Offic. Miniſtror.* lib. 15. cap. 19. 20, 22.

And what confuſion in the Civil State this Conſtitution of pretended Diſcipline may further cauſe in time, *Hooker* in the Preface to his Books of *Eccleſiaſtical Policy* ſheweth at large.

Titulus

Titulus Quartus.

GEVXISM:

OR

The Troubles in HOLLAND,

AND THE

United Provinces.

BY Courſe we arrive now at the States of *Holland*, *Zealand*, and thoſe other united Provinces, that is, at an *Aceldama* a Field of blood, where the Principles mentioned ſo oft already in this Narrative, and the Tragical effects of them have been acted with moſt lamentable fury and rage for many years together. I will 1.

will not be large in the declaration of them, to shew you, how, the *Lutheran* faction first began, and how violently the *Calvinists* succeeding did prosecute their work; for then I should weary you. I shall labor to be as breif as I may, and rather to *Epitomize* things, then dilate them. Of all their Actions That Union of *Utrecht* was the most notorious; a devise cleerly according to the rules of *Junius Brutus*, and in imitation of the *Switz* and *Cantons*. This Union was made by the States in the year 1578. For seeing on the one hand the fortunate Proceedings of the Duke of *Parma*, and on the other the course of the *Male-Contents*, they enter a perpetual League; which was comprized in Twenty Articles: In the first whereof *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Frize* and *Gelders* joyn *contra omnem vim quæ sub prætextu, &c.* to maintain one another *against all force whatsoever that shall be made upon them in the Kings name, or for matter of Religion.* After this,

viz.

viz. in the year 1579. the Prince of *Orange* (who was the contriver and ringleader of all) with those of *Antwerp* and *Gaunt* enter the League, and subscribe on the Fourteenth of *February*: and it was again confirmed at the *Hague* the Twentieth of *July*, 1581. The design in all being to expel their Leige Lord the King of *Spain*, and to deprive him of those Dominions; as presently after they did; publishing an Edict in the name of the States united, with this title or prescription, *Que le Roy d' Espagne est descheu, &c.. That the King of* Spain *is fallen from the Dominion of the Low-Countries:* and injoyning an Oath or form of Abjuration to be taken by all the people of those Countries in these words, I W. N. *Sware anew and binde my self to the Provinces united, to be Loyal and Faithful to them, and to Aid them against the King of* Spain *as a true Man of the Country.* Upon this they break all the Kings Seals, pull down his Arms, seize and enter upon

Comme un bon vassal du pais.

upon his Lands, Rents, Customes, and all Hereditaments whatsoever, taking them into their own possession, and as absolute Lords, they Coyn Money in their own names, they place and displace Officers of State, Banish the Kings Counsellors, seize upon Church livings, suppress Catholike Religion, beseidge *Amsterdam*, and do all other acts that might import Supream and absolute Dominion. And all this with so much terror and violence, that, as 'tis reported, *Raald* a Counsellor for *Frizeland*, upon onely hearing of their maner of proceeding, and of the new Oath against the King, died suddenly therewith, as of an Apoplexy. The reasons they give, why the King had forfeited his title and right to these Countries were these. First, *because he labored to suppress Religion.* They mean *their own*, which they had *newly* taken up contrary to the *old*; and which, had it not been for the opposition made against it by the Kings Governors

in

in the Provinces, had long before this time destroyed *the Kings Religion*, which was legally established, and received by the general consent, approbation, and profession of the whole Country. Secondly, *for oppressing*, that is governing, *them*, not according to the Law, but *by Tyranny*. Thirdly, *for abrogating their priviledges. and holding them in a condition of bondage and servitude*. Such a Prince, say they, we are not bound to obey as a Lawful Magistrate, but to eject as a Tyrant. But this is a President of very dangerous consequence doubtless. For if private Subjects (as at that time they were without dispute,) may depose their Prince meerly upon general Charges, and without having done any one overt Act contrary unto the Laws or the duty of his Office, and may make themselves sole Judges in the cause, of what is right betwixt the Prince and the People, of which they were in no capacity (either formal or virtual, that is representative) more

then

then a *Minor* part, *Qui ſtat, videat ne cadat*, there is no Prince, nor State in the world can be ſecure. The *Rochellers* may plead this, as much as the *Hollanders*; and ſo may any diſcontented party under a government which they like not, as well as they.

But it ſhall not be amiſs, to enquire a little further into this buſineſs, and lay open to plain view the grounds, occaſions and conſequences thereof, ſo compendiouſly as we ſhall be able. The original, primary and true cauſe of theſe troubles was the ſpring and growth of hereſie, which by this time was, like a Gangreen, ſpread over the greateſt part of *Germany*, and not the leaſt in theſe *Low-Countries*; where under the ſhadow of religion eſpecially of abetting and promoting *liberty of Conſcience*, as they called it, All factions of State and diſcontentments of Ambitious perſons ſhrowded themſelves. The peoples natural inclination to Novelty was great, and ſet it much forward

forward; yet there wanted not the Concurrence of ſome Forreigners, (to blow the Coals of diſſention) both out of *England* and *France*. *Charls* the Fifth, Emperor, a wiſe and provident Prince, remembringing what a piece of work *Luther* had lately cut him out in Germany, and with what danger, difficulty, and charge he overcame it, intended, as well for the quietneſs of theſe Provinces, as for his own Intereſt and Honor, to prevent, as much as he could, the Propagation of *Martineſts* and all other Sects whatſoever. And to that end, finding no other means more proper, and fit to be applied unto ſuch a *Malady*, had eſtabliſhed the Inquiſition among them, about the yeer 1550. for the Execution whereof *Mary*, Queen of *Hungary*, then Regent of the Low-Countries procured ſuch Explication and Mitigation of ſome Circumſtances, as was judged neceſſary. But after this, the Emperor reſigning the whole government of theſe Provinces

vinces to his Son King *Philip*, retired himſelf, by a moſt memorable example, voluntarily from the world, and conſecrated the laſt act of his life entirely to God and devotion. King *Philip* at the firſt entrance into his government, finding how much the Sects increaſed daily in *Flanders*, notwithſtanding the means oppoſed againſt them, and conſidering what danger would enſue upon it to the State, followed ſtrictly his Fathers adviſe, and in the year 1555. renewed the Commiſſion, Inſtructions and Articles for the ſaid Inquiſition. But this, as it happened through the general contagion and diſtemper of mindes, which Hereſie had bred in the people, provd onely matter of further diſcontent to the Inhabitants of the Nether-Lands, and did no good. They alledge, that all Strangers would thereupon be forced to depart the Country, and by conſequence their Trading would decay, which was the Golden Mine and maintenance

of

of thoſe Provinces. Thus they complained; but indeed their inward grief was the humor of Innovation, to which they were much inclined, and therefore feared themſelves. There was another Politick Act of the Kings, yet withall of very religious concernment and deſign, which added Fewel to this Fire, namely, the Erecting of thoſe new Biſhopricks at *Gaunt*, *Ipres*, *Antwerp*, *&c.* which he intended all the Provinces over. And a third, *viz.* the authority and power of the Biſhop of *Arras*, whoſe Cardinals Hat lately procured him by the Kings favor, made him the more odious; ſo as the greater his Obligation was to his Holineſs, or the King their Sovereign, ſo much more, it ſeemed, was the malice both of the Nobility and common people incenſed againſt him. Laſtly, they urge their Ancient priviledges and liberties which they pretend, were violated by the King; They would have no Strangers rule or bear Office among them; *Floren. vand. Haer de tumult. Belgic.*

The

The *Spaniards* must be dismissed the Country; and some new liberties granted, *viz*. Liberty of Conscience, and Toleration for Religion.

3 Thus were the names of *Liberty and Religion* made the Standard-bearers, as it were, to their future Commotions. But let us consider their several grievances. As concerning the first, that of the Inquisition, the name is of greater Terror then the thing: It was first devised upon a necessity against the *Moors* in *Spain*; and upon experience of the use and benefit thereof, continued. And though I shall not commend any sign, or proceedings, that savor of cruelty, yet I cannot condemn this: because it addeth nothing to the punishment of Heresie, which the Law did not inflict before; but requires onely a more strict Execution of the Law, and a more diligent course of examination to be used by the Inquisitors. And certainly, under God, it hath been the chief Antidote, which hath preserved *Spain* so well and so

ſo long free from the infection of hereſies, and from ſuch dangerous and laſting tumults as do commonly follow them, and wherewith the other Kingdoms of *Europe* have been generally embroyled. The *Spaniards* themſelves, when they were moſt diſcontented, never complained of it; nor is it in it ſelf a more bloody Law or Execution of Juſtice, then the Conſiſtory it ſelf at *Genevah* doth maintain, and hath executed more then once, though unjuſtly and Tyrannically, conſidering what principles they pretend, and what outcries and obteſtations they once made for *Liberty of Conſcience*, *Liberty of Propheſying*, *Liberty of the Spirit*, which is their onely *Judge of Controverſies*, according to the *written word alone*, and not any Conſiſtory, or company of men whatſoever. Beſides, as it was at firſt propounded by the King, out of his zeal for the good and quiet of the Country, ſo was it by his wiſdom ſuſpended afterwards, finding, they were not capable

capable of such a remedy. For the second, *viz.* the Erecting of the new Bishopricks it was a prudent and necessary resolution to bridle Sectaries, and as a Sythe, to cut down those Weeds, which grew so fast in Gods Church. For by appointing in each Province grave and learned men, to stand as Watchmen and Sentinels against the Enemies of the Church and State, it would be more easie, by concurrence of their Authority, and by their vigilancy over their Flocks, to preserve the people from danger of seducement. Neither was it a new design. For *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy* had long before desired it, as a thing very needful; because in his time all the Seventeen Provinces (except onely the Dioces of *Arras* were under such Bishops, as were strangers to the Country, and Subjects of Forreign Princes; which could not be convenient for the State. And what good their Erection hath wrought, experience daily sheweth, in those places where they

they ſtill continue. For now every Dioceſs is carefully viſited by a Biſhop of the ſame Country and Language; who as he hath more natural compaſſion, ſo hath he alſo more knowledge and care to inſtruct his Countrymen in the way that is right, and to weed out diſorders. And therefore was the Erection allowed, and ratified by *Bull* of *Pius Quartus* in the year 1559. Concerning the third, *viz.* the Cardinal of *Arras*, Although his wiſdom and experience in affairs of government, as well Eccleſiaſtical as Civil, was ſufficiently known to the King, yet becauſe the Prince of *Orange* with the Counts *Egmond* and *Horn*, did joyntly write to the King againſt him, His Majeſtie, though to his great diſſervice, was content to remove him, for their ſatisfaction. But when this was done, neither was the Country any whit the quieter, for his calling away; nor did they themſelves ceaſe from further practiſing. As for their liber-

ties

ties and franchises, had not the King confirm'd them all at the joyful entry? When did he violat them afterward? was it for preferring *Spaniards*? There were very few of them left in the Country, and of these fewer *cum imperio*. Was it for the Offices of State? See how the governments were distributed among themselves. Count *Egmond* was Governor of *Flaunders* and *Artois*; The Prince of *Orange*, Governor of *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Utrecht* and *Burgundy*; Count *Aremberge* was Governor of *West-Frezeland*, and *Over-Issel*; Count *Barlamont* of *Namur*, Count *Mansfeld* of *Luxemberge* and *Clinay*; The Marquis of *Bergben* of *Lisle* and *Doway*: So as 'tis not easie to see, how the Nobility could complain justly they were neglected, or not honorably imployed. And yet for addition, and their further assurance of the Kings good affection to them and the Provinces, he left his Sister the Dutchess of *Parma* Governor General with them, a Woman of a very

very peaceable and mild Spirit, and one that was like to hold the bridle of Government with a Gentle hand, and to be adviſed by their Counſels.

In this maner were all things wiſely and moderately conſtituted by the King, and might have ſo continued, had the Nobles complied with their duty, and not favored ſo much thoſe ſpirits of Innovation and Tumult, which lurked up and down the Country, and had infected no ſmall part of the Common people. Howbeit all things remained outwardly quiet for a long while; The fire that was, lay covered in Aſhes: The firſt breaking out was not, til Baron *Brederode* and his Aſſociates preſented their Petition to the Dutcheſs; which containing many things neither fit for them to aske, nor ſafe for her to grant, was, not without reaſon, look't upon as a Prologue to ſome future Troubles. Henceforward the Heads of the Faction plot the advancing of their

party, and begin to ſtrengthen themſelves both at home and abroad. Theſe were, the Earl of *Culembergh*, who had lately married a *Germane* Lady of the *Lutheran* way: *Horn*, who was matched with the Siſter of Count *Harman*: The Prince of *Orange* was already by his Mother allied to the Count of *Solms*, and his Wife was Siſter to *Maurice* Duke of *Saxony*: And *Grave Scheremberg* had married his Siſter. There was alſo Count *Lodowick*, the Princes Brother, a Soldier, and a man of great Spirit, *Lutheran* all over, and as fit an inſtrument, as could be deſired, both to make a party, and to back it. Beſides theſe *Flacius Illiricus*, a moſt turbulent Preacher of new Doctrines, had been ſent for privately out of *Germany*, with ſome other Miniſters, and were diſperſed in all corners of the Country, incenſing and corrupting the people with as much induſtry as was poſſible. Theſe were *Lutherans*, and did miſchief enough; But when

Calvins

Calvins Quickſilver came to be caſt in among them, the fire then could be kept in no longer, but the flames break out in all places. The people in ſpight of Laws mutiny every where; down go the Kings Arms, down go Images, and all the Ornaments in the Churches; The Churches themſelves, as if they had been the Caſtles and Forts of ſome Enemy, are Sackd and Pillaged, Monaſteries rifled, Religious houſes robd, puld down, and ſpoiled, the Religious expeld and driven out by force of Arms, and all Magiſtrates whatſoever, that endeavored either to pacifie or oppoſe them, are contemn'd, abuſed, *reſiſted*: yea their fury and violence was ſuch, as they forced the Governeſs her ſelf to conſult of retiring out of *Bruſſels*; which ſhe had done, if the Counſel of ſome of the Nobles had not prevailed with her to the contrary. Yet did not the cauſes of her diſlike and diſtruſt ceaſe, but rather grow and encreaſe daily, *viz.* the private Conventicles, *Strad. de bell Belgic.*

preachings, and insolency of the people, openly now *Lutheranizing*, and even in the Face of the Court: yea the frequent and private meetings of many of the Nobility were matter of much jealousie to her, whereof she often complained in Counsel, but without redress. She knew very well, the people could work no great effects without a head, and that the Nobles wanted power to execute any of their designs without the people; but that both of them conspiring to countenance and assist each other, much mischief might follow. *Orange*, who was the chief Captain and contriver of all, yet playd least in sight, and would very seldom seem outwardly to favor any change of Religion, all that he did, was, as he pretended, for the interest of the Common-wealth and for the publick good. He was assisted chiefly by the Marquis of *Bergben Montigny*, and *Florence Montmorency, alias* Count *Horn*, who by this time was grown a perfect

Male-

Malecontent; yet not for Religion, but upon ſome private reſpects, *viz.* of his own debt, and for being denied the government of *Zutphen*, but eſpecially for the execution of his Brother *Montigny* in *Spain*. The meetings, in which they agitated Counſels, and brought their deſigns onward to perfection, were firſt at *Breda*, whither the Count *Egmond* was alſo invited, as a man of the greateſt Military power and intereſt in that Country: and preſently after, as an effect or reſolution taken at that aſſembly, *Brederode* and his complices delivered their Petition to the Governeſs, as hath been ſaid, *for Liberty* of Religion. They had meetings alſo at *Hoochſtrat*, *Oſterweal*, and Saint *Trudon*, at which that Noble Count *Egmond* was undone; For at his Arraignment it was one of the principal things chargd againſt him, that he had been privie to the Confederations and agreements made at thoſe Aſſemblies. Secondly, that upon the ſame day the Petition was de-

livered by *Brederode*, he came with the Prince of *Orange* and Count *Horn* to the great Banquet at the Earl of *Culemberghs* house, where there were no less then Three hundred Confederates, and dined with them; at which time the name of *Geuses* was publikely assumed by the Confederates. Thirdly, that afterward he sent his Secretary, *Backerseal*, to the Crew, offering them his aid. And lastly, which himself acknowledged at the Bar, That he had offered his assistance to hinder the Duke *D' Alvas* coming into the Low-Countries, and that he had neither disliked, nor disswaded the proceedings of the Confederates; *Horn* was endicted upon the same Articles, with this further charge against him, That he threatned to levy Fifty thousand men to rescue his Brother, and bring him home upon force out of *Spain*. Upon proof of which accusations, they were, both of them, condemned and lost their heads; as it semed,

not

not onely just for matter of Law, but also necessary for reason of State, for the example of others, for the Regents safety, and for vindication of the Kings honor and authority; which partly by their practises, and partly by their connivances contrary to duty, had been insufferably vilified and abused by the rude multitude. Yet is it commonly thought, that Count *Egmond* was rather drawn in by the Craft and Policy of *Orange*, then that he engaged much of himself; being otherwise a person of a plain, yet Noble and Magnanimous disposition, and therefore generally lamented. Sir *Roger Williams* History.

5. For what Prince is there in the World, that having endured so many indignities, and of such fowl nature, as those we lately mentioned, would not seek to vindicate his honor upon the offenders and to prevent the like for the future? Was it not time for the King to Arm, when the people were in Arms, and had, beside their con-

tempt of Religion, committed so many great and scandalous disorders? the Nobility, whose office and duty it was by their places to have suppressed and punished them, conniving at their proceedings? When the Cities were all in uproars, and the whole frame of the Common-wealth seeming to be shaken? Had not the King all the reason in the World to send *D' Alva* and forces of his own, when the Provincial Governors would not be commanded to apply theirs effectually to the business? It was certainly high time to do that which he did, not onely to repress and keep in order those rebellious Spirits, which were dispersed and acting in all parts of the Country; but also to encounter and oppose *Orange*, who by this time, what by his open backwardness and oppositions to such Counsels as tended to a speedy redress of those evils, and what by his secret practises and abetting of the Delinquent party, had no less undermined the government

ment it self, then he had discoura-ged and wearied the Governess. And for the Companies, which *D' Alva* brought out of *Spain*, at which the people were taught so much to murmur, could it be law-ful for the Prince of *Orange* to bring in the *Reisters* out of *Germany*, and for his Brother the Count *Lodo-wick*, with an Army of *French* to invade *Henault*, and was it not lawful for the King to send in for-ces to maintain his own? Was it lawful for them to surprize *Montz*, and was it not more lawful for the King to expel them? Let no man dream, that if the Dukes forces had not come, the Country would have been quiet: for that was in-credible to any body, that knew the State of affairs. The fire was not quenched, but covered, and would have broken out again in a greater flame. The Confederating of so many and great Persons, countenanced by the chief Gover-nors themselves, did Prognosticate a storm to be yet coming; and all

men of understanding saw, they were not likely to be governed long by the Bridle in a Womans hand. Therefore was the King forced upon the matter to send D' *Alva*. And the rather, because he could not but know, that Monsieur *Chastillon*, the Admiral of *France*, had sent to Baron *Brederode*, both to incense him further against the King, and to perswade him not to agree with the Dutchess of *Parma*; for, saith he, *that would but deceive him:* and offering moreover in case of necessity, to assist him with Four thousand Gentlemen. That Count *Ludowick*, after his defeat at *Montz*, did lie at *Rochel* among the *Calvinists*; and that the Prince himself was gone into *France* on purpose to prepare for a future invasion. He knew, that the same Admiral afterwards did sollicit *Charls* the Ninth, King of *France*, to turn all his Wars upon *Flanders*, and to take upon him the protection of the Low-Countries; That *Aldegund*, a great Incendiary, was in

Jean Petit. l' Histor.

in *Germany* ſolliciting a party there with like eagerneſs. So that they laboring on all ſides to offend the King, ſhall it not be lawful for his Majeſtie to provide for his own neceſſarie defence, but he muſt be taxed with Tyranny? Certainly it is a moſt unequal cenſure, and argueth much more partiality then reaſon. *D' Alva* could be no cauſe of thoſe diſorders, which made his coming neceſſary; for they all preceded his coming. The Regent, notwithſtanding all her mildeneſs, yet was at laſt forced to deal with them by Arms; and having by that means once reduced them, yet they are inſolent and factious ſtill, and to bring their evil purpoſes to effect, they ſeek to Forreign Princes for aid. Who can wonder then, if the Duke, finding their diſtempers ſuch, as that gentle proceedings did rather aggravate, then allay the malady, did make his War with ſome rigor? It was no more then neceſſity, and the general malice, with which they had poſſeſſed

poſſeſſed the people againſt him, compelled him to do for his own ſafety. In the Paſſion week, preſently after his coming, there was a Conſpiracy to kill him, whiles he was at his Devotions, at the Monaſtery of the Green Vally in the Foreſt of *Sauve* not far from *Bruſels*. Monſieur *Riſot*, *Carli*, *Villars* with Seven hundred Horſe and Five hundred Foote were deſigned to do it, when the Duke, the Nobles, and all his followers ſhould be at Maſs; and with fire and inſtruments deviſed for the purpoſe, to burn both men, and Monaſtery, and Church, good and bad, friends and enemies all together: as the two *Guidons* confeſſed. Such another buſineſs was intended alſo at *Bruſſels* againſt the *Spaniards*, as both *Petit*, *Mendoza*, and others teſtifie. Neither did their malice much ceaſe, when he was recalled. For as that Noble Lord the Duke of *Areſchot* diſcovered, and adviſed *Don John*, there was a Plot to have ſurprized his perſon, of which the

Mich. ab. Iſſelt. de bell. Belg.

Prince

Prince of *Orange* was reported to be the chief manager; and another to kill him at *Namur* by *Radcliff* and *Grey*, two Englishmen. I enquire not who set them on work; *Latet anguis in herbâ*, its a business not to be look't into too far. And did not those *Calvinists* at *Antwerp* as finely contrive, to have blown up that famous Duke of *Parma*, as he should be going along the High Street, with all the chief State of the Country attending on him? So that 'tis cleer, how strange soever they make of it, Protestants may be charged with Assassinats and Treasons, as well as others.

Thus were the occasions and first beginnings of the Nether-Landish tumults. To discourse a little of the chief Author, Actor, and upholder of them, we are to know, The Prince of *Orange* (who signally deserves that Character,) was a very popular, and no less politick man, and beside a great House-keeper, which qualities, especially the last, very acceptable 6.

to

to that sort of people, stood him in no smal stead in order to his designs. The house of *Nassau* in *Germany* was Ancient and Honorable, but advanced in this Country chiefly by marriages. This *William* (his Father falling to *Lutheranism*) *Charls* the Fifth, Emperor, out of a Princely affection to him, took from his Father, and commended him to the care and Education of *Mary*, Queen of *Hungary*, his Sister. Afterwards he admitted him to be of his Bedchamber; Then made him General of his Horse, and after that raised him to be Leivetenant General of the Army. And yet further to endear his obligation to him, when he was to send the Imperial Crown to his Brother *Ferdinand*, he made choise of him, as a man of most Trust, and commended him likewise very much to his Son, King *Philip*; notwithstanding diverse often warned him to take heed, that he nursed not a Snake in his Bosom; to these favors we may adde how much the Emperor

peror favored his match with the Count of *Burens* Daughter and Heir, who was his first Wife, and by whom he was highly advanced; and that he procured *Rhenatus* of *Challon*, Prince of *Orange*, to make this *William* his Heire, when the President *Schorus* was wholly against him. These things considered, and also the many favors, and great trust, which King *Philip* also shewed to have in him, committing so many and so great Governments to his charge and fidelity, *viz.* *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Utrecht*, and *Burgundy*, as hath been said, it might seem impossible almost, that any thing should corrupt his Loyalty. The first visible disgust he took, was upon the Kings going into *Spain*. The Prince being then a Widower, aspired to marry with the Princess *Christerna*, Dutchess of *Lorrain*, Cousin Germane to the King, and labored also, that she might be made Governess of the Provinces in the Kings absence; to the intent, that by such Alliance

he

he might in effect sway the whole Government of the Provinces himself: a thing indeed for which he had gaped a long time, and stood competitor with Count *Egmond*. But the King preferring the Dutchess of *Parma*, he lost both his hopes and his Wife. Upon this grew his first hatred against D' *Alva* and the Cardinal *Granvellan*, by whose Counsels, he supposed, the Dutchess of *Parma* was preferred. So as Ambition and Pride being indeed the true internal motives of his discontent, Religion, and the Common-wealths interest, must be made the Mantle to hide it. Hereupon he marrieth into the house of *Saxony*, which was already *Lutheranized*, and sets *Brederode* and his fellows to work, as we have seen already. Then labors to make a difference between *Granvellan* and *Egmond* (although the former had been his good friend in many matters of importance:) practiseth what he can to hinder the coming in of D' *Alva*; nor did he ever, after that

that repulse concerning the Dutchess of *Lorrain*, shew himself wel affected to the Kings affairs, nor content with any favors. But after all this that hath been already recited, he invades *Frizeland*, directs *Lumay* to possess himself of *Brill*, and what else he could in *Holland*; gives order to his Brother *Scheremberg* to make himself master of *Zutphen*, and himself maketh *Saras* Governor of *Flushing*. Wherein (to note it by the way,) the World took notice of a great oversight in the Duke *d' Alva*, to neglect a place of so great importance so long, and to suffer it to be invested by the Enemy. In a word I may wel conclude, he was the great Wheel, whereupon the whole State of the Confederates affairs turned. It is true, he did once seek to be reconciled to the King, by intercession of the Emperor, and Duke of *Bavier*, but not being able to procure it *modo & formâ* as he desired, he grew desperate in his resolutions, though he met with

ill

ill ſucceſs in all things for a long time, and could finde no harbor but *Holland*. That Country indeed being now become, through his means, a receptacle for all Religions, afforded him a place of retreat, not onely to preſerve what remained, but alſo to repair and make up his decayed Eſtate. There factions were ripened to their full Maturity; and the place ſo fortified both by nature and art, that, till he ſhould be able to appear in Action to the World and fight, he might lie ſecure and write Apologies; encourage ſeditious people abroad, and ſettle his new Religion at home; which, although at firſt, and from his Father, it was *Lutheran*, yet after he had been in *France*, he Profeſſed rather to favor *Calviniſm*, providently and wiſely foreſeing, as he was a man that wanted no inſight into Worldly affaires of this nature, that they, *viz*, the *Calviniſts*, were to be his neereſt and ſureſt Neighbors.

All

All which practiſes and courſes of his notwithſtanding, with the injuſtice of them, being well diſcerned at laſt by the States of *Artois* and *Henault*, when they were, in the year 1579. reconciled to the King, with the aſſent of the moſt Honorable Duke of *Areſchot*, they binde themſelves in the Fifth Article of Agreement, to proſecute the War againſt the Prince of *Orange*, as the Enemy general of the peace of thoſe Countries, and to finde at their own charge Eighteen thouſand men for that purpoſe: which certainly being Perſons of ſuch Religions and right Noble quality, as 'tis known they were, and of ſo great experience in all the paſſages and pretences of *Orange*, they would never have done, if they had not known both him and his practiſes to be very bad. I confeſs, that the *Hollanders* are a people very induſtrious, and skilful to make uſe of their labor, but yet of ſuch a temper, that as a Learned Cenſor ſaith of them, 7.

Nec

Thuan. *Nec totam libertatem, Nec totam servitutem patiuntur*, They endure not well, *either absolute Liberty*, (which makes them insolent;) *nor absolute Servitude*, (which makes them mad.) Friends they are somewhat too much to change, and not always content with the present State: which would appear more then it doth, but that their mindes are now wholly set upon their Trade and profit, wherein finding much sweet, by their successes at home and abroad, they are extreamly jealous of any thing, that sounds but to the least obstruction of either of them. The Prince of *Orange* therefore understanding their natures very well, and to feed this jealous humor of theirs with fit matter, discovers a certain secret Counsel to them, which he pretended, *Henry* the Second, King of *France*, had taken with the Duke *d' Alva*, to suppress the Protestants by force of Arms, and to erect the Seventeen Provinces into one Kingdom; and this the *French* King himself

ſelf ſhould tell him at his being in *France*. But firſt was it ſo likely, the Duke would diſcover ſuch a ſecret of his Maſter to an Enemy newly, or ſcarce reconciled? Beſide, King *Henry* dying ſuddenly, as he did by miſchance, there was now no body living to diſavow the impoſture, but *D' Alva* onely; and him, he was ſure the people would not be over haſty to beleeve. He was the firſt alſo that gave out, that factious and ſtale Calumny againſt the Emperor and King of *Spain*, That they ſhould affect a Monarchy Univerſal over all *Europe*: which forgeries, how palpable ſoever, yet they ſerved his turn thus far, *viz.* to terrifie the *Hollanders*, to make them rely ſtill upon him, and to procure ſome diſtruſt and hatred in Forreign Nations againſt the *Spaniards* and houſe of *Auſtria*.

This upon the matter is the whole charge, and all that can be objected againſt the King, from the very beginning, as I have related 8.

lated it; and these the Actors which prosecuted the business: against whom what exceptions may be taken for their Estimation, Integrity, Testimony, especially in their own cause, every man may see. It remains, that we enquire a little, whether the King stood guilty of those Crimes, which they charged upon him, Injustice and Tyranny. For if he be innocent, these men were grand usurpers: if guilty, another question will arise, whether his error in Government will give them title, and his offence free them from Subjection. It is manifest to all the world, that the King ever desired peace, and with great care, so far as in him lay, labored to prevent the desolation of his people and Countries; as the course that was taken by that excellent and most loyal Prince the Duke of *Arschot*, and by the States General at *Gaunt* in the year 1574. do testifie. When they found it requisite to decree, and did decree a general *Amnestia* or Oblivion of

all

all things paſt on both ſides; and took order for the diſmiſſion of the *Spaniards*, Notwithſtanding that in this pacification all things were, in a maner, referred *to the States*, and the King ſcarcely ſo much as mentioned: yet *Don John* did ratifie it, and procured the Kings conſent for the confirmation of all, as appears by the *perpetual Edict*. This agreement was made by the States General of the Provinces, and for the general good and quiet of them; yet would not the Prince of *Orange*, *Holland*, nor *Zealand* accept of it. They perſwaded the States General not to receive *Don John* for Governor, till the *Spaniards* were gone; although themſelves refuſed at that very time, to diſmiſs thoſe Forreign forces, which they had in *Holland*: that is to ſay, They would binde the Governor to perform promiſe, but they themſelves muſt be at liberty to break. Was it for Religion they did diſſent? that can hardly be ſaid. For in the Articles of Agree-

greement there was proviſion made for their ſecurity in that point by this Article, *Ut ſola Romana religio in iis exerceatur, exceptâ Hollandiâ, & Zelandiâ.* Roman Religion was to be exerciſed onely in the other Provinces, but *Holland and Zealand were excepted.* And for the Prince himſelf in the general *Amneſtia*, he had as abſolute indempnity offered and aſſured him, as could be imagined; if that had been all he had ſought: And the States had prevailed more in his behalf, then the Emperor could. But Malice and Ambition tranſported him ſtill, and the more His Majeſtie gave aſſurance of his deſires of Peace; the more he prepared and was inclined to War: wherein yet the World did never count him a *Hannibal.* This appeared yet more plainly in the colloquy at *Breda* in the year 1575. where the King offered reaſonable conditions, and the Emperor had ſent the Count *Swartzembergh* to perſwade them to concord; yet the

the Prince would listen to nothing, the Treaty was fruitless, and at the same time the *Hollanders* were Treating by their Agents, *Aldegund* and *Douza*, to submit themselves to the Queen of *England*. Yet notwithstanding all this, which the King knew well enough, such was his patience and royal goodness, and so far was he from the baseness of Tyranny towards him or any other, that he proclaimed not *Orange Traytor* till the year 1580, that is, till his malice appeared to be irreconcileable, and his courses desperate; and that the Trayterous *Union* of *Utrecht* was framed and published, which is about Fifteen years after the beginning of the troubles. *Jean Petit.*

9. Adde hereunto, that when the Emperor procured the Treaty at *Colen* in the yeer 1579, and made choise of most Honorable and eminent persons for that purpose, *viz.* Two of the Princes *Electors*, the Bishop of *Wurtzburgh*, the Count *Wartzemburgh*, and Doctor *Lawen-*

men, the King of *Spain* was as forward, and sent thither the Duke *de Terra Nova*; And the Duke *Aresschot* with some others, were Commissioners from the States with Commission Signed by the Arch-Duke *Matthias*. The States had by their Letter to the Emperor bearing date *June* the Eighth 1578. promised, that they were, and so would continue, constantly resolved, *Ut in Belgio colatur religio Catholica, & sua Regi constet Authoritas*, that both Catholike Religion and the Kings Authority should be maintained in the Netherlands. Before this at *Worms* in the year 1577. the Agents of the States submitted and referred themselves to the Emperor; as likewise the King of *Spain* did: Therefore both parties being so inclinable, and consenting *in Eodem Tertio* in the same Umpire, who could expect, but that a general peace should follow? But *Davus perturbat omnia*. When the Emperors Commissioners were come to *Colen* at the time appointed, viz. by the beginning

beginning of *April*, the States Commissioners appeared not till the Fourth of *May*, and then with a Commission insufficient, and their Treating restrained to a Term of Six weeks and no longer; when as themselves had been twice the time in but framing their instructions, which the Commissioners of the Emperor took for a great error, as justly they might do. All which delays had been craftily procured by the Prince of *Orange* and his party, on purpose to obstruct the peace. And in the Articles themselves the States Commissioners propounded many things contrary to promise. In the Articles proposed by the Duke *de Terrâ Novâ* in the behalf of his Master, All kinde of severity relating to Religion was mitigated, as the Emperors Commissioners had assured them, to the intent, *ut nemo justè queri possit*, &c. that no man might complain of the King, as if he desired, either *to Tyrannize over their bodies, or to Saize their Estates, or to Oppress*

their Consciences for matter of Religion. But nothing could prevail: so the Imperial Commissioners finding such dallying and delays in the States, That in Sixteen weeks they could get no answer, and that in their Letters they did onely renew old grievances and quarrels, they broke up the Treaty and departed. Nevertheless *Bolduc* and *Valenciennes* received the Articles: So did *Over-Issle* and *Tournay*, *Artois* and *Henault* guided by the *Bonus Genius* of the Country; and *Em. Lalain* that valiant and religious Marquis of *Renty*, together with Monsieurs *de Capre*, *Heze*, *Barze*, and the rest contemned the course of *Orange*, offered their obedience to the King, and made peace with the Duke of *Parma*. But as for the *Hollanders* they were now further off then ever; they publish discourses against the Treaty, and labor by all means possible, how to make good their usurpation, and perfect their Union, which they were all this time a framing: not

for

forgetting to ſcatter ſeeds of diſſention and further diſcord among the Provinces; in which buſineſs their Miniſters helped them not a little. And laſtly at this time alſo, by the adviſe of *Orange* and *England* they admitted Monſieur, the Duke of *Alenſon* in the year 1578. to a kinde of Protectorſhip of the Provinces, creating him Duke of *Brabant* and abſolute Prince of the *Netherlands*: And all to ſhew, how irreconcileable they were to their natural Sovereign.

Thus much hath been ſaid to ſhew the Kings good inclination to Peace. Now for his Tyranny and Exaction which they pretended, and objected in the ſecond place, as the cauſe of making that Union; and alſo his breaking of their Priviledges, and the too ſevere Government of his Miniſters, contrary, as they ſay, to his Oath at Coronation: ſurely ſo long after D' *Alva*'s times, and under the moderate Government of the Duke of *Parma*, and after ſo 10.

many significations of the Kings gracious disposition and offers to ease their burthens, if they would themselves, this may rather be judged a Cavil to shift Peace, then any desire to be rid of War. But as for the business of the *Tenth Penny*, an exaction which they so much complain of; we must draw the Curtain a little, and tell you, it was *necessity*, and not his *own will*, which forced him to require that; and that otherwise, neither would he have done it, nor the King have suffered it. But, as it happened, being driven to an extremity for the satisfying of the Soldiers, (who always grow wilde, if they want Pay,) he was constrained to incur an inconvenience, that he might avoid a mischief. *England* and *Orange* were the cause of it. For about this time some of the Counsel here, by the instigation of the Prince, had made stop of no less sum then Six hundred thousand Duckets, which were sent out of *Spain*, to the Army, but driven by hard weather

and

and ill fortune upon the coast of *Hampshire*; notwithstanding as some say, the Queen had given a safe Conduct for the passage thereof. But the Polititians of those times, and Enemies of *Spain*, knew well, into what Streights the want of this money would drive *D' Alva*; and that of necessity he must commit some error or other, which would encrease the hatred of his Government, and perhaps arm the peoples fury once more to sedition. Besides this the King had sent another sum of Two hundred thousand Duckets by the Duke *de Medina*, but that also was intercepted at Sea by the *Zealanders*, and converted to other uses. This man was of a milder nature, and sent on purpose to qualifie the severity of *D' Alva*, who by his natural Sternerness and some errors in Government, (which the general malice of the people, and disfavor of some Forreign Princes did much aggravate,) had made himself, it must be confessed, not a little odious: but having, as

was ſaid, loſt his money and Ships, he had ſmall heart to ſtay among them; ſo he quickly returned home again, and with a reſolution, it ſeemed, never to have further dealing with ſuch ſhirking Cormorants, and left *D' Alva* in a Labyrinth of difficulties, how to get money and govern his Soldiers. But however, it appears by this, that it was never *the Kings pleaſure nor purpoſe*, but meerly the neceſſity of his preſent wants, which compelled the Duke to demand that Tribute; and that the quarrel upon it was rather made and contrived by themſelves, then given. And theſe great pretenders for the Commons, that ſeemed then ſo extreamly careful of the peoples eaſe, and ſollicitous to keep them free from Taxes, Impoſitions, &c. Let me ask them one queſtion, *Why do they now Tax them ſo much?* Why do they lay ſuch heavy burthens upon them, they themſelves now they have them in their power? Exciſes? Subſidies? Taxes of all ſorts? which

they

they have augmented, and do daily augment and raise in such sort, that never any Common-wealth in Christendome groaned under the like burthens. Tis certain, *The Gentle Father of the people* (as they once called that Fox the Prince of *Orange*) did propound and endeavor to wrest from them, not the *Tenth* but *the Sixth Penny* towards his charge and maintenance in the year 1584, after he had made them *a Free State*. This you will say, was a Note above *Ela*. And though the people denied it and murmured grievously at the motion, yet is he still in *Holland Pater Patriæ*; so well and cunningly doth he both shuffle his Cards and play his Game. *Barnevelt* in his Apologie confesseth, that in the year 1586. he found the order of Government out of all good frame; many Protestant Preachers would not acknowledge the States, because they had not that command and discipline after the *French* fashion, which they desired; The Common

Mich. ab Isselt de bell. Belgic.

people all contrary-minded one to another, and the Towns wiſhing for Peace; The Expences of the State exceeded all incomes by Twenty ſix Millions, and that (which I cannot but with the Reader to obſerve,) *Weſt-Frizeland*, which in the beginning of the troubles did contribute onely Eighteen hundred thouſand Florens, was now charged to pay *Quadragies centena millia librarum & duos Milliones.* I have put it down in the Authors own words, becauſe I would not have the Reader poſſibly miſtaken. Who is now the Tyrant and Exactor? It ſeems though the people have changed their Lord, they have not laid down their burthen. *D' Alva* may be ſaid to have beat them with Whips, but the States with Scorpions. Do but conſider their Exciſes and Impoſitions upon all ſorts of Commodities, even the moſt neceſſary for humane life and ſubſiſtance, *viz.* Meat, Drink, Fewel, yea menſervants Wages, and what not?

Beſides

Beſides Loans and Benevolences, which are both commonly required, and heavy. *Cnickius* directly chargeth them, that they exact one way or other the Fourth part of the peoples Revenues, that are *Hollanders* and live out of the Country: But, ſaith he, *Si in Provinciis noſtris, &c.* if they live in any of our Provinces by leave, *Semiſſem jubent ſolvere, &c.* they require them to pay *the one half*; and in caſe they refuſe or neglect, *They take all.*

As for the cruelty of *D' Alva*, (which was objected ſo much to little purpoſe in the Treaty at *Colen*, and hath been ſince Rhetorically aggravated by their Doctor *Baudius*) let us call to minde, what provocations were at firſt given him, by the oppoſitions and malice of the *Naſſovians*, by the War at *Montz*, by the practiſes uſed to impead his entrance into *Brabant* and by ſo often contriving his death: yet were theſe venial ſins. But when he found the Nobility 11. See *Baudii orat.*

ſo

ſo far engaged with the *Geuſes*, as they were, that the Kings Authority was ſlighted, Catholike Religion generally deſerted and profaned, the chief ſolemnities thereof in ſome places moſt impiouſly and contumelioufly abuſed in the face of Heaven and of the Catholike Army; when he ſaw the Towns in *Holland* and *Zealand* revolt, *Harlem*, *Alcmar* and others refuſing the Kings Authority, what indifferent man can wonder, if ſeverity were uſed at firſt, to ſuch of them as fell under his power? Who would not think that Cauterizing was neceſſary, when there appeared ſo much *proud fleſh* in the wound; and that purgations muſt be ſomewhat violent, when the body is ſo much and ſo generally diſtempered? Nor could the peaceable nature of the Commendador *Ludovicus Requeſens*, who ſucceeded *D' Alva*, do any good upon ſuch rough and irreconcileable ſpirits. How often was he heard to cry out, *Dios nos libera de eſtos eſtados*, God deliver me

me from these States once. Insomuch that Sir *Roger Williams*, a Gentleman of our own Country and Soldier of good note, who had served on both sides, and knew the nature of the people very well, condemns the revocation of *D' Alva* as an error of State; *Because*, saith he, *nothing but rigor could reduce such violent Spirits unto order, and nothing but a Sword in hand keep them in obedience.* As for the Kings Oath which they say, he hath broken in the matter of priviledges, if they would decide the matter by justice, they must make it plain and evident, by what Fact, in what case, instance, example he hath broke it; and ought not to presume so much as they do, *viz.* to be (Themselves) both Plaintiffs, Accusers and Judges. Again supposing that the King had broken his Oath, may not many things happen after his Oath-taking to excuse him from perjury? By Law every Oath or promise, how absolute soever, yet hath always this necessary condition tacitly

See his History.

ly implyed in it, *viz. rebus sic stantibus*, that things remain so as they were, when the Oath was taken. But if such difficulties or alterations happen, as render the promise either impossible or unlawful to be performed, a man doth not then commit perjury, nor any other kinde of injustice, by not performing his promise. What if that which the King at his Inauguration promised for the good of the Province, cannot be observed now, but with the great dammage of the Province, and of all *Europe*? and this occasioned by the distemper and change of the people themselves of the Province? of necessity, if the *case*, that is to say, the condition and state of affairs be so far changed, resolutions and proceedings upon them must also change. Again, supposing he had broken his Oath, *suâ culpâ* and blameably, yet were not the States thereby inabled or authorized to depose him, and chuse a new Prince. For in the Articles of the *Joyful Entry* this

is

is a Clauſe. *Ut ſi in omnibus, aut in vno quopiam Articulo pacta iſta Dux Brabantiæ violaſſet, &c. That if it ſhall happen that the ſaid Duke of* Brabant *doth violate* or break *either all or any one of theſe Articles, it ſhall be lawful for his Subjects to deny him the accuſtomed ſervices, until the thing in Controverſie be either revoked or amended.* So long they might, but after the grievances complained of ſhould be redreſſed, they were to return again to their duty, and to reſt *in ſtatu quo prius* of obedient Subjects. And the world knows, how oft the King offered unto the Emperor, to other Forreign Princes, and to the States themſelves to revoke and amend, whatſoever could be proved amiſs. Beſide, the States and Courts of *Brabant* are more proper to decide this queſtion, then the States of *Holland*; who have no ſuch priviledges *Originally*, but onely by *Participation and Union*: And they, that is, *Brabant*, *Flanders*, *Artois*, *Henault* and the reſt have conformed themſelves, and

and are returned to their due Allegiance, being obedient to the King, his Laws and Government. And if *Holland* would but follow their example, the buſineſs were at an end.

12. To draw therefore to ſome concluſion in this matter of Priviledges and of the Kings Oath, it would be demanded, who granted theſe Priviledges at firſt? was it not the Prince *ex mero motu & gratiâ ſpeciali*, out of his meer grace and favor, and to gratifie, and endear the affections of good Subjects to him? Do not all their Charters run in this ſtill? Speak they not all this language? What ungrateful preſumption is it then for people to be ſo ready and induſtrious to moleſt their Sovereign Princes upon the advantage of their own favors? What if they be forced to break an Article, or ſome clauſe of an Article upon urgent cauſe? muſt it be judged a crime unpardonable? what would they have ſaid to *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, and of the

the *Netherlands*, who upon occasion resumed into his own hand, and by his own Authority, all the Priviledges and Immunities of *Gaunt?* yea detained them all his life-time; teaching them thereby to acknowledge from whose grace they held them? And though the people compelled his Son *Charls* to restore them, upon his coming to *Gaunt*, yet it proved to their cost: for they were forced to seek pardon, and to cast themselves and their Charters once again at his feet, and to stand to mercy. The like he did at *Machlin*, but not without great suit made to him, and upon such conditions, as himself thought good. And it is not a little strange to be considered, why this Prince of *Orange*, who urgeth so much the Kings Oath, and that it ought to be kept, yet makes so little conscience to perform his own. For he may remember, when he was made Governor of *Brabant*, he took his Oath to maintain Catholike Religion in that Province. Hath he performed

Henric. Berland. Histor.

Mich. Baius. de Union. Stat.

formed it? When he retired into *Holland*, he professed and protested publikely, he would alter nothing, nor dispossess the Catholike Clergie of their livings: The like he did at *Amsterdam*, and further bound himself there with a Solemn Oath; yet he performed none of these, but the clean contrary most perfidiously and wickedly, as soon as ever he had power in his hands, and could attend to do it, so that to serve his own turn, and for his treacherous end, we see how much he could urge another man, though his own sovereign, to his duty: but for his own, *Religion and bonum publicum* gives him a dispensation. And it is just according to *Calvins* Institutions. A man, saith he, once perfectly illuminated by the light of the Gospel *simul omnibus vinculis obediendi legibus & Ecclesiæ solutus est*, is *ipso facto and at an instant discharged from all bands of obedience either to the Church or the State.* A blessed Lesson doubtless, and wherein he could not but have many Scholars.

Lib. 4. *c.* 13. *Sect.* 21.

Scholars. But all this while no particular charge comes in againſt the King, no inſtance, no example is given, wherein he did break his Oath, when it was poſſible for him to keep it; which through their diſtempers and undutifulneſs, was become not a little difficult. Was it in his exactions? that is anſwered already. Was it for bringing in *Spaniards* upon them? Time and neceſſity forced him to be at that great charge and trouble much againſt his will, to defend the Church, to defend the Religion of his Anceſtors and of the Country, againſt the inſolencies of rude, ignorant, impious people, connived at, and countenanced by them; laſtly to defend the Laws and laudable Cuſtoms of the Country, and to make them know he was their Prince. Was it in the matter of Religion? Indeed it is true, there is a clauſe in the *Union*, *contra omnem vim*, &c. *That it ſhould be againſt all violence whatſoever, that ſhould be offered them under pretence of the*

Kings

Kings Authority for matter of Religion. It is to be obſerved, at the beginning *Orange*, *Horn*, and *Montigny* joyned with the people upon pretenſe onely of oppoſing the Inquiſition; upon this ground onely they would ſeem to countenance *Brederode* and his complices, and for this end only they ſeem to urge the *Religions Vried*, yea they publiſh books, and make liberal promiſes to be content, if they may but enjoy their own Religion, and that they will not prejudice or oppoſe the Catholikes: and with ſuch diſſembling as this, they drew a great part even of the Catholikes themſelves to joyn with them, yea Prelates, and perſons no way ſuſpected for the matter of Religion, yet deceived not a little with their pretenſes of liberty and of the publike good: for which reaſon the Arch-Duke *Matthias* was called in, and they engaged to aſſiſt and defend him with their lives and eſtates. Well! the *Religions Vried* was granted, and thereby, as it were,

were, a *Superſedeas* to the Inquiſition; all violence and ſeverity for matter of Religion ceaſed. What could they deſire more? All the Provinces, and *Holland* and *Zealand* among the reſt, enjoyed what they would have, Liberty, Religion, Et *quid non*? But it is an obſervation of infallible verity, Faction and Hereſie are always humble, till they get the Sword in their hands; when they have it, they change their tune; as it manifeſtly appeared by their proceedings. For in a ſhort time they of *Holland* were ſo far from keeping *the Peace of Religion*, which they had promiſed, that they expel the Catholike Clergy out of all places under their power, They ſeize upon their Lands, Sequeſter their Benefices, Impriſon their Perſons, yea moleſt and proſecute all without exception, whoſe conſciences ſuffer them not to conform to their pretended Synods, at *Dort* in the year 1574. at *Middleborough* in the year 1581. yea they drown, and uſe

uſe many other kindes of cruelty towards men meerly for Religion, not enduring ſo much as to heare of Toleration, but onely for their own, and ſome few Anabaptiſts, and Semi-Arrians among them. *The Religions Tried* ſo impetuouſly deſired, or rather demanded, when time was, for themſelves, is now quite forgotten; and Merchants of *Amſterdam*, Brewers of *Delft*, Staplers of *Dort*, Seamen of *Horn*, with ſome few illiterate Miniſters joyned with them do now Direct, Rule, Govern and Judge in all things, *Comme bon leur ſemble* (as it is in one of the Articles touching the *Union*,) *according as to themſelves ſeemeth good*: No man muſt gainſay them. Truly if the King had proceeded thus with them, if he had taken Arms and levyed forces to introduce a new Religion upon them, as they did upon the Country, I ſhould confeſs he had much incroached upon their liberties, had broken his Oath, and incurred their hatred juſtly. The States of *Holland*,

Holland, *Zealand*, &c. have done all this, and much more mischief and injurie to the people of those Provinces, where they command, what therefore do they desire? doth not their own example and practises justifie, beyond all exception, the Kings proceedings? Shall they presume to introduce and set up by force of Arms a Religion, which before themselves no man ever owned? Shall the Consistory at *Geneva* be so precise, as not to permit any kinde of Toleration? Shall the pretended Churches of *France*, and *Bearn* more especially, insult upon, and oppress those poor Catholikes which live under their power? And must the King of *Spain* onely be content to sit still, and let Sectaries play what pranks they please, and commit all outrages in his Dominions, without check or controule? Who can be so absurd, as to judge it a thing reasonable? *Deos peregrinos ne colunto.* It was a Law of *Romulus* against the introducing of new and strange gods. *Numa*

Numa Pompilius, *Socrates*, and all the wise States-men of the world Heathen no less then Christian, have been always careful to provide against Innovation, change and corrupting of Religion. And shall his Catholike Majestie do nothing for the preserving of Religion sound and entire, who, both by his own piety, and the dignity of his Title is obliged to do so much? Shall it be necessary for the peace of their new State to use severity, and shall it not be both necessary and just for the preservation of his, which is so Ancient, so Old? For their conscience sake they will bar out Catholikes. Shall he not for conscience sake take the same course with *Calvinists*? How strangly do their beginnings and proceedings differ? They take up arms against their Sovereign for Liberty of Conscience; and yet by those Arms they forbid Liberty of Conscience to their Sovereign. For as much as they forbid it to his people, their Fellow-subjects, they forbid

forbid it to Him, who pretends to no more in that reſpect, then what every ſubject he hath ought to enjoy: And that his perſon, together with ſome other of his Subjects, is free, is not, becauſe theſe men would not, but becauſe they cannot bring them in Bondage.

13. Theſe States in their Letters to the Emperor 1608. pretend, that the *Spaniards* made uſe of the Treaty at *Colen*, rather to oppreſs the Country of the *Netherlands*, then to eaſe them; and therefore, to avoid utter ruin, *Pleræq; Belgicæ Provinciæ, quæ in Unione perſtiterant, &c. Several of the Provinces*, ſay they, *which ſtood firme to the Union, did at laſt renounce, or abjure the King, and eſtabliſhed unto themſelves a certain form of Government, in the nature of a Free State, and have been ſo acknowledged by other Chriſtian Princes for Thirty years together and more.* The ground of this Plea is Tyranny, exerciſed after the Treaty at *Colen*; but this

Union was made before: how then doth it cohere to justifie their doings? They say also, that the King of *Spain* and Arch Duke acknowledge them as *Free Provinces, in quas ipsi nihil juris pretendunt, upon whom they pretend to have no Title.* This is a new Plea, I confess. But the Reader will observe, as it can onely justifie their possession and title *for the future*; so doth it manifestly suppose, that their actings before that Declaration was made, and by which it was forcibly drawn from their Prince, were Illegal, Disloyal, Rebellious. Which the States may do well to remember, so often as they use that Plea. Nevertheless, because, by an imperfect disquisition of the matter I would not do harm, where I intend onely good, I leave this wholly to the Consideration of the Honorable and Learned Chancellor *Peckius*, who can best, in a convenient time, satisfie the world, that this is but a Scar-Crow, a Fig-leaf-pretence, and a Thunder without

a Bolt. So that their whole Plea, at leſt for their paſt actions, reſting only upon the ſtilts of pretended Tyranny, Exaction, and abrogation of priviledges, which have been ſo often and ſo manifeſtly diſproved, what remains but their condemnation? And that we abhor the principles, which have lead them into this predicament of diſloyalty and ſin? And yet, to leave nothing untouched, that can be eaſily thought on, let us once again ſuppoſe all their charges, *viz.* Tyranny, Exaction, breach of Oath, *&c.* to be true; yet muſt we tell them, The Tyranny of a King ſhall never warrant their uſurpation and greater Tyranny. Yea ſuppoſe, he hath loſt his right, by what Law, Order, or Priviledge acknowledged do they pretend to have found it? Nay what Law of equity or reaſon have they to Act thoſe things, which they confeſs to be Illegal, Unwarrantable, yea Tyrannical in him? Is it ſo great an offence for the King to abrogate

their priviledges, and is it not as great, or greater, offence for Subjects to usurp his? nay to usurp greater, then they will acknowledge he ever had? May they onely be Parties and Judges in their own case, and to the prejudice, yea punishment of no less Person, then their Prince? never was such iniquity heard of, Posterity will not beleeve it. The *Switzers*, The *Amphictyons* (those *Cantons* of *Grecia*) never heard of such Liberty; what is, (if this be not,) to confess plainly, *Regna occupantium esse*, that Kingdoms go onely by conquest, that possession and power are sufficient titles to any Government? 'Tis true, a man may make himself *Civis alienæ reipublicæ*, a Subject to another State, then that whereof he is native, perhaps more ways then one; But he can never unmake himself Subject of that Country, where he is native, do what he can, especially staying there: and much less of a Subject make himself Sovereign. For let

him

him Rebel, (as who doubts, but the *Hollanders* did,) yet he remains a Subject ſtill *de jure*, and of right. Adde hereunto, if the King ſhould forfeit his Earldom of *Holland*, it were not to them he ſhould forfeit it, but unto the Emperor, to whom it eſcheates, as is cleer both by the Imperial and Municipal Laws. Forfeitures do not uſe to fall to the Tenants, but to the Lord of the Fee. And 'tis evident, that *Holland* was erected into an Earldom, not by the Grandfires of *Orange*, nor of any of the Burgers of *Amſterdam*, *Delft*, *Dort*, &c. but by the Emperor *Carolus Calvus* in the year 863. *Qui cum audivit*, &c. *Who hearing*, ſaith the * Hiſtorian, *that the County of Holland, being a part of the Emperors demeſnes, was much infeſted and ſpoyled by the* Danes, *at the inſtant requeſt of Pope* John, principatum ejus, &c. *beſtowed the principality thereof upon* Theodorick, *or* Thierry. If then the Earldom of *Holland*, &c. be not in the King of *Spain*, to whom it deſcended line-

* *Berland. Meyer.*

ally from *Theodorick*, The Emperor may give a second Investiture thereof, to whom he pleaſe, as of a Fief Imperial. For to ſay, it ſhould be lapſed into the right of the Province, as perhaps particular Eſtates may do, is vain. The Emperor takes no notice of their private cuſtomes, neither can they be prejudicial to a third Perſon, who is ſo much ſuperior to them, and upon whom their very cuſtomes do originally depend. Beſide, the Earldom was never vacant, there was always an Heir notoriouſly known, either in poſſeſſion, or plea for it. They hold it therefore by the ſword onely; but that is the worſt title of all, and fitter for thoſe Hoords of *Tartarians*, then for a Common-wealth of Chriſtians. Neither *Littleton*, nor *Somme rural*, nor *Jus feudale* know any ſuch Tenure. A certain *Hollander*, in a third defence which he hath written of the united Provinces calls the King *Raptorem & Hereticum notorium*, Spoyler and *Notorious*

rious Heretick and therefore to be set upon and driven out of his Kingdom *by a general League* and *Union of all the forces of all Protestant Princes and States of Christendom*, But, *hoc tantum defuit*, this onely was wanting to advance their Calumnies against His Majestie to the height of impudence. Never was the King of *Spain* called Heretick by man, since he deserved the title of Catholike; and it could not be done now, but by one, whose Malice, and Heresie together, had corrupted his judgement unto madness.

Nor is it to much better purpose, 14.
that which they say concerning other Princes and States, *viz. That they have been acknowledged and treated by forreign Princes, as Free States, above thirty years.* That time will not serve for Prescription: and if it would, Prescription always pleadeth some other Title, and possession *bonâ fide* beside: neither of which can they pretend without blushing. Neither can

the opinion of forreign Princes make their bad claym better; it may give ſome reputation indeed to an uſurper, but not any Title of right. And as in a bad quarrel bravely defended, not the cauſe, but the ſucceſs gains the credit; ſo it is their proſperity, and not the juſtice of their cauſe, which doth them honor. Beſide, it is not true that Princes have ſo reputed them: To Negotiate with them under a quality, which they will aſſume, is one thing; and really to adjudge that quality, as due to them, is another. They offered the Sovereignty of theſe Provinces to Queen *Elizabeth*; but ſhe refuſed them: The world doth not think, it was out of any Favor to King *Philip*, that ſhe did ſo, but becauſe ſhe knew, they offered ſomething more then their own; and ſhe was not willing to give her own people ſuch a bad Preſident againſt her ſelf. And when, for private ends and ſome reaſons of State, ſhe was content for a while to take upon

on her the charge and title of *Protectress of the poor distressed States, &c.* it was observed, the business was most earnestly promoted by them, who were *now* as willing to be rid of the * *Son*, as when time was, the Marquis of *Winchester* had been to be rid of the * *Father*. This is upon record, that *Aversata est Regina* the Queen could never endure the offer of the Sovereignty of those Provinces: Neither was Sir *Noel Caron* in her time ever acknowledged Embassador, but Agent. But to joyn issue with them more neerly, let us here what *Damhouderius*, a famous Lawyer, and their own Countryman, saith, *Seditiosi sunt, qui moliuntur conspirationem*, &c. *Seditious persons*, saith he, *are such as hatch or foment Conspiracies against the Governors and Lieutenants of the Provinces, that procure unlawful meetings or assemblies of the people, or cause any Tumults in the Towns.* What is this but an Endictment drawn against the States, considering their practises, not onely against the

* E. *Leicester.*

* Duke of Northumberland. *Camden.*

Praxis Crimin. c. 132.

Perſon of *D' Alva*, but of *Don John* himſelf, the Duke of *Parma*, *&c.* their many and tumultuous meetings at *Breda*, *Oſterweal*, Saint *Trudens*, their encouraging, yea incenſing the *Geuſes* throughout all the Provinces, laſtly with their defence and holding of *Harlem*, *Alemar*, *Leyden*, and other places by force of Arms? Again Chap. 82. he teacheth, that to make a War juſt, there muſt be firſt *a juſt cauſe*, Second, *honeſt intention*, Third, *Authority of the Prince*, or Supream Magiſtrate, *Sine quâ*, *without which*, ſaith he, *'tis Treaſon to make War*. That ſame *Sine quâ* of his might make the States tremble, if they reflect upon it. For in all their Wars they neither had good cauſe nor good colour. Their Religion and Liberties were all ſecured to them by the pacification at *Gaunt*, by the perpetual Edict, by the Articles of the Treaty of *Colen* which were all quietly enjoyed without diſturbance, by ſuch of the Provinces as would conform to them.

them. Their Sovereign was known to be His Catholike Majestie, and for their *good intention*, as no man could judge of it but by their actions, so it appeared cleerly to be onely to sow diffention among the people, and through factions and discord to arm them by degrees against the supream Magistrate under colour of Religion. And the Prince of *Orange* most disloyal of all other; because being a person of Honor, and so highly entrusted by the King, he betrayed that great trust reposed in him, and made a War, by his own Authority and that of his faction, against the King: Although he had neither Office, nor any kinde of Command in the *Low-Countries*, but what he had under the Wings of the Eagle, and the Authority of the Lyon. All his Belgick Lands, he held in Fee of the Duke of *Burgundy*, as his Leige-Lord; he did Homage and Fealty for them, and knew, that a Sovereign gives Law as well as offices to his Subjects. Besides, *Claudius le Brun*, another *Proces. Crimin.*

another famous Lawyer addeth this, *viz. That whosoever surprizeth Towns, Castles, Forts, without order of his Sovereign* (as the Prince caused *Lumay* to do in *Holland*, and as *Voorst* and *Barland* did *Flushing*) *by which the peace of the Country is broken; or who attempteth against the life of his Sovereigns Lievtenant, it is Treason.* And these are judgements, which all *Europe* do consent in, decrees of reason, and principles of Government, which must not be called in question: if the States of *Holland* themselves do permitt them to be disputed, they must never expect Peace, Order, or any setled obedience in their Country.

15. So that by Law 'tis cleer, in what case the States do stand, for thus breaking the peace of Christendom in those times, and being cause of the effusion of so much Christian blood, as hath been shed in that quarrel. Now concerning any liberty which the Gospel, Holy Scriptures, or any principles of true

true Religion may be ſuppoſed to give them, to uſe ſuch proceedings againſt the Sovereign Prince, I ſhall not enter into any Theological diſpute with them, as being beſide my purpoſe, which is onely to ſhew *matter of opinion, and matter of Fact* in this controverſie of *obedience due to the Supream Civil Magiſtrate*: And therefore, becauſe I write onely to *Engliſh* men, I ſhall content my ſelf onely with the judgement of Doctor *Bilſon* againſt them. He was a great Divine, and a great Prelate of the Church of *England*, and choſen on purpoſe to write on this Argument, by the greateſt Statesman of that time; and he wrote *cum privilegio* of the State, and with the general approbation of the *Engliſh* Church. *Shall a King*, ſaith he, *be depoſed, if he break his promiſe, and Oath at Coronation, in any of the Covenants and Points, which he promiſeth?* He anſwers in the Margin, *No. The breach of Covenants is not deprivation*: and gives this reaſon, *The people may not break* Chriſtian Subject, &c.

with

with their Princes, ſo often as they break with God. And afterward, *Subjects,* ſaith he, *cannot depoſe their Princes, to whom they muſt be Subject for Conſcience ſake.* This is Doctrine, we ſee, quite contrary to the Aphoriſms of *Holland*, and to the Divinity that is now currant at *Rochel.* Now as private ſubjects may not, by Gods Law, depoſe their Princes, ſo are they forbidden to take Arms againſt them; and the reaſon hereof is invincible. *For* ſaith Doctor *Bilſon*, *he that may fight, may kill; and War againſt the Prince, and killing of the Prince are of conſequence inevitable. The Apoſtles,* ſaith he, *obeyed Tyrants, that commanded all things againſt Religion: And in thoſe things, which were commanded againſt God, they did ſubmit themſelves with meekneſs to endure the Magiſtrates pleaſure, but not to obey his will.* Laſtly, and moſt of all to the purpoſe he concludeth, *if the Laws of the Land appoint the Nobles, as next to the King, to aſſiſt him in doing right, and to withhold from doing*

doing wrong, then are they Licenſed by mans Laws to interpoſe themſelves, but in no caſe to deprive the Prince, where the Scepter is inherited. And becauſe ſome of good judgement have been lead into that error, that the Dukes of *Burgundy* had not full Power or Sovereignty in the *Netherlands*, I will ſend them to School to all the Lawyers, Records, Stories, and (which is moſt infallible) to the practiſe and Common Laws of the Country, and unto *Bodin*; and ſatisfie my ſelf to alledge here that Ancient and Honorable Counſellor of our Nation the Lord Chancellor *Egerton*, who in his Oration for the *Poſtnati* ſaith thus, *The Dukes of Burgundy were abſolute Princes, and had Sovereign power in their Countries. And King* Henry *the Eighth, had as abſolute power, when his Stile was Lord of* Ireland, *as when he was King: For the difference of Stile makes not the difference of Sovereignty.* I conclude therefore upon the grounds of all Law, Divine and Humane, and

Bodin. de rep. P. 71.

(as

(as you have seen) upon a full view and examination of all their pretenses, complaints, excuses, &c. that as their usurpation at first was without warrant, so they continue the possession with as little conscience; That all their Pleas are either Nullities or Forgeries, and they have indeed no better title, then what success and their Cannon gives them. And that all forreign Soldiers that assist them, knowing the injustice of their cause, and that the War is so utterly unlawful, do incur *Mortal Sin* and danger of damnation; and may as justly be reproved, as King *Josaphat* was for helping and assisting *Ahab*. Look to the end, for it is certainly fearful, and we must know, that ἔχει θεὸς ἔκδικον ὄμμα.

16. I write not this as an Enemy to the Country. I hold it a Peerless County for the goodly Townes, Wealth, Traffick, Strength, and Fertility in so small a Circuit; nor for any personal quarrels; nor for any corruption, or affentation in regard

gard of the match with *Spain*; but onely for the truth of the ſtory, which induced me, together with the danger of the Preſident, and the manifold injuries that were done to Religion. For though I remembred the general diſlike that they have of our government, their dealing with the Queens Officers, and how unkindly of old they uſed my Lord *Willoughby*, as his Apology teſtifieth; and of late what complaints our Merchants Adventurers, in their Books, have made of their ill uſage by them at *Moſko*, at the *Eaſt-Indies*, &c. what contempt they ſhewed, when the Duty of Sixteen Herrings was demanded in his Majeſties right, for Fiſhing upon the Coaſt of *Scotland*, preſuming no leſs then to impriſon him that demanded it, and many ſuch like matters; yet ſeeing the State is not moved, why ſhould I be offended? And when I ſay *The State*, I mean not the people onely, but eſpecially the King, to whom *Holland* is moſt obliged; and more parti-

particularly for Two Singular and Royal Favors, such as might in reason require some reciprocal return of thankfulness, and breed in them good Blood, good Affections, and also good Language. The first was in restoring to them the Keyes, which did open and lock up their Province; and this not for any reward, but a restitution onely of part of his due. The second for the Free permission of their Fishing upon the *English* Coast; wherein they yearly employ above Thirty thousand persons, who are set on work by it, and above Four thousand Busses, Doggerboats, Galliots, and Pinks; to their exceeding great benefit and enrichment: which is not a liberty they have by any Law, as some men pretend, but a priviledge, or permission rather of royall Grace and Favor. And *Grotius* may prove, without any mans contradiction, *Mare Liberum*, in this sense, as the Kings Highway is *Free* for every man to walk, that is, to go and come; but he shall never be able

able to prove, that *Fiſhing is Free*, that is to ſay, taking away the profit upon another Princes Coaſt, without leave of the Prince firſt had and obtained. Tis true, they have had the boldneſs to do this for a long time without leave, but they may hap to finde at laſt, the longeſt time they can pretend, will not ſerve them for preſcription. And thus much for our new Maſters, and no very good Neighbors, The High and Mighty States of the United Provinces of the *Netherlands*.

Titulus

Titulus Quintus.

PALATINISM,
OR
The Troubles in BOHEMIA
AND THE
PALATINATE
About Religion.

1. BOhemia is the laſt Stage of the Scene of Forreign Tragedies, or Tumults for Religion, to which I am now going; yet ſo as I muſt take the *Palatinate* in my way, an unfortunate Province of late, which in the ſpace of an Hundred years hath changed Religion

Religion no leſs then Five times, and yet, as it ſeems, never learned well that part of Religion, which is not the leaſt principle, *concerning Obedience*. But of this wee ſhall ceaſe to wonder, when we think of *Paræus*, *Gracerus*, and ſome other Divines, that have poſſeſſed the Chaire there; and of the Schools of the new diſcipline, which are open. *Paræus* in his Commentary upon the Thirteenth *ad Romanes* teacheth plainly, *Subditi poſſunt ſuos reges deponere, &c.* That *Subjects may depoſe their Princes for Tyranny, &c.* Tyranny is contrary to the very end and being of Government, and therefore where it is Univerſal and general, and no other redreſs to be found, it is capable of the leſs diſpute; onely it is not to be determined by private perſons, eſpecially of his Robe; which yet moſt commonly they do: or *when they compel their Subjects to Idolatry*. By *compelling to Idolatry* he means, if the Prince maintains Maſs, Confeſſion, Prieſthood, and other the

the Service and Religion of the Catholike Church; (as all Catholike Princes are bound to do by their Oath:) or indeed (with these men) if they maintain any other Religion then pure *Calvinism*, it is to compel to Idolatry. This is the sentence, which he pronounceth against the Emperor, the Kings of *Spain*, *France*, *Poland*, the Princes of *Italy*, *Germany*, &c. And yet this is but the first peale, which he rang as a Toxsan or Alarum-bell to *Bohemia*. For he addeth another Article, which, if they look not well to it, may touch Reformers Freehold, as well as other Princes. It is, *Quando sub prætextu Religionis*, &c, *When under colour of Religion they look after their own advantages* or *profit*. This had not been a Lecture to be read to *Henry* the Eighth, and the Courtiers of his time. And surely, if a man should ask *Murray* and *Morton*, those two pillars of Reformation, in *Scotland*; *Orange* and *Horn* in the *Netherlands*; *Conde* and the Admiral in *France*; the

the Dukes of *Somerset* and *Northumberland* in *England*; *Saxony*, *Sweden*, *Denmark* and the rest of the *Lutheran* Princes in *Germany*; whether they had not some by-ends of Avarice, Ambition, and other sinister and worldly nature, when they seemed to be most hot and zealously transported, it might trouble them all, perhaps, what to answer. Last of all he assigneth another cause of deposition, *viz. When they oppress their Subjects in matter of Conscience.* Which indeed is the strangest of all; for who ever knew a *Calvinist* permit Liberty of Conscience to another man, whom he could compel to his own? and yet in this point he is so earnest, that unless the people do this, *viz. Resist the Superior Magistrate in the defence of themselves and true Religion*, he tells them *in conscientiis incolumes esse nequeunt, They cannot have true peace of Conscience*, They should offend God by not doing it. And in his Commentary upon Judges he speaketh yet more absurdly and dangerously

dangerously, *Magistratus Minor potest occidere majorem*, *The Inferior Magistrate in* this case *may kill the Superior*, Bayliffs, Sheriffs, Constables their King and Sovereign; or if they think fit, one another upon the quarrel of Religion, *because*, saith he, *Domestick Tyrants are more to be suppressed* or opposed, then *Forreigners*, or such as are *without us*. Neither was *Paræus* the onely Master of Paradoxes in that Country, (although it must be confessed, his Doctrine so corrupted the *Palatinate*, that in *England*, to prevent the like evill, his Books were purged by fire:) *Gracerus*, his Pew-fellow, teacheth, that *the Malice of Antichrist* (that is in his sense, the actings or zeal of any Catholike Prince for the true Religion established) *coercenda est gladio*, *must be resisted*, saith he, *or restrained by the Sword*. And *Aretius* himself sufficiently shews his affections to the Emperor & Christian Empire, when he teacheth that *the Dragon* in the Apocalyps, that is, the Devil, *Dedisse Imperio*

Imperio poteſtatem ſuam, &c. gave to the Empire its power and greatneſs; and that *plenitudinem Diaboliſmi, the Fulneſs of Diabolical malice and hatred againſt Chriſt dwelleth in the Empire.*

Nor are we to think, that this Doctrine was onely Speculative among them; it was the practiſe alſo of that pretended Church *ab origine*: Yea their own Neighbors and Elder Brethren have felt the effects of it, in much inhumane and uncivil uſage from them. Ask *Gieskenius*, who was a man of Learning, and no ſmall account among the *Lutherans*, and he will tell you one pretty exploit of theirs, *Emdenſes Illuſtrem Dominum ſuum motâ ſeditione, &c. They of Emden*, ſaith he, *had by this time almoſt driven their Leige Lord out of all his dominions, by their ſeditious proceedings.* And that they reſted not, till they had obtained theſe Articles of him, who was himſelf a *Lutheran*, *Ne Illuſtriſſimus Comes, &c. That his Excellency ſhould not* 2.

have power to grant unto his Subjects of Emden *the exercise of any Religon, but* Calvinism. 2. *That himself onely at Court may have a Preacher of the* Auspurgh-Confession. So it was matter of favor to him, that Subjects should tolerate their Princes Religion; but for themselves it must be framed entirely according to their own Mode. They must direct, and their Prince obey. If you object, that this was but a private tumult, and that the Church of the *Palatinate* did not approve of such proceedings against their Brethren, it is cleerly answered by this, That in the year 1602. there were twenty points established in that Church; The first whereof was this, *Totus Lutheranismus & omnes libri eorum, &c. That the whole Doctrine of* Luther (opposite to Calvinism) *and all the* Lutherans *Books be for ever taken away and prohibited.* Neither are they permitted in any part of the *Palatinate*, the *Marquisate of Brandenburgh*, or the Territory of *Emden*. 'Tis true, The *Lutherans*,

Schulting. Hierarch. Anacref.

therans, where they command, do as wisely provide against them; They have as little footing in all the Duke of *Saxonies* Countries, *Hamborough*, or the *Hans* Towns. That great Synod of *Torgaw*, convented by the means and procurement of those Protestant Princes, do testifie, *that the Calvinists* had troubled and brought to ruin *omnes Christianas Ecclesias*, *All Christian Churches*, *Universities*, *Kingdoms and States*, *where ever they were admitted*. And hence it is, that they are not included under the peace and protection of the Empire, *the Religions Vried* is no way permitted unto them; as appeareth by the Edict of *Charls* the Fifth, *De compositi. pacis, &c. Anno* 1532. Nor are they comprehended in his Sentence, *De confess. Suevicâ*, 1530. Nor in the Interim, 1548. Nor in the Constitution, *De pace publicâ*. And for the Acts made at *Passau*, 1552. by the Emperor *Ferdinand*, the very words exclude them from all benefit. So also in his Declaration at *Auspurgh*, 1555.

And in the concluſion or agreement of the Princes of the Auguſtan Confeſſion, with the three Electors, and other Princes and Cities in the year 1557. it was declared, that the Sacramentaries, Anabaptiſts, Oſiandrians,&c. were all excluded from the Articles of peace,and that there ſhould be Edicts publiſhed againſt them by common conſent, and for their utter extirpation. This was enacted in the year 1557. and in the year 1566. *Cæſar* and the Princes of the Dyet *decreto publico ſcripſerunt,&c.* publiſhed a general decree concerning *Frederick* the *Elector Palatine* of the *Rhine, that he ſhould deſert the opinions of* Calvin, and *not ſuffer them to be taught in any of the Churches or Schools of his Country*: And this Decree of the Dyet was intimated to him in the preſence of the Biſhops of *Mentz*, *Triers*, and *Colen*, of the Elector of *Saxony*, and of the Embaſſadors alſo of the Marquis of *Brandenburgh*; and after his death, by his Son *Lewis* it was obeyed. In the ſame

year

year the Princes declare in their reply to the Emperor, *permittere se nolle, that they will not permit that any Sects whatsoever shall be harbored in their Dominions*, and that *they count the* Zuinglians *and* Calvinists *for such*, which was also long before declared, *viz.* in the Recess of the Empire in the year 1555. *Calvinism* then being so long before not counted tolerable in *Germany*, the *Bohemians* of late have made it much more odious and intolerable by their practises; and most justly are they excluded from the protection and benefit of those Laws, Liberties and Peace, which themselves would destroy, if they could prevaile; as the Sequel will shew.

Paræus and the rest of the *Calvinists* in the *Palatinate* were the Firebrands of the *Bohemian* War; they seduced the people, set the Princes at variance among themselves, and cast that whole Kingdom into a most desperate combustion, though to their own shame and confusion 3.

at last, as it it pleased God. I need not be very sollicitous, how to report the business aright; both the original of the War, as also its progress and success are so generally known by the relations of the *French* Mercury of *Mercurius Gallo-Belgicus*, and others, that there cannot easily be any false play used. But the long, many, secret practises and plottings about it were discovered chiefly upon the Battle at *Prague*, by intercepting the very Rolls and Records thereof. First of all in the *Secreta Principis Anhaltini Cancellaria*, printed in the year 1621. which certainly was no Fiction, as that *Catholicon* published against the Leaguers in *France* was; but a serious admonition, plainly and down-right making report, how things were carried, without any affectation or disguise; as a Treatise made rather to deliver Truth, then to shew Art. And hereof *Lundorpius*, an Historiographer of *Franckford*, must needs be thought an impartial witness;

neſs; who ſets down the Letters and Records themſelves for ſome time, *viz.* ſo much of them as concerned the time of his writing. And afterward they were verified by *Cogmandolo*, who in his Treatiſe of like Subject, called *Secreta Secretorum*, avoucheth the ſame things. So that, there being no juſt ground, as I conceive, either of jealouſie or doubt concerning this relation, I ſhall profeſſedly upon that foundation build my cheifeſt reports concerning this buſineſs.

In the year 1608. this great Union did begin; The Cheifs whereof were the Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, *Chriſtian* Prince of *Anhalt*, and the Marquis of *Onoltzbach*, Count *Mansfield* was a principal Agent, and in the year 1619. contrary unto, and in contempt of the Imperial Proclamations, Letters, &c. ſent Two thouſand men to the Aid of the *Bohemians* againſt the Emperor. Afterward they admitted *Joachim*, Marquis of *Brandenburgh*, to be as it were Vicar or Lieutenant 3.

General of the League. They admitted also the Marquis of *Baden*, the Duke of *Wittembergh*, *Landsgrave* of *Hessen*, Duke of *Dupontz*, and *Strasburgh*, *Norimbergh* and many other Cities. All which contributed so largly to these Wars, as the Emperor never received the like Aid from them against the *Turke*. For as *Cogmandolo* testifieth, The several Taxes afforded by them from the year 1608 to the year 1619 amounted in the whole sum to no less then Four Millions, one hundred seventy six thousand, nine hundrd and seventeen Florens. The concurrence of so many Princes could not but argue mighty force; which was much increased by the Negotiations of *Mansfeld*, and *Nomarus* in *Italy*, (which *Nomarus* was *Baltazar Newwen* principal Secretary to *Onoltzbach*.) and of *Volrad Plessen* with the *Hollanders*; and of others with the Duke of *Bullion*, *Bethlehem Gabor*, and the Rebels of *Hungary*. And though they could not perswade the King of

of *England* to enter into their League, for great and weighty reaſons which he alledged, yet they hoped for ſome good aſſiſtance from the *Griſons*; and gave out alſo that the *Hans* Townes favored their Union. They omitted not to ſollicit the *Venetians* alſo with much earneſtneſs, as conceiving it to be their intereſt to keep the other Princes of *Europe* in balance, as much as may be, and to be jealous of the too potent Supereminency of any one; but what anſwer the Common-wealth gave them is not certainly known. The pretenſe of their Union was, that it was purely defenſive, for the protection only of their Religion, Liberties and Priviledges. *Vetus Cantilena*, the old ſong, I confeſs, but who can beleeve them? Can it be ſuppoſed of *Anhalt*, that he took Arms onely for Conſcience, having been ſo well beaten in *France* for it, both out of his Honor and Fortunes? or that Count *Mansfeld* is a man that fights onely for Conſcience,

and Publike liberty, whose Trade and patrimony is the Sword, and who, braving the World most commonly with a running Army, more used to Pillage then Fight, Robs and Spoils all, where ever he comes? Besides, doth not *Achatius a Donau* write to *Anhalt*, *November* the Fifteenth, 1619. that the intention of *Bethlehem Gabor*, a principal Confederate, was *pied a pied*, by degrees, yet as closely as foot could follow, *to root out the Antichristian Papacy*, where he came? This was something more then to be onely defensive. And in the Union it self, which contains One and twenty Articles in all, although they say, it was onely their *Buckler* against the Catholikes *assaulting* them, yet do they not profess, *Art.* 8. to have intention to expel *Papism*, as they call it? and to preserve themselves from the Yoak of *Spain* and forreign Government? And doth not *Bethlehem Gabor* in his Letter to the *Turk*, profess also, how much he labors now, *Ut rasa*

Pon-

Pontificiorum Cohors, &c. that *those shaven Companies of Papelings* (so he calls the Catholike Clergy, and Religious,) might be utterly destroyed. This therefore was certain, had they prevailed, Catholike Religion long before this time had been extinct in those Countries, and Catholikes themselves banished, destroyed and gone. In order to this do they not decree among themselves, *Pag.* 43. to fall upon Church-men, and Church-goods first? *Pag.*131. do they not resolve to invade some part of their Adversaries Country, (as they call the Catholikes, having first compelled them to be so, for their own defense?) and in particular do they not name and design out the Arch-Bishoprick and City of *Triers*, as lying fairest in their way, and being a Prince Electors Country, Catholike, and the Clergy rich? But their Noblest and Chief project was to invest themselves of two Crowns, (goodly booties indeed, if they could catch them, and

Temp-

Temptations fit for such high Spirits,) that is to say, of the Kingdoms of *Bohemia* and *Hungary*. The reason is given *Pag* 25. because thereby in the Assembly of Electors *they should be always Secure of a double Vote*. And therefore doth the Count *Palatine* confess in his Letter to the Duke of *Saxony*, that he took upon him the Administration of *Bohemia*, among other reasons, principally for this, *viz. That by this means the Election of the King of the* Romans *might be hence forward in the power of the Protestants*. This was certainly a main part of their design, according to that which *Anhalt* writes unto *Donau* in *May* 1519. *That it were better the* Turk *were chosen to wear that Crown, then* Ferdinand; yea *Gabor* tells the *Turk*, that the *Palatine* and *Brandenburgh* were resolved *no longer to endure* Ferdinand, and that all those Provinces that were Confederate with them, *Corde & animo omnia officia fidelissimè præstabunt*, *were ready with heart and goodwil to tender*

tender all faithful services to his Ottoman Greatness, and the whole Nation of Turks; and that in a short time *Ferdinand* would surely be expelled out of all *Germany*, and forced to seek his fortunes in *Spain*. But O Monstrous! O Incredible! that such desperate malice and impiety should enter the hearts of any that profess themselves Christians! were it not, that the Records themselves be extant *fide publicâ*, which do assure us thereof even beyond contradiction, who could beleeve it? O Malice implacable! O Envy most perfectly diabolical! And O happy house, Family, Name of *Austria*, which for the interest of true Religion, and Constancy to Justice, deservest to be made the object of such execrable Spleen, and to Combat perpetually with such odious and Antichristian Conspiracies. It is no new thing. But *Macte istâ virtute*; Be faithful to God, and to those principles of piety and justice descended from so many, so Religious, and so Renouned Ancestors, *Guicciard. Lib. 20.*

ceſtors, and reign in ſpite of Hell, *ſo long as the Sun and Moon endureth.*

5. The Truth is, Ambition was ſo hungry with them, that they conſulted about dividing the Bears Skin, before the Bear was taken; They conſulted how they ſhould ſhare among them the ſpoils of the *German* Clergy, and of the houſe of *Auſtria*, before either of them was in their power. For as by their Chancery-rolls it is evident, Their intent was to advance the *Palatine* to *Bohemia*, *Alſatia*, and ſome part of *Auſtria*, enlarging his Dominion alſo with the Biſhoprick of *Spiers*, and a part of *Mentz*. *Bethlehem Gabor* ſhould be aſſiſted to keep *Hungary*, which afterward (this *Gabor* having no iſſue) might alſo probably fall to the *Palatines* lot. Too many Crowns here, you will ſay, to expect any in Heaven. *Onaltzbach* gaped for Two fat Benefices, the Biſhopricks of *Wirtzburgh* and *Bambergh* his Neighbors: and therefore was it agreed, that their Armies

Cancel. Anhaltina.

mies ſhould Rendevouz in thoſe parts. The Marquis of *Baden* thirſted after *Briſack*, and was willing by this occaſion to continue his poſſeſſion of the upper Marquiſate, againſt the more juſt claim of the Count *Eberſtein*. *Brandenburgh* expected the leaſt of all, being content onely with a part of the Biſhoprick of *Wirtzburgh*, which lay fit for him; But *Anhalt* intended to recruit both his purſe and broken fortunes with the ſpoils of *Mentz*, *Banbergh*, and other Catholike places, as alſo with ſome Lands and Lordſhips, which were like to Eſcheat in *Bohemia*. If the *Venetians* would joyn with them, they might make themſelves Maſters of *Iſtria* and *Friuli*, and ſo *Oceanum cum Adriatico* (as their *Cancellaria* ſpeaks) they might *joyn Sea to Sea*, and *Land to Land*, and carry all before them without controule. Such were the vaſt, but vain, deſigns of their Ambition and Avarice. But before we proceed any further, it may not be amiſs to examine

examine their Plea. It is manifeſt, their deſign in it ſelf was moſt pernicious, and ſuch, as (if it had taken effect, which God would not ſuffer) had been of general prejudice to the State of Chriſtendom, and not onely to the Peace of the Empire; which yet every one of the Princes Confederate were bound, in ſome relation or other, to maintain: beſide the ſubverſion of all Laws, which apparently it carryed along with it. Who doth not remember, how all the Pulpits in *England*, when time was, and generally of all the Reformed Churches abroad, ſounded the Alarme againſt the League and Leaguers in *France*? Which yet was not half ſo miſcheivous as this; but was at firſt ſet on foot quietly, without any ſedition or inſurrection, onely for defenſe of the Ancient Religion, always received and eſtabliſhed in *France*: yea confirmed with the Kings perſonal Oath and approbation. And though it were afterward continueed, and

more

more ſtrictly proſecuted, upon occaſion of ſome horrid Actions of murther and tyranny, yet Monſieur *Villeroy* himſelf, (who was a wiſe man, and a great Royalliſt,) profeſſeth,) that their aim was not the *Extirpation* of the King of *Navarre*, but his *Reformation*; and that if they might *be aſſured of his Religion* (which he had promiſed) he *ſhould be inſtantly aſſured of their obedience*: as in the concluſion it clearly appeared; every perſon in *France*, according as the King condiſcended to give them ſatisfaction in that point, entirely acknowledging their Allegiance to him. And the miſhap which befel him afterwards, was not in purſuance of the League, but upon a private account, not to ſay, upon ſome new provocation given, and which no man living juſtified. But as for this Union, it runs in a far wilder ſtrain, and is for the advancement of a *new Religion*, entirely diſavowed by all the States of the Empire in all their publike Acts. How

then

then can it be otherwiſe then extreamly diſloyal and criminous? The Duke of *Saxony* himſelf, though a Proteſtant Prince, diſſwaded it, and adviſed the *Palatine* very prudently, and like a friend, to quit *Bohemia*, and to ſeek for reconciliation and pardon, where as yet, he might poſſibly finde it. Beſide it opened the Gates of the Empire to the *Turk*, which miſchief alone, had there been no other going along with it, had been ſufficient to condemn it. But *Pleſſen* confeſſeth in his Letter to *Anhalt*, That *it was an Action of the ſame nature with* Holland: and what that was, we have ſeen already. In brief they took arms againſt a King Lawfully Elected, ſolemnly Crowned, and eſtabliſhed in poſſeſſion by conſent of the States. It is true, when they firſt went about the work, they nominated the Duke of *Saxony*, as Competitor with the *Palſgrave* for *Bohemia*; but that was meerly craft, and a trick of maliciouſneſs, to render

render the Duke ſuſpected with the Emperor. They knew he had rejected their offer and Confederacy long before, when their Agent the Count *Slick* ſollicited him in their names. By this means they put *Auſtria* it ſelf, the Emperors Patrimonial Country, into ſedition; The people there, through correſpondence with the *Turk* and *Gabor*, were ſo bold as to tell *Ferdinand*, that unleſs he would grant them *Toleration, and ſuch Liberty of Conſcience, as they deſired*, they would joyn with his Enemies. And they were in this point as good as their words; For in the year 1620. all the upper *Auſtria* did really quit their old Lord; and ſubmitted unto a new Protector in his ſtead. If the Catholikes of England ſhould attempt the like, how would it be cenſured for ſedition, and puniſhed ſeverely, as it might? and yet ſurely the caſes are much Parallel, and if there be any advantage, it is on our ſide; who deſire the exerciſe of nothing, but what was once pub-

like,

like; owned for many ages together by all the people of the Nation, and legally eſtabliſhed before us.

6. But nothing makes the Action more offenſive and ſcandalous, then that *Anhalt*, and *Onoltzbach*, two ſuch private and inconſiderable perſons, in relation to the buſineſs they dealt in, ſhould take upon them (*inſciis Electoribus*, without the knowledge and conſent of the Princes Electors themſelves) to diſpoſe of the ſucceſſion of the Empire; and in order to effect this more then treaſonable deſign, ſhould Confederate themſelves with one, who is a declared Enemy of the Emperor, and the *Turks* Vaſſal, a Reprobate, a Monſter, called *Bethlehem Gabor*, and calling himſelf Prince of *Tranſylvania*, King of *Hungary*, and what not? one, who to hold himſelf firm in the *Turks* grace, had already delivered up to him the Town and Fort of *Lip*, the Towns of *Solimos*, *Tornadg*, *Margat*, and *Arad*, all well

well fortified places in *Hungary*? and labored hourly how to do him further service, to the prejudice of Christendom. One, who had sworn Allegiance to his Soveveign Lord *Gabriel Batthori*, Prince of *Transylvania*, yet afterward Trayterously murthered him, and usurped his State. One, who made a League with the Emperor *Matthias* in the year 1615. to be quiet, and to attempt nothing contrary unto the Liberties and Peace of *Hungary*; yet presently after invaded the Country in person with a great Army, took upon him the Crown, carried the Emperors Lievtenant *Andrew Dockzy* (whom he had caught by Treachery,) prisoner into *Transylvania*, banished all the Clergy, and maintained his Soldiers with the spoils of the Church; profaned the Cathedral Church at *Poson* with his own Heretical or Mahometan Chaplains, and from thence certified the *Turk* boastingly under his own hand, how successfully he had now begun the wotk, which

which he promiſed; that moſt of the Nobles of *Hungary* were under his command, and that ſince the Popes Clergy gloried to weare their Crowns ſhaven, he would make bold to ſhave ſome of them, heads and all. Upon which good news, and in expectation to turn all his Warres now upon Chriſtendom, the *Turk* inſtantly makes Peace with the *Tartar*, and offereth *Gabor*, to aſſiſt him upon any occaſion of need, with Forty thouſand men. Yet, I ſay, upon this mans head did the Union reſolve to ſet the Crown of *Hungary*; to which end his neereſt Kinſmen lay all this time at *Heydlebergh*, as an Intelligencer, Treating with them, yet diſguiſed under the habit of a Scholar.

7. Let now the impartial Reader caſt his eye upon *Germany*, and ſee, at an effect of this wicked Combination, the picture of *Troy* on fire, that is to ſay, the lively image and horror of War. And when he hath done ſo, let him reflect, how well it

it would please him, to see the face of *London* and *Middlesex* so disfigured with wounds and desolation. That furious Zealot, who is now most forward to blow the Coals of dissention, and to inflame a State that is at quiet, would quake and tremble, when he should consider in what devastation all that once flourishing Country of the Empire now lieth, mourning and groaning by reason of this War. Those fertil Provinces about the *Rhine* all wasted, and impoverished by Soldiers on both sides, especially about *Worms*; Tillage forborne, Traffick decayed, Trades ceased, Taxes imposed, Fortifications raised at the charge of the Country; and for what? onely for defense and security of those, who oppress, or impoverish them: No man master of his own, all at the will of Soldiers and Strangers; and above an Hundred thousand persons reckoned to be slain. These are the effects and issues of this War, the fruits of *Calvinism*; which though

directly

directly prohibited by the Laws of the Empire, and onely tolerated by connivance, and the mercy of the State, yet was now come to such a point, that it sought to suppress the Emperor himself, and hazarded the subversion of the whole State, both Ecclesiastical and Temporal. An unchristian return doubtless, and without any stamp of Religion: Their *sole justifying Faith* will scarce justifie this, because it was with breach of Faith, and of so many civil bonds, and contrary to charity. The true marks of Charity are Humility, Patience, and Zeal perfectly conjoyned and qualified with the other two: Your little Patience, and less Humility do convince your Zeal to be no less counterfeit, then your Faith is fruitless. Charity would never have suffered you to invade the Duke of *Bavieres* Country, notwithstanding he was willing to have stood Newter, and onely because he would not joyn with you. Charity never counselled

selled *Anhalt* to design for pillage, and, as it were, to devour beforehand the spoil of a City, valued at Two and thirty Millions, as he did in his Letters to *Donau*, 1619. Charity never directed Christians to seek assistance from the *Turk*, Christs greatest enemy; nor to frame so many treacherous and malicious plots, as they did, *Pag.* 32, 42, 66, 80. of their *Cancellaria*, against such as were either Neighbors, or Friends to them, or their lawful Superiors. What the Laws of the Empire are concerning such proceedings, hath been seen above in the case of *Luther*, where they are sufficiently condemned. I shall therefore add here one onely passage of *Leopold*, King of the *Romans*, in his Supplication unto his Father *Otho* the first, Emperor; who, because he had broken the Peace of *Germany*, and called in Forreigners, *Membrum Imperii appellari non debeo*; *I ought not*, saith he, *to be accounted any longer a Member of the Empire,*

having brought in Forreign and Barbarous Nations into the heart of Germany. But these Minions of *Geneva* stand not upon the Law, it is Gospel that they plead; let the Gospel therefore condemn them. The Word of God saith, *Per me Reges, &c. Kings reign by me*; It is by Gods appointment, that they bear rule over men: Therefore forbear, ye people, shew reverence to the Ordinance of God, observe your distance, *Touch not mine Anointed.* The Gospel saith, *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers,* &c. *And he that resists, resisteth Gods Ordinance, and shall receive damnation:* Yea, the Gospel saith, *Be subject unto every ordinance of man, viz.* That is established, and by which, the Will of Divine Providence may be seen, *For the Lords sake, whither to a King, as Supream,* or more Excellent, *or unto Governors, &c.* How much do the Doctrine of the Gospel, and the Doctrine of *Calvin* differ? The Gospel teacheth

us

us to honor the King, to obey Governors, &c. *Calvin* directs us rather to degrade and depose them. But this is a matter needs no disputation; Grace and Honesty would decide it best.

Titulus Sextus.

STATISM,
OR
The Changes in ENGLAND
About Religion.

1. AFter a tedious Voyage abroad, we are at last to look homeward, and to steer our course for *England*, where it must be confessed, no such Paradoxes are now current, or practises on foot, either among the Prelates, or any part of the inferior Clergy, I hope, as abroad we have both heard and seen. And it is no marvel; for now they have the wind with them, they live in a calm: There is no great tryal

tryal of their patience and temperature of Spirit, ſave onely what *Martin* Mar-Prelate and his Fellows do now and then give them. Being therefore in ſo great Peace themſelves, through the favor of the State, they were mad men, and ſhould forget their own Intereſt, if they did not Preach now very zealouſly againſt Tumults, and Diſloyalty in others. But if we look back unto times paſt, and obſerve what ſpirit reigned in them, when they were in a ſtorm, or that the State ſeemed to frown upon them; you will finde them much differing from themſelves, and that they were not always ſuch peaceable men, and ſo calmly ſpirited towards Authority, as now they ſeem. For if Maſter *Fox* doth Regiſter his Martyrs aright, and that *Wicliff* and his followers were Proteſtants (as Proteſtants will have them to be) there is cauſe of exception againſt them not a little. For firſt their opinion was, *That no Magiſtrate in the ſtate of ſin had any Authority*;

Which Position alone openeth as wide a gap to Rebellion and Resistance against the Civil Magistrate, as Hell it self can desire. And that we do not bely them herein, *Melanchon* himself confesseth. *Wicleff*, saith he, *was the cause of much tumult and trouble in* England; Qui contendit eos, qui non habent Spiritum sanctum, amittere Dominium, &c. *Holding that such persons as have not the Holy Spirit dwelling in them* (or are not in state of Grace) *do loose all Dominion and Authority*. And elsewhere, *Wicleff*, saith he, *was so mad, as to hold, That wicked persons are uncapable of Dominion*. *Osiander* witnesseth the same. And therefore though the same Master *Fox* calleth him, *Stellam matutinam in medio nebulæ*: *The Morning Star in the midst of a Fog, and the Full Moon of those times*; yet surely the mans judgement in this point was it self much befogged, and the *Moon* of his understanding suffered a great Eclipse. Secondly, It can as little be denied, but that in pursuance of this

Comment. in Arist. Politic.

De Jure Magist.

Cent. 9.

this Doctrine, and for defence of his person, and some other Heterodox opinions, which *Wicleff* taught, Sir *John Oldcastle*, alias Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Roger Acton*, and other his followers, levied an Army of Five and twenty thousand men, with intention, as our own *Chronicles* relate, to suppress the Monasteries of *Westminster*, *Pauls*, St. *Albans*, and to destroy all the Frieries in and about *London*: Which they had also effected, but that it hapned, the religious and valiant Prince, *Henry* the Fift, was at that time *in the state of Grace*, and exercised his *Royal Authority* so happily upon them, in Saint *Giles* his Fields (where their Rendevouz was) that they were all either killed or scattered, and about Seven and thirty of the principal of them executed. Sir *John Oldcastle* and *Acton* fled, but were afterward both of them apprehended, and attainted of High Treason; for which, and for Heretie, they suffered according to their merits. Master *Fox* laboreth much to excuse *Stow.*

or extenuate these things, but to no purpose; they being so palpably and undeniably true, That our *English Chroniclers* themselves, and other worthy Authors of our Country, do expressly avouch them. And certain it is, that in the first year of *Henry* the Fifth, Schedules were set on *Pauls* Church door, boasting seditiously of no less numbers, then One hundred thousand men ready to rise against such as were enemies to their Sect. Sir *John Oldcastle* being first committed to the Tower, for certain points of opinion concerning the Sacraments, which the Synod of *London* had condemned, brake out from thence, and was harbored by one *Bennet*; who for that fact, and for dispersing Seditious Libels against the King, was himself executed: And Sir *John Oldcastle* being the second time apprehended, was indicted in open Parliament, as an enemy to the State, but answered most contemptuously, and according to the Principles of his Sect,

Stow. Harpsfield. Histor. Wicliff.

That

That it was a trifle to him, to be judged by them, and *that he had no judge among them*, &c. At his death he ſpake more like a mad man, then otherwiſe, deſiring Sir *Thomas Arpingham*, that in caſe *he ſaw him riſe again within three days*, he would be good to thoſe of his Sect.

Yet, as it commonly happens, 2.
that Preachers of Novelty and Sedition do ſeldom want ſome Princes or other of the Temporalty, and great Perſonages to countenance them; ſo was it here. *Wicliff*, beſide ſome few of both the Univerſities, *Oxford* eſpecially, whom his Doctrines had caught and corrupted, found no mean Friends and Patrons even at Court. *John* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaſter*, openly favored him, ſo did Sir *Henry Peircy*, Marſhal of *England*; inſomuch that *Wicliff*, being upon a time ſummoned to appear before the Biſhop of *London*, both thoſe Perſonages, the Duke and Marſhal, with divers others of the Court, bore him company to *Pauls*, on

purpose to discountenance the Bishop, and to animate *Wicleff*, and his followers in their courses. It is confessed, the Duke and *Wicleff* had several ends: The first aimed to destroy the Liberties of the Church, and the Charter of *London*, both which he found to be great blocks and obstacles in the way of his ambitious designs; the other, simply to satisfie an envious Malignant humor, which possessed him, against the Clergy, desiring, if he could, to make himself famous by their infamy. But it is observable, the designs both of the one, and of the other, failed them: For *Wicleff* (as great a Protestant as they would have him) died a simple Parish-Priest at *Lutterworth* in *Leicestershire*, where he said Mass to his death; and was never able to obtain the preferment which he desired. And *John* of *Gaunt* lived to be accused publikely of many evil practises, prejudicial to Religion, and to the Nation, and in particular, of aspiring to the Crown; but his cheif

Doctor *Harpsfields* History.

Accuser,

Accuſer, *viz. John Latimor*, an *Iriſh* Frier, was, through the power of the Duke, committed to the cuſtody of Sir *John Holland*, as they pretended, in order to his Tryal. Howbeit the poor man, the very night before he ſhould come to his Anſwer, to prevent further trouble, was found ſtrangled in his bed, and that, as our own Chronicles report, by the ſame Sir *John Holland*, and one *Green*.

But to come neerer the preſent age, and conſider how obedient and loyal this ſort of men ſhewed themſelves in Queen *Maries* times. A time of Tryal, you will ſay, to ſome of them. True; but therefore moſt likely to diſcover their true *Genius*, and Spirit. Now it is manifeſt, That in the ſhort ſpace of Her Reign, which was not much above five years, ſhe had more open Rebellions and Inſurrections made againſt her, from ſuch of her Subjects as were not well affected unto her Religion, then Queen *Elizabeth* had from Catholikes, in full Forty 3.

and

and five. How plain and sincere her Government was, how far from tricks, and such strains of policy, or rather iniquity, as were afterward used, is manifest to all the world. How great a Justicer was She? It will be said, Somewhat too severe; and it may be as truly answered, That severity was necessary, not onely by the judgement of Parliament, which a little before had Enacted those Laws, upon which she proceeded, and before which she acted nothing in that kinde: But also in respect of her own safety, and of the State; against both which, that sort of men, which tasted of the severity of those Laws, were not a little insolent, and prone to attempt. Yet that she was withal a Princess very merciful, is manifest by her compassion shewn to such, as deserved not well of her; that is, To the Dutchess of *Somerset*, to Sir *John Cheek*, who had been the principal corrupter of King *Edward*, her Brothers Infancy, to Sir *Edward Montague*,

Montague, Lord Cheif Juſtice, who had both counſelled and ſubſcribed to her diſinheriting, to Sir *Roger Chamley*, to the Marquis of *Northampton*, to the Lord *Robert Dudly*, to Sir *Henry Dudly*, to Sir *Henry Gates*, *&c.* who ſtood all of them attainted, and the Duke of *Suffolk*. All which perſons were very obnoxious to Her Juſtice; ſhe knew very well, they neither affected Her Religion, nor Title; They were already her priſoners in the Tower, yet ſhe releaſed them all. But for all this, the Zealots of her time would not be quieted, nor ſuffer her to enjoy any quiet; They Libel againſt the Government of Women; they pick quarrels and murmur at her marriage; they publiſh invectives and ſcurrilous Pamphlets againſt Religion; yea, they forbear not to conſpire and plot Her Deprivation, out of a deſire to advance Her Succeſſor to the Crown, under whom every *Calviniſt* expected a Golden Age. The auſterities and abſtinences, which

Catholike

Catholike Religion preſcribed, and which the Queen, by Authority of Parliament, had but lately reduced, and was her ſelf very exemplary in the obſervation of them, were not much pleaſing to ſome Gallants about the Court; nor to many others, both in City and Country, whoſe affections were better ſatisfied with the Liberties of the former Age, and therefore deſired ſome change of this. But among other Inſtruments of miſcheif, that Book written by *Goodman*, intituled *Of Obedience*, was a moſt pernicious Incentive among the commons, teaching expreſly, *P. 94. That Queen* Mary *deſerved to be put to death, as a Tyrant and a Monſter.* And that other of *Knox*, with whom the Zealots of *England* did correſpond too much, where he hath, among many other of like nature, this paſſage: *Illud audacter affirmaverim, &c. This I dare boldly ſay*, ſaith he, *the Nobility, Magiſtrates, Judges, and whole people of* England, *were bound in Conſcience, not onely to oppoſe and with-*

Ad Nobil. Scot.

withſtand the proceedings of that Jeſabel Mary, *whom they call their Queen, but even to have put her to death, and all her Prieſts with her.*

After this, Sir *Thomas Wyat* takes up Arms (for which Maſter *Fox* worthily Chronicles him) marches his Army, like another *Cyrus*, as ſome called him, over *Shooters-Hill*, threatning both the Court and the City, Prince and People. And for this, *Goodman* in his Book *Of Obedience* commends him, ſaith, He did but his duty, and that it was *the duty of all who profeſſed the Goſpel to have riſen with him.* This was their doctrin then: And though it be ſaid, That *Goodman* recanted his opinion in Queen *Elizabeths* days, it was (perhaps) onely that part of it, which oppoſed the Government of Women. And if he did it *abſolutely*, what doth it prove, but the inconſtancy of ſuch men, and how eaſily they can conform themſelves to times that favor them, and of what ſpirit they are under the croſs and affliction? *Wyats* pretence was parti- 4.

particoloured, looking, as he would seem, both at Religion and *bonum Publicum*, in his opposing the Queens marriage with *Spain*; as both *Holinshead* and *Stow* agree. They that suppose it to have been meerly upon a civil account, are confuted by the Queen her self in her Speech at *Guildhal*, where she tells the City, That she had sent divers of her Counsel to *Wyat*, to demand the Reasons of his Insurrections, and that they found, *The business of the marriage was onely a cloak to cover Religion*, which was the thing principally aimed at. For he urged also to have the Tower delivered to him, to have power to nominate and chuse new Counsellors, declaring plainly, *That he would not trust, but be trusted.* But Master *Fox* is plain in the case, for he confesseth of all that Rabble which followed *Wyat*, *That they conspired among themselves for Religion, and made* Wyat *their cheif.* The marriage was looked upon by them onely as an accessory thing,

and

and a means to ſtrengthen that which they meant to overthrow, and *eo nomine*, for that reſpect onely it was to be hindred. Upon this account *William Thomas* a Goſpeller of thoſe times, conſpireth to kill the Queen, and at his death is ſo far from repenting of ſuch a foul intention, That he glorieth *to die for the good of his Countrey*: Yea, the Faction grew ſo tumultuous and bold, That Doctor *Pendleton* was ſhot at in the very Pulpit, Preaching at *Pauls*, and Maſter *Bourn* had a Dagger thrown at him in the ſame place; the multitude being ſo diſorderly, That the Lord Major himſelf had much ado to quiet them; and the Lords of the Counſel were forced to come thither the next Sunday with a guard, to keep things in order, and to prevent further combuſtions which were feared. At *Weſtminſter* upon *Eaſter-day*, a deſperate fellow wounded the Prieſt, as he was at Maſs in Saint *Margarets* Church there. After this they found out a *Perkin Warbeck*, and

and brought him upon the Stage; one *William Fetherſton* counterfeiting King *Edward*, (whom the world, and ſome of themſelves eſpecially, knew well enough to be dead) on purpoſe to amuze the Queen, and diſturb the State. There was one *Cleber*, ſometimes a Pedant, living at *Yakeſly* in *Norfolke*, put to death for a conſpiracy againſt the Queen; *Udal*, *Staunton*, *Peckham* and *Daniel*, were committed for the ſame crime: for which, and for attempting to rob the Exchequer, and her Treaſury, and alſo for Hereſie, they had their deſert. Not to ſpeak of the Treaſons of *Dudley* and *Aſhton*, ſet on by the *French*; In *Devonſhire* Sir *Peter*, and Sir *Gawin Cary*, great Proteſtants, together with Sir *Thomas Denny*, took arms to impede King *Philips* arrival in *England*, poſſeſſed themſelves for ſome time of *Exceſter* Caſtle, but afterward, ſeeing things go contrary to their expectation, they made an eſcape by getting over into *France*. *Thomas Stafford*,

Stafford, coming well instructed from *Genevah*, made Proclamations publickly in several places of the Kingdom, that Queen *Mary* was not lawful Qeen, was unworthy to reign; and, to abuse the people further, gave out no less boldly, then falsly, that already Twelve of the best fortified places in *England* were committed to the *Spaniards*. Upon which pretense *Bradford*, *Proctor Streachly*, and he, surprize the Castle of *Scarborough* in *Yorkshire*, a Fort of singular strength, which they would hold against the *Spaniards*, (they should have said, *against their Queen and Sovereign*,) but they lost it, and their heads beside. *Henry* Duke of *Suffolk* (one to whom the Queen had given life before, being Father to the Lady *Jane*, and a privy Counsellor in those Treasons of *Northumberland*,) fled into *Leicestershire* with the Lord *Gray*, making Proclamation against the Queens marriage; but not being able to raise a Commanding Army, as he hoped, was compelled

pelled to flie and lurk in corners; Till the Earl of *Huntingdon*, apprehending him, brought him up again to his old lodging in the Tower; where he made an unfortunate end. I shall not urge the practises of Sir *Nicholas Throgmorton*, a man of great wit and policy, notwithstanding he was Indicted of high Treason, and arraigned at *Westminster*, with *Arnold*, *Warner*, and others; because though the case were plain, yet the Jury acquitted him, but to their own cost and trouble. And it was well for him, the Advocates of those times desired not so much to triumph in the calamities of poor men, nor that the prisoner should loose his head, rather then they their oration, and the glory of the day.

5. But, say some, there were no Ministers had any hand in those tumults, none of them were Trumpeters to Sedition at that time. What was *Goodman* and *Gilby*? Were not they Ministers? Was not

Jewel

Jewel a Minister, who preacht at *Glocester*, against the Queens proceedings? Was not Doctor *Sands* a Minister, though Vice-Chancellor of *Cambridge*, when he walkt about with the Ragged Staff, and assisted the proclaimers of Lady *Jane*? Were not *Hooper*, *Rogers*, *Crowly* Ministers, all enrolled as friends and favorers of these actions? And were there not divers other Ministers, both of *Kent* and other Counties, who upon *Wyats* fall, forsook the Realm? or was there any thing more likely to drive them out, then a guilty Conscience? what shall we say of those two Apostles (*falsly so called*) of the time, *Cranmer* and *Ridley*? Were not they Ministers, yet great instruments of the Queens troubles? And that not in King *Edwards* time onely, (upon which account some would excuse them,) but after his death, and under the Reign of Queen *Mary*. For *Ridleys* Sermon of *Pauls* Cross, wherein (like another infamous *Shaw*)

he

he so highly magnified and defended the Title of Lady *Jane*, and perswaded the people to accept and obey her as Queen, impugning, against all honesty and conscience, the right of King *Henries* two Daughters, was the Sunday after King *Edward* was dead. And 'tis well known, the Reign of a Prince commenceth (not from the time of his Coronation, but) instantly upon the death of his predecessor. And therefore was he justly attainted and convicted of Treason. *Cranmer* was both Counsellor and Oracle in the business, and was therefore arraigned, and condemned with the Lady *Jane*, and *Guildford Dudly*, as contriver and principal assistant in that Treason, as appeareth by the Records in the Kings Bench. This man was a very *Proteus* in all his actions, and of a disposition most servil, and vitiously plyable to any humor of the King, and ready always to follow the prevailing party. He was first a principal instrument

ſtrument of the Kings divorce from Queen *Katharine*, whereby the Court Gates were ſet upon to the Lady *Anne Bolen*; yet afterward to ſerve the Kings Appetite, he was uſed again, as a chief inſtrument in her condemnation, as appears by the Statute; where *Cranmers* Sentence is recorded judicially, as of his own knowledge convincing her of ſome fowl act. Nor can any wiſe or indifferent man but condemn him of inexcuſable iniquity, that being a Counſellor of State, Primate and Metropolitan of the Realm, pretending alſo to be a Reformer of Religion, would ſo much betray his Maſter, (whoſe creature he was,) as to fruſtrate and make void his will, (whereof himſelf was made chief Executor,) ſubſcribe to extinguiſh his iſſue, as much as poſſibly he could, by diſinheriting his two Daughters, and transferring the Crown to another Line and Family: and all this moſt baſely, and contrary to his conſcience, onely to pleaſe a Subject, and

28. *Hen.* 8. c. 7.

and to avoid some kinde of affliction, which he feared upon the Succession of Queen *Mary*, and against which, 'tis manifest by the frequent changings, lapses, relapses and perjuries, which he made, he was never well armed.

6. It is manifest therefore, that in all places, at home as well as abroad, this Spirit of Reformation hath ever been, and is seditiously pragmatical and dangerous unto Princes and States, whersoever it getteth footing, and is not countenanced and advanced so far, as to bear all the sway it self. It is in this onely respect (not in any other) like the Motto of her, who meerly for temporal and worldly ends, made her self the great Patroness of it, that is, it is *Semper Eadem*, always the same, and never changeth. This was it, which induced them of *Genevah* to expel their Bishop and Leige-Lord; This was it, which induceth them of *Sgethland* to renounce their lawful King; Them of *Holland* to depose their

their Sovereign Prince; This was it, which Sollicited the *Bohemians* to depose the Emperor, their Elected, Crowned, and Acknowledged King, That imprisoned the most Vertuous and Religious Queen and Martyr, *Mary* Queen of *Scotland*, and cast her undeservedly into those calamities, which pursued her to death; This was it, which held out *Rochel* and *Montauban* in defiance against their King; and lastly, that which begat so many conspiracies, commotions, and causes of jealousie unto Queen *Mary* of *England*; So, as within the space of Sixty years, it hath been observed. More Princes have been deposed and persecuted by Protestants, their Subjects, upon the quarrel and difference of Religion, then had bin by the Popes excommunications, or by the attempts and practises of any Subjects Catholikes, in Six hundred before. Of the troubles which have arisen to other Princes upon this occasion, we have spoken somewhat already.

The buſineſs of *Sweden* is defended by one Maſter *T. M.* upon theſe grounds. Firſt, *That it was done by the demand of the whole State.* But this is a manifeſt falſhood. For if you take *the whole State, formally*, that is, for all the people of the Nation, it is certain, that *Sigiſmund* their lawful King, had, not onely a great, but the far greater and better part of the people, well affected to him: If you take it *Virtually*, that is, for ſome general Aſſembly repreſenting the people, legally met and reſolving upon that buſineſs, there never was any ſuch called. The meetings that were, were onely of Duke *Charls* his faction, who, in compariſon of the Kings party both of Nobility and Commons, were but few; yet, as it often happens, the better caſe was more negligently managed: and thoſe for the Duke (who were alſo inclined to Innovation in Religion,) being more active, induſtrious and unanimous in their deſign, made ſhift to ſecure the Military proviſions, and

to

to inveſt themſelves of the chief Strengths of the Kingdom before the others, and ſo prevailed; as *Chytræus* himſelf a Proteſtant Author is ſufficient witneſs. Secondly he ſaith, *it was for the defence of their Priviledges and Liberties.* None of which were violated, as by the ſame *Chytræus* appeareth. Thirdly, *that it was for the fruition of Religion*, That's true indeed and confeſſed; That they might introduce and eſtabliſh a *new Religion*, they renounced their *old King*: which is the thing we charge them with; and wherein whatſoever they did, they did by private Authority and Faction. *Chytræ. Continuat. Crantzii.*

It ſhall ſuffice therefore to ſend this Maſter *T. M.* for his better inſtruction, unto a great Doctor of his own Church, Doctor *Bilſon* above mentioned, who, as we have heard before, holdeth it *tantum non*, as an Article of Faith, that *Princes are not to be depoſed*; which is alſo the judgement of the greateſt Doctor of the *Engliſh* Church, and 7.

hath been so, for these Fifty years and upwards. But we demand of them, is it good Doctrine in the Reign and case of Queen *Elizabeth* onely? and not so, in the Reign and case of Queen *Mary*? It is a position frequently defended in their own Schools, *Dominium non fundatur in gratiâ*; and the contrary Doctrine is as generally exploded in *Wicleff*. The difference then of Religion alters not the Authority and power of Jurisdiction. And *Wyat* with his complices rising in Arms, without and against royal Authority, was a Rebel against Queen *Mary*, as much as *Westmorland* and the rest with them, whom the *English* Chronicles mention, were Rebels in rising against Queen *Elizabeth*. But you will say, Queen *Mary* observed not the Laws of the Realm, she abrogated the Statutes of the First of *Edward* the Sixth, which all the Kingdom approved; and 'tis the profession of good Princes to observe the Laws, and to govern by them. I answer it is true, *Legibus*

gibus ſe Subjectos eſſe, &c. it is a moſt Chriſtian profeſſion of all Kings *to be ſubject to their own Laws*; but it would be underſtood *cum grano ſalis*, ſoberly, and to refer more to *the directive* part or power of them, then to the *corrective* or *punitive*: eſpecially in criminal caſes, if any ſuch ſhould happen; leſt the remedy ſhould prove worſe then the diſeaſe, & the reparation of a private perſon turn to the ruin of the publike, which is contrary to reaſon & the end of government. Beſide in Princes we may conſider their *private Acts* (as I may ſo cal them) of Government, which conſiſt in *the Executive part* of their Office, *viz.* in adminiſtring or dealing juſtice betwixt man and man, and in ſeeing, ſo far as the Law or reaſon requireth of them, that all men under them live well, and according to their ſeveral duties; in *theſe Acts* the Prince may be juſtly ſuppoſed to be bound up to the Law, and that he ought not to do otherwiſe then the Law preſcribes. But who ever accuſed Queen

Mary of breach of Law, or misgovernment in this sense? Happy had it been for some of her Successors and this whole Nation, if they had affected arbitrary Government and Rule, no more then she did. Secondly, we may consider in Princes their *more publike Acts*, which concern all their people in general, and consist in the *Legislative part* of their Office; and in these they are Free, they are absolute, unlimited, and bound to nothing, but onely to proceed upon such advise, as the Constitutions of their several Governments do require: that is, most commonly (and as is best,) upon advise and the consent of their whole people represented and giving them Counsel in Full Parliament. I say, in this capacity the Prince is bound to no Law, but the Law of Reason and a Good Conscience; as to all other respects at liberty to enact or abrogate, to make or repeal what Laws he shall think fit, and most likely to procure publike good,

good, upon ſuch adviſe given. And did not Queen *Mary* ſo proceed? Did ſhe do any thing, but by publike conſent, adviſe and ſupplication of her people in Parliament? Beſide, if Queen *Mary* ſhould be ſo ſubject to her Brothers Laws, as not to alter them upon any reaſon in a legal and due manner, why was not Queen *Elizabeth* ſo ſubject to Hers? yea, why was not King *Edward* the Sixth himſelf ſo ſubject to the Laws of his Father? Why were they altered, and that in his Minority too? When he was a Childe, and underſtood no more, in things of that nature and conſequence, then a Childe? you will ſay, The Religion, which Queen *Mary* brought in, was corrupt and impure, That of her Brother before, and of Queen *Elizabeth* after her was pure, and according to Gods word. But this is your aſſertion onely; we ſay ſtill, That you proceed upon a falſe ſuppoſition, that preſumption and ſelfconceit rules the greateſt part of

your roſt. That thing *viz.* Whether Queen *Maries* or Queen *Elizabeths* Religion were beſt, is the grand queſtion betwixt us: And as it is certain, that it was never yet by any general and orderly Counſel, no not of Proteſtants, determined on your ſide; ſo we are ſure, and the world, together with your ſelves know, it hath been often, legally, ſolemnly determined for us, by all ſorts of Counſels, Provincial, National, Oecumenical. And we pray, what reaſon can be given, why the Judgement of Parliament reſtoring Catholike Religion untler Queen *Mary*, with the conſent and adviſe of the chief and beſt of the whole Clergy of the Nation, ſhould not be as good, as that, which under Queen *Elizabeth* aboliſh'd it, not onely contrary to the Queens Oath taken at her Coronation, but without the adviſe or conſent of ſo much as any one Biſhop or ſpiritual Prelate of the whole Kingdom, who yet in a buſineſs of that nature, *viz.* concerning

ning Religion, were by all Laws, both of * God and of the Nation, principally to be consulted with. * *Malach.* 2. 7. *Heb.* 13. 7. 8, 17.

But let us gratifie our Adversaries, as much as may be; Let us suppose the worst, *viz.* that Queen *Mary* had indeed erred in the introduceing of some kinde of superstitions, ought she therefore presently to be censured by Ministers? or deposed and put down by a *Wyat*? God forbid. *Solomon* himself, a wise and a great King, did fall into grievous sins, and particularly into the grosest of those kinds, whereof they presume to censure Queen *Mary*. He had many Hundreds of strange Wives, contrary to the Law of *Moses*; and by reason of them fell to Idolatry beyond measure. The Queen never took but one Husband, and he a Catholike Prince, of the same Religion with her self, and with the whole Christian world beside, except onely some few Provinces, which Heresie had lately corrupted. Yet neither 1.

did the Prieſt or people take upon them to depoſe ſuch a King as *Solomon*? They left him to him, who is the Supream and moſt proper Judge of Kings, and who, in the time appointed by his Divine Providence, raiſed up *Jeroboam* to chaſtiſe him in his Son. Yea when *Julian* himſelf, of a Chriſtian Emperor, became Apoſtate, and perſecuted the Chriſtians of his time with all maner of vexation and cruelty, which either policy or malice could deviſe, neither the people, nor the Paſtors of the Church, (though they ſharply reproved and inveighed againſt his proceedings, yet none of them) took up Arms againſt him, none went about to deprive him either of Dominion or Life. And if they thought it not expedient or becoming Chriſtians to do ſo againſt a Tyrant, acting Tyrannically, and onely by the violence of his own exorbitant paſſions, without any order or colour of Law, and as no juſt Prince ought to govern, how much leſs would

would they have thought it lawful, and how little would they approve it to be done againſt ſuch Princes, as govern legally, and do nothing, concerning Religion or otherwiſe, but according as the Laws and and publike Conſtitutions, of their ſeveral Kingdoms do direct and inable them to do. He that proclaymed the Prerogative of Kings in theſe terms *Vos Eſtis Dii, I have ſaid, Yee are Gods*, ſurely intended to teach the world rather a leſſon of obedience then rebellion. And there is no Prince or State in the world, Let them countenance what Sect, or Profeſſion of Religion ſoever, they pleaſe, but ſhall finde it, at one time or another, a neceſſary Bulwark for them to retreat unto againſt the inundations of popular fury. Who doth deny, but that it is neceſſary, that the governments of all Princes whatſoever ſhould be regulated and moderated by Laws? and that all perſons in Authority do obſerve all rules whatſoever, that are proper for

for them, or prescribed to them, by those to whom that power belongeth. We pretend not, to enhaunce the Authority of Princes so far, as to exempt them from the rule of Law, or to make them Arbitrary in their government; but this we say, *Vos Estis Dii*, in relation unto Princes, and all Persons established *in Supream Authority* justly, that is, by the will of Divine Providence, and consent of the people, is a great exemption of them from any popular Cognizance. For what does it intimate, but that * Allmighty God himself hath made them *Gods unto the people*, that is to say, persons of Knowledge, Experience, Foresight, Care, Providence, and other abilities Intellectual (which are the natural and genuine principles of government) competent and sufficient for the government of people, (who are not otherwise, generally speaking *Et pro majori parte*, able to govern themselves in civil society,) and for their preservation in peace and

* *Egodixi.*

and quietneſs, which is the end of Government. We think, it is moſt proper for God onely to ſay *Transferam Regna de gente in gentem.* Revolutions of Governments and Tranſlating of one Kingdom to another are the Extraordinary Diſpenſations of Divine Providence, and for reaſons onely known unto his ſupream and ſecret wiſdom. Which although they be acted, that is, brought to paſs by the hands of men, yea through their infirmities and many times blamable paſſions, as experience often ſheweth, and as in the caſe of King *Rehoboam*, the Son of *Solomon*, (1 *Reg.* 12. 16.) may ſeem plain; yet are not the common people licenſed hereby to run upon any irregular deſigns of their own head, and to renounce their Governors headily and haſtily of themſelves, for every light greivance and miſgovernment, that may ſeem to afflict them. To remove Tyrants and oppreſſion from a people is the work of Divine Mercy,

cy, as it is of his juſtice to permit them to oppreſs; and from him only muſt they expect deliverance, abiding in the mean while with patience, until his Divine hand ſhall appear, leading them to ſuch means, as they may with juſtice and good order uſe to the procuring of their liberty.

The

The Second Part.

JERUSALEM,

OR

The Obedience, Loyalty, and Conformity OF CATHOLIKES unto Publike Order.

HItherto we have insisted onely upon the Doctrines and practises of those, who call themselves Reformed Churches, or Protestants, in the charge of Rebellion and Tumult against the Civil Magistrate; by which, how tolerable and quiet they are in any Kingdom or State, whose Religion 1.

Religion is not framed according to their Mode, the indifferent Reader will judge. It remaineth now, that we make good the contrary, concerning our ſelves, and ſhew, that thoſe vertues, (which we pretend to be the true and proper Characters of our Religion) *viz.* Humility, Devotion, Obedience, Order, Patience, &c. are more generally and more conſtantly exerciſed by Catholikes, in times of Tryal, then by any other Sect or Sort of people whatſoever. This we intend to do, but not ſo much Theoretically, or by way of any long and ſpeculative diſcourſe, as Practically, Hiſtorically, and by way of inſtance, ſhewing what the behavior and practiſe of Catholikes have been in this caſe, upon occaſions given. Neither ſhall we range far abroad into the world, becauſe that would be leſs pertinent to our main purpoſe, (which is onely to juſtifie our ſelves in this point, ſo far as reaſon and truth will give us leave,) and enlarge

our

our discourse beyond its intended bounds: But we shall content our selves onely with domestick examples, and that experience, which the Catholikes of this Nation have given of themselves, from time to time in this kinde.

What kinde of people they were anciently in this Land, in the time of King *Lucius* and the *Brittons*, I shall not need to relate, but refer you to the Ecclesiasticall Histories of those times; the rather because the *Centurists* of *Magdeburgh*, and Master *Fox* in his Acts and Monuments will have these Catholikes to be Protestants and of their Church: which, (though it be very false, yet) I may not ingage for the cleering of that point now. Nor shall I insist any longer upon those times of the *Saxons*, after they were converted to Christianity, to shew their vertues and singular devotion towards God: and how happily, by means thereof, the Church and Common-wealth did grow up together unto that perfection 2.

perfection of Spiritual and Temporal glory, which they injoyed under that Blessed Prince and Saint, King *Edward* the Confessor. I shall not tell you, how highly the good Prelates of the Church were then reverenced by the people, nor how much their holy Counsels and Authority did conduce to the happy government of the State. It sufficeth, that many old *Saxon* Laws and other Monuments yet upon record, Venerable *Bede*, and the Stories of those times, with other Modern Authors are witnesses of it beyond all exception. From King *Edward* the Confessor downwards to King *Henry* the Eighth, there is no man of judgement will affirm, or thinketh, that any other Religion was known in *England*, but the Roman-Catholike, that is, the same, that had been long before planted here by Saint *Austin* and those *Good men* his followers, who were sent hither to convert the *English-Saxons*, by Saint *Gregory* the Great, Bishop of *Rome*: for which charity

Lamb. Archaion. Camden. Spelm. Concil.

charity towards our Nation Doctor *Whitaker* giveth him thanks, and profeſſeth, *it was a great Benefit, and for ever moſt gratefully to be remembred.* In all which time although the Clergy made Canons, and managed all things pertaining to Religion, by an Authority of their own, that is to ſay, given them by God, and derived to them from an other origin, then that of the State or Supream Magiſtrate Temporal; yet never did the Kings of this Realm finde them generally otherwiſe then obedient unto their Government, and ready to ſerve them, in ſuch capacity, as the Laws and duties of their function permitted, and to contribute their beſt aſſiſtance to the ſupport of the Eſtate Royal, and of the Kingdom wherein they lived. It is true, through the malice of the Devil and Inſtigation of ſome Enemies of the Church, ſome of them, for the aſſerting of their legal Immunities, and to preſerve the Liberty of their ſpiritual Juriſdiction entirely

entirely Free, as it ought, they were dirven now and then, (yet very seldom, in comparison of such a long tract of time, as we instance in,) unto some vehement and earnest contestation with their Princes, and though much further then was pleasing to them, yet, I suppose, not beyond terms of due respect, and the Authority of their Function: much less did they endeavor to stir up rebellion, or instigate the people to sedition and commotions against their Princes; nor did they ever, upon their own account solely, concur in any
3. thing of that nature.

The first King, that ever gave cause in this Kingdom, effectually and in the face of the world, to trie the admirable patience, obedience, and loyalty of Catholikes, was King *Henry* the Eighth, *Flagellum Dei*, that scourge of God, to the Church of *England*, and all good Catholikes therein; yet outwardly professing the same Religion in most things with Catholikes. This he did first by a pretended Accusation

Accuſation of the Clergy, to be fallen in a *Præmunire*, becauſe (*Scil*) they did that, which all their predeceſſors the Biſhops and Clergy of *England*, for many Hundreds of years confeſſedly, had done without any exception taken, *viz.* for acknowledging the power Legantine of Cardinal *Wolſey*; which yet the King himſelf for his own ends, and in his own caſe, had firſt of all procured. 2. upon the Statute of ſupremacy. And 3. by ſuppreſſion of the Abbies. Theſe were his Three firſt breaches, by which the Foundation, ſtrength, and glory of the Catholike Church in *England* became afterwards utterly ruinated. By the firſt his way was levelled to the Second; and the Second obtained, gave him power and authority to compaſs the Third. By the Firſt indeed onely the Clergy ſmarted in a fine of an Hundred thouſand pound; The ſecond lay heavy upon the Clergy and Temporalty both. But by the Third, *viz.* the ſuppreſſion of the Abbies

and

and Religious-houſes, if we conſider the infinite prejudice, which the poor Commonalty ſuffered thereby, both in point of ſpiritual and temporal intereſt, the whole Kingdom might be ſaid, to be worſe then conquered by him, that is, Robbed, Spoiled, Enſlaved to the exorbitancy of his ſole Will, Prodigality, Luſt, and Tyranny. And all this done to be revenged on the Pope, who condeſcended not to humor him in the buſineſs of his marriage. Therefore, and to advance his own power and greatneſs, That Authority and Juriſdiction, which had alway been acknowledged, as ſacred, by the *Engliſh*, ever ſince the *Engliſh* were Chriſtians, muſt in a moment be abandoned, diſclaimed, abjured; himſelf by an unheard of and fatal Ambition, inſtead thereof, made *Head of the Church*: and all perſons who out of ſcruple of Conſcience, refuſed to conform to ſuch grand, ſudden, and ſacrilegious Innovations, and to ſwear they knew not what,

what, were cut ſhorter by the head, executed at Tyborn, impriſoned, baniſhed, and put into ſuch condition, as he was ſure, they ſhould not oppoſe him.

The ground of the *Præmunire* was at firſt onely a quarrel, which he pick't againſt the Cardinal *Wolſey*, but afterwards ſtretched it upon the Tenters, and made it reach the whole Clergy, who being thereupon Summoned into the Kings Bench, the buſineſs was ſo aggravated there by the Lawyers, *The Kings Learned Counſel*, that in the Convocation houſe, they preſently concluded to ſubmit themſelves to the King, and offer him no leſs ſum then One hundred thouſand pound for their pardon. This was look't upon by the Chriſtian world as a Prodigy, That ſo many Shepherds ſhould be afraid of one Wolfe: And though it becomes us not hear to cenſure, whether they did as they ought, yet certainly this weakneſs of the Paſtors boded no good to the Flock; and it is obſerved 4.

observed, that neither, themſelves, nor the Church, nor Religion ever proſpered in *England* afterwards. However the King accepts of their offer, and ſigns their Pardon; but with a fetch far worſe then the firſt. For under a pretence of procuring this Pardon to be confirmed to them in Parliament, he draws them in there (how willingly or unwillingly, let the world judge,) to acknowledge him *Supream Head of the Church*. It was a courſe, even at that time, not thought agreeable to Juſtice or Honor. For, as we ſaid, the Cardinal *Wolſey* had the Kings Licenſe for the exerciſe of his Legantine power, both under the Kings hand, and the Great Seal of *England*; and was employed by the Kings particular Mandate and pleaſure, in the quality of Legat to ſit with the other Legat, Cardinal *Campegius*, and examine the buſineſs of his marriage. And could the Divorce have been granted according to the Kings minde, it is eaſily

conjectured,

conjectured the Cardinal had never been queſtioned for his Legat-ſhip. Touching the Second of Supremacy, All the Subjects of *England* ever acknowledged that the Crown and State of *England*, *quoad Temporalia*, in Temporal affairs and matters is independent of any other power, but of that Tranſcendent Majeſtie, which ſaith, *Per me reges regnant*; and this to the intent, that Kings and all Governors, conſidering, who will one day take their *Audit*, may be more careful to rule with Juſtice and common equity, without partiality, paſſion, prejudice againſt any mans perſon, further then his crimes againſt Publike Order, Common Right, and the Peace of the State ſhall make him obnoxious: and by ſo doing may keep their accounts ſtreight, againſt the *day of Account*. And on the other ſide that Subjects remembring their duty, and who it is, that layeth this *jugum ſuave*, the ſweet Yoke of good

Government upon their Shoulders, might be induced to obey with more fidelity, and prompt affection. But the Question, which King *Henry* (the first of all Kings, Princes or States of Christendom) propounded to his Clergy and People in Parliament, concerned matters purely Spiritual, and wherein, not himself onely and his Subjects at home, but all Christian Kings, Princes, States, and people in the world, were concerned. And therefore required far greater deliberation, I say not, then was used, (for in truth that was little or none at all; the Kings pleasure and resolution was known, and that, as the world went then, was sufficient:) but, I say, then could possibly be used in *England*; which was then but one single Kingdom, and a small Province of Christendom.

5. And for the suppression of the Abbeys and Religious houses, by that Act and this other of Supremacy together, the Clergy of *England* were brought absolutely into Captivity

Captivity, and ſtood meerly (as they have done ever ſince) at the pleaſure of the King, and of the State. Their Poſſeſſions (the greateſt part of them) were ſeized, their Goods forfeited, their Churches profaned and ſacked, and upon the ſpoils thereof, together with the ſale of the Veſtments, Chalices, Bells, and other the Moveables and Ornaments belonging to them, the *Augmentation Court* was erected. For the King ſeeing this extraordinary paſſiveneſs and ſubmiſſion of the Clergy, could never think he had power ſufficient, till he had more then enough; and therefore having already diſcharged his conſcience from all Bonds, but ſuch onely as himſelf ſhould think good to tie, he took liberty to commit ſuch outrages and violence upon Sacred things, as no age before him, nor ſince can parallel. For firſt, *viz.* *Anno* 27. of His Reign he appoints the Secretary *Cromwel*, and Doctor *Leigh* (as his Commiſſioners) to viſit the Abbyes; and they, by

vertue of their ſaid Commiſſion, firſt take out all the Plate, cheifeſt Jewels and Reliques belonging to thoſe houſes, and ſeize them to the Kings uſe: Then they diſmiſs all ſuch perſons Religious, as were under the age of Four and twenty years, and had a deſire to be at liberty in the world, *Anno* 28. All the ſmaller Religious houſes, of the value of Two hundred pounds *per annum* and under, were given to the King by Parliament with all their Lands and Hereditaments; and of theſe the number was not leſs then Three hundred ſeventy and ſix, who were able to diſpend *per annum* to the benefit of the poor and ſervice of the Publike, not leſs then Three thouſand two hundred pounds of old Rents, of Aſſize, beſide their Moveables: Which being undervalued and ſold at mean rates, yet amounted to above One hundred thouſand pounds. The Religious themſelves, and all people depending on them, (which were not a few,) were on a ſudden outed,

outed, and left unprovided even of Habitation; above Ten thousand persons, for no particular crimes charged or proved against them, turned out of their own doors, and driven to seek their fortune, where they could. A thing which compassionated the very common people themselves, (though not a little alienated in their affections at that time, towards Monasticks, more then they were wont to be;) to see so many persons compelled to Beg and live by Almes, who by their bountiful and constant Hospitality had formerly releived many.

Anno 30. of His Reign some of the greater Abbies, *viz.* *Battle*-Abby and the Abby of *Lewis* in *Sussex*, *Martin* Abby in *Surry*, *Stratford* in *Essex* were suppressed, and all things belonging to them converted to the Kings use. For indeed they were forced in some sort to proceed thus politickly in their work of desolation, and to carry it on by degrees, by reason of the Com-

monalty; who, though they ſtirred not, yet they ſtood amazed, as it were, murmuring as lowd as they durſt, and were not a little unſatisfied at ſuch doings. But in the years 32. and 33. generally all the Monaſteries of *England*, of what value ſoever, went to wrack, and were deſtroyed; The Lands belonging to Saint *John's* of *Jeruſalem* were likewiſe given to the King, and the Corporation of thoſe Knights quite diſſolved: Though to turn out theſe with ſome kinde of contentment, there was, as ſome ſay, certain Penſions during life diſtributed among them, to the value of Two thouſand eight hundred and ſeventy pounds. In *Anno* 37. was the laſt ſweep, which King *Harry* made. For then all the Chauntries in any part of the Kingdom (which were many and numerous,) All Churches and places Collegiate, yea the very Hoſpitals (which were built and endowed by their ſeveral Founders, onely, and expreſly

for

for the relief of the poor,) were yet given to the King, and permitted wholly to his order and disposing. The value of Church Lands in *England* at this time amounted to above Three hundred and twenty thousand one hnndred and eighty pounds *per annum*; and of it the King took into his own possession, and apropriated to the Crown to the value of One hundred sixty one thousand one hundred pounds yearly rent: The rest, it seems, was sold, or exchanged, or distributed among Favourites. Lastly, to abuse the poor Commons perfectly, and more easily to wipe them of those great and constant advantages, as well Temporal as Spiritual, which they received from these Religious places while they stood, a proposition is made in Parliament by the Projectors and Sharers in this worke, and 'tis given out also to the people abroad, That out of the Revenues of these Lands thus given to the King, a standing Army, for

defence of the Kingdom and all other Military occaſions of State ſhould be maintained, of no leſs then Forty thouſand men, beſides Forty Earls, Sixty Barons, and Three thouſand Knights for the Command and Conduct of this Army, where need ſhould be: So that the Commons of *England*, by this means, ſhould never, heare of Tax or Subſidy any more. This indeed was as pleaſing a bait for the people, as could be deviſed, and it took accordingly: They bit willingly at it; But the Hook ſticks in their jaws to this day. Such a motion as this (to note in a word by the way) was made in that Parliament of *Henry* the fourth which they called *the Lay-mens Parliament*, by thoſe which countenanced *Wicleff*, and loved the Lands, far better then they did the Religion of the Church: But their deſigns at that time were defeated by the Stout and Religious oppoſition of *Thomas Arundel* Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and other Prelates

lates joyning with him. Though now there were an unfortunate and unworthy *Thomas* found, (yet sitting in that Seat of *Canterbury*) ready to side with them for his own carnal ends, and to countenance the *Wicleffists* of these times, that is, those *Lutheran* and malicious Spirits, who by their Libels, (*The Supplication of Beggars* well answered by Sir *Thomas Moores Supplication of Souls*) and other wicked practises, went about to destroy the Church, and extripate true Religion.

Adde here unto the Kings natural Inclination to vain glory; which was very great, and begat those prodigal expences, which he used towards his Favorites and Flatterers: And these could not be long maintained but by extraordinary support; which being not to be had in any way of Legality and Justice, Avarice at last, and many other vices, which he was fallen to, prompted him to fall upon the Church. The Lords and Courtiers 7.

could not dislike the motion, knowing what a rich Prey would fall to be divided among them. Especially this pleased the principal Secretary of State (afterward Lord Privy Seal, Lord High Chamberlain of *England*, and Earl of *Essex*) who being a man of great experience, and of a deep reach in worldly policies, knew full well, that such a confused Innovation as this, and so full of Spoyle, would be infinitely advantagious to him, and a Ladder, to clime at ease unto what Wealth or Honor he could wish. He therefore instigates the King with all might and main to go through with the Action, and to stand stoutly to his Prerogative and profit, knowing his conscience was already buried in *Anne Bolens* Tombe. To this end, and the better to pave the way to his evil designs, (Sacriledge and Blood not seldom going along together,) Three of the principal Abbots of the Kingdom, and Barons of Parliament, *viz.* the Abbots of *Glastenbury*, *Reading*,

Reading, and *Bury*, Stout, Vertuous, and Religious men, and likelieſt to oppoſe ſuch practiſes, were taken away before hand, being condemned and executed upon the Statute of Supremacy; as well to prevent the Biſhops mediating for them, as to terrifie the other Religious of the Kingdom from oppoſing the Kings deſigns.

But may we ask, *quo jure, quo titulo*, by what colour of Law or Right was this ſuppreſſion of the Abbies made and done? I cannot tell, what it may do now, but certainly to have mov'd ſuch a queſtion then, it would have coſt a man his head. It is certain, theſe Abbies held their Lands in *Frank Almoigne*, and in Fee, They were quietly poſſeſſed of them by the Donations and Guifts of many *Saxon*, *Engliſh*, *Norman* Kings, Princes and other Subjects, who were their Founders; continued legally by preſcription in them; admitted, acknowledged and eſtabliſhed by all Laws; beſide the acceſſory Charters

Charters of many ſucceeding Princes, who confirmed them, and moſt commonly added to them. They held all their Lands, Immunities and Eſtates by the ſame Laws, Authority, and Right, by which the Temporal Lords held their Baronies, as *Magna Charta* 9. of *Hen.* 3. and the confirmation thereof 28. *Ed.* 1. do abundantly teſtifie: where it is granted, *that the Church of* England *ſhall be Free*, and have *all her Liberties* preſerved to her *inviolable*. Chap. 2. any Judgement given againſt them is declared to be Null and Void. And chap. 4. The Biſhops are ordered to Excommunicate all ſuch, as ſhall ſeek to infring thoſe Charters; as alſo they did 30. *Ed.* 1. including all thoſe, that ſhould either make, or procure to be made any Statutes contrary to thoſe Liberties. Whence we may note Two things, The Firſt, that as Excommunication is the higheſt puniſhment, which can be Inflicted upon a man *Spiritually*; ſo the State cannot declare its deteſtation

testation and dislike of any crime more then by requiring or ordering such a punishment for it. The Second, That as by one and the same Charter, both the Church and the Temporalty held their Liberties; so that which gave, or pretended to give, the King power to abrogate and destroy the one, could not, in point of reason or justice, but make the other obnoxious. In the Leidger-book of *Peterborrough* are to be seen all King *Johns* Grants and Confirmations more fully and at large, then they are set forth in any Printed Book. Let any man but read them seriously and with attention, and he will wonder at the proceedings of later times. What need I remember that same Law called *Sententia lata super confirmatione Chartarum* by *Ed.* 1. or the 42. of *Ed.* 3. chap. 8. where it is declared that any *Statute whatsoever* made contrary to *Magna Charta, shall be void.* or the confirmation of all these in 1, 6, 7, 8. of *Rich.* 2. and in 4. of *Hen.* 4.

All

All which good Laws were intended ſurely to prevent Sacrilcdge and Tyranny in ſucceeding times, and to ſecure both Church and people from the encroachments of injuſtice.

The King knew very well he had no Title to any of theſe things, but by colour and conceſſion of Parliament; (and how far a Parliament hath power to give away the Lands or Intereſts of a Third Perſon, neither heard nor convicted orderly of any offence, that ſhould deſerve ſuch ſentence, is a thing to be conſidered: Surely, is it not?) Therefore to make his Title appear ſtronger in the eye of the World, *Anno* 31. of his Reign, he procureth an Act to be made in Parliament, expreſſing, how that ſince the Act of *Anno* 27. the Religious Houſes themſelves had *voluntarily, and of their own good wills, without conſtraint*, in due courſe of Law, and by writings of Record under their Covent-Seals, given and confirmed to the King, their

Lands,

Lands, Houſes, Rents, Revenues, and all Rights whatſoever; yea, to this Statute they are ſaid to conſent, as to an Act of their own ſeeking and ſuit; and you may ſee among the Records of the *Augmentation Court*, a great Cheſt full of particular Surrenders, made by the Abbots and Covents under their hands & ſeals to this purpoſe. But is it not a likely tale, that out of their *bounty* and *good will*, they would renounce their Livings, and become beggars? Indeed unto ſo gracious a Prince, as he was become towards them at that time, it was the leſs marvail. I my ſelf did once deliver my purſe upon *Salisbury*-plains; and though I could not commend the honeſty of thoſe that took it, yet was I fain for a while to complement their humanity towards me, that they uſed me no worſe. You will ſay, how then came it to be done? why would the Abbots, and other Religious give away their Lands, if they were not willing? I anſwer, becauſe they could

hold

hold them no longer: They saw themselves generally deserted and forsaken by the Commons, and knew very well what the King was resolved to do, by that which he had done already. And therefore to make some petty accommodations for themselves, perhaps by granting or renewing of Leases, or otherwise, (which the King for his own ends, *viz.* to make the work more plausible and came, was content to connive at, and which, we may be sure, came not to much) they thought best to give that which they were otherwise sure to lose. And by doing so, rather then by using any kinde of contestation, they shewed the simplicity of their obedience to be such, as became their Holy Profession; and the King shewed, how little he feared God, or regarded his Honour in the censure of the World. Whosoever therefore considers the business impartially, shall finde this great conquest of Religious Persons to deserve little Triumph; and that the augment-

augmentation of Revenue and Treasure by it, being so palpably Sacrilegious, and contrary to all acknowledged Law, Divine and Humane, proved to be *Aurum Tholosanum*, a curse to him that took it, and upon which the judgement of God hath visibly attended ever since.

Nor is it strange, that it should; for first, what saith the Scripture? *Is it not a curse to him that devoureth sacred things, and after vows to make enquiry?* And what saith History, and the experience of all Ages? Did ever Sacrilege go unpunished? *Marcus Crassus* robbed the Temple at *Hierusalem*, but is not his sad and disastrous end noted by *Josephus*? *Herod* likewise opened the Sepulcher of King *David*, and took thence much spoil; but into what great miseries and misfortunes he fell afterwards, the same *Josephus* relateth. *Urraca*, a Gothish King, going to rob but one Chappel of St. *Isidore* in *Spain*, and that in a case of necessity too, as might be

10. Prov. 20. 25. Lib. 18. C. 8. Lib. 16. C. 11.

pre-

pretended, *viz.* to defray the charge of war, and to pay his Army; yet his very guts burst out of his belly in the Church-porch, as the History saith. *Leo* the Fourth, Emperor, taking a precious Gem out of the Coronet of St. *Sophia* at *Constantinople*, which had been dedicated to it, died himself not long after of a Carbuncle. *Sigon. de regn. Italiæ, Lib.* 1. So *Gondericus* King of the *Vandals*, when he took *Sivill*, took also the spoils of the Churches, and seized upon all their riches; but, to revenge it, the Devil seized and possessed him. *Tarapha. in Honorio.* What need I alledge more? *Julian* the Apostate was also a Church-robber, most tyrannical and notorious, but his end is well known. And so it is, what misery befell *Heliodorus*, the Treasurer of King *Selencus*, for the like crimes, though but attempted, against the Sanctuary at *Hierusalem*, 2 *Maccab. chap.* 3. *Nicephorus Phocas* the Emperor was the neerest parallel to King *Henry* that we meet with in all

Histor. gen. of Spain.

Tripart. Histor. lib. 6. c. 31.

all the Eccleſiaſtical Story. For he reſumed all donations that had been made unto Monaſteries and Churches in his time; but ſuch afflictions and furies haunted him for it ever after, that his Succeſſor *Baſilius* (though himſelf none of the beſt Emperors that have reigned) was yet careful to abrogate thoſe Lawes of *Phocas*, among the firſt Acts which he did, and as the root of all publike calamities of thoſe times.

Nor did indeed King *Henry* himſelf finde any better ſucceſs to attend his impieties. Did he not, (like that ſacrilegious *Herod* mentioned before) live jealous of his Wives, and not confident, even of thoſe his Friends, which he had ſo much enriched with the ſpoils of the Church? His exorbitant luſts, which were the original cauſe of all the miſchief, became at laſt his torments. For after his Divorce from his firſt and lawful Queen *Katharine*, no wife could pleaſe him long; few of them could get protection for

11.

for their heads, and none of them all live long either secure or joyful. Beside, did his Exchequer thrive any better for the Augmentations? Was his Treasury any whit better furnisht, then his Predecessors before him, Catholike Princes, and Favorers of the Church? Nay, was there ever King of *England* more necessitated then he was in point of Treasure, and that immediatly as it were, and in very few years after those great spoils? Did ever King of *England* before him lye more heavy upon his subjects in matter of Taxes, Subsidies, Loanes, then he did after that? Did ever any of them use more ignoble and unprincely wayes to raise money then he? Our own Chronicles, and the much base money which he coined, doe sufficiently shew how things went with him in that regard. But that which may seem most of all to be noted, as an argument of Gods displeasure against him, was the frustrating of that, which was pretended to be his chief project and design

design in all those frequent marryings and unmarryings, *viz.* Succession and Issue. All his hopefull Stem and Branches have been taken away one after another without Issue; and some of them but unhappily too: And his Crown and Scepter translated, much contrary to his intentions, unto another Name and Nation, God suffering him, as a blinde man, to erre in his ends, and wander in all his courses. Yea all that great Treasure, which he raked together upon the ruins of the Church; how was it employed? How spent, but in the excess of vanity and evil? Neither to any honour of the Realm, nor to the ease of his subjects, nor to the maintenance of souldiers, nor to the relief of the poor, (all which were pretended mainly when the business was to be done) but in Tiltings, Triumphs, Mummeries, Masquings, in pleasing and enriching his Mistresses, and to satisfie the greedy appetites and expectations of those sollicitors

tors of his Lusts. In a word, *Bolen*, and Prodigality consumed all. And touching those who were thought to be the occasion and chief instruments of these disorders, that is to say, Cardinal *Wolsey*, and the Lord *Cromwel*, when they had served his turn sufficiently, and were grown rich, they were themselves, upon pretended, and but light occasions, taken, with disgrace and misfortune turned out of the World, leaving their Estates at his mercy. And for himself, when he had wearied his subjects with a long, chargeable, and inglorious Reign, and that he found his soul, as much oppressed with the guilt of innumerable heinous sins, as his body was become unweildy and troublesome to others, through his excessive intemperance, he died, as some good Authors say, desirous to repent, and to be reconciled to the Church; but what effect his desires had, (which we wish might be to the saving of his soul) is only known to God.

Thuan.

But

But what course think we would 12.
the *Lutherans* of *Germany*, the *Confessorians* of *Genevah* and *France*, the *Brethren* of *Scotland*, have taken in this case? What would they have done, should they have found themselves at any time oppressed, abused, robbed of their Rights and Interests, and harrassed with injuries, as the Catholikes of *England* were, by such a Tyrant as this? Yet the Catholikes took all patiently, made no mutinies, raised no tumults, no insurrections that were considerable, or generally owned. It is acknowledged even by our adversaries, that these Abbyes and their Dependants were almost the third part of the Realm, men of understanding, power and interest, their Revenues great, their Tenants many and rich; They were not a little favored also by the people, for their constant Hospitalities and good House-keeping among them, well esteemed likewise generally amongst the Nobility and Gentry. Besides, the Knights of St. *Johns* of

Jeru-

Jeruſalem (who found themſelves in the ſame *predicament* with the reſt) by their Fraternities and Interests abroad, might have procured great troubles to the King, eſpecially by the Pope and Emperors aſſiſtance; yet to ſhew the world what they were, to give an example of *the patience of true Iſraelites*, and due obedience of good Subjects; yea, to imitate, in ſome ſort, the Divine pattern of their Maſters meekneſs, they reſolved rather to endure Gods juſt puniſhment upon them, in the Kings great injuſtice, then to Arm themſelves into the Field, like ſo many *Lutherans*, *Calviniſts*, or *Geuſes*, againſt their lawful Sovereign, having no lawful order or authority ſo to do. The Arms they took up, were not *Zuinglius* his Sword, nor *Beza*'s Piſtols, but the ancient, and moſt proper Arms of true Chriſtians, *Prayers and Tears*, Submiſſion, Reſignation, Patience under the rod of God, and of a wicked King. I ſhall add this onely Argument more, of the incon-

inconveniences which followed upon these proceedings of the King, and of the provocation which Catholike people had under him, if it had been possible to be put into disorder, *viz.* That although the number of Gentry were somewhat encreased by the suppression of Abbyes, and alienation of Church Lands, yet the Rents of Lands were presently, and very much enhaunced thereupon, Inclosures were set on foot, Depopulations generally made, the price of all things raised, to the extreme detriment of the poorer sort of people ever since, as the Protestants themselves complained; and the Yeomanry infinitely decayed, who before this were accounted, and found to be upon all occasions, the Honor and Strength of the Nation. *Aschām. Epist. ad. Protect.*

Titulus Secundus.

1. HItherto Schiſme, and Sacriledge annexed to it, chiefly reigned; but the ſecond plague was the utter ruin and extinction of Religion. For by abuſe of the name and authority of King *Edward*, the very Church it ſelf was entirely ſubverted, Religion abſolutely changed, Hereſie introduced, and eſtabliſhed in the full, open, and publike profeſſion thereof: And we might ſay, the craft and malice of the Devil, whoſe work it is to corrupt true Religion, & confound States, herein moſt perfectly appeared. For though indeed the way to Hereſie, and all publike diſorder, were ſufficiently levelled and made plain by King *Henry* the Eighth, (who onely, by reaſon of his greatneſs, and imperious cruelty, was fit to begin ſuch a work) yet

yet Religion it ſelf was ſuffered to ſtand a while longer, at leaſt in the general and more viſible parts of it; he knowing well, that all could not be effected at once, and that it was neceſſary for him to ſeduce States, as he doth ſouls, *gradatim*, by degrees, opportunity, and ſucceſſion of time: And being alſo confident, that if thoſe ſorts of Piety, and true Chriſtian-Catholike Devotion, that is, the Religious Houſes, were once razed, the Church in *England* brought under a Lay head, and by conſequence the ſheep made Governors of their Shepherds, he ſhould eaſily upon a ſecond attempt there, and by ſome other hand, overthrow Religion it ſelf.

King *Henry* at his death had appointed by will ſixteen Executors, who, during the minority of his Son, King *Edward*, ſhould be, as it were, his Guardians and Counſellors, for the better governing of the Realm. Among theſe, one, (who made himſelf afterward Prin-

2.

cipal) was the Lord *Edward Seymour*, Earl of *Hartford*: who being the Kings Uncle by the Mother-side, procured himself in a short time to be made Protector; and by that means gat, as he thought, a dispensation from his Joynt Executorship with the others, and demeaned himself now in all things concerning the Affaires of the Realm, as their Superior. A thing which King *Henry* least of all intended, rather he had provided, with as much caution as was possible, against the encroaching of any one upon the rest, under any title or pretence soever. But this was the way to bring about some further designes, intended by that Party, which advanced the Protector to that dignity, and which the other, and more honest part of the Councel, did not, either so providently foresee, or so faithfully resist, as they ought to have done. One of the first things which the Protector set on foot, after the Protectorship was secured to him, was Innovati-

on of Religion, abolishing the *Old* Catholike, and introducing a *New*, under the title of Reformation: Not so much out of any great preciseness that was ever observed in him, or devotion that he was thought to have, more one way then another, but because he was thirsty, and desired to drink to the bottom of the Cup, which in King *Harries* time it seems he had but onely tasted. There was yet some Game in his eye, which he intend-to bring into Toyls, *viz.* some few remains of Church-Lands, Collegiate-Lands, and Hospitals, which he could not compass, or draw into possession, by any Engine better then that pretence of reforming Religion. *Cranmer*, that unworthy Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, was his Right Hand, and chief Assistant in the work, although but a few months before he was of King *Harries* Religion, yea, a Patron and Prosecutor of the Six Articles. To this end, *viz.* the more to amuze the people, and, as they

thought, to give some strength and countenance to what they meant to set up, a couple of strangers, Religious men indeed by profession, but such as were long since run from their Orders, that is, *Peter Martyr*, and *Bucer* must be sent for as far as *Germany*, and placed in the Divinity Chairs at *Cambridge* and *Oxford*: That the world might see, how contrary, not onely the Pastors of the Church and Clergy, but even all the learned men in both the Universities, and of the whole Kingdom generally, were to his proceedings. By these two Apostate Friers, together with *Cranmer*, *Ridley*, *Latimer*, and some others, was a new Liturgie framed, and the old abolished, together with that Religion, which had been so many hundreds of years observed in this Nation with great happiness and honour. The Protector, though powerful of himself, by abuse and pretence of the Kings name, in all things which he did, (although the King were but

but a Child of nine years old, was yet well seconded by the Duke of *Northumberland*, and by the Admiral his onely Brother, by the Marquis of *Northampton*, *&c.* all of them persons (seemingly at least) much inclined to Reformation, and by them he overbore all the rest that opposed him, or were any thing contrary to his designs: As there were many, both eminent and wise men, and equally intrusted in the publike affairs with himself, could things have been carried rightly; In particular, the Lord Privy Seal, the Lord St. *John* of *Basing*, Bishop *Tonstall*, Sir *Anthony Brown*, and that wise Secretary Sir *William Paget*; but most especially, the Noble Chancellor, the Lord *Wriothsley*, a man of singular experience, knowledge, prudence, and who deserveth to be a Pattern to his Posterity, far to be preferred before any new Guides. But being made Earl of *Southampton*, though it neither won him to the Faction, nor contented, nor secured him,

yet he ſtood the more quiet, and made no great oppoſition to their doings.

3. All things now grew to confuſion, there remained no face, nor ſcarce the name of Catholike Church in *England*; and though there were great multitudes of men well affected to the old Religion, and diſcontented, that the Church ſhould be thus driven into the Wilderneſs, and forced to lurk in Corners: Yet did they ſhew loyalty, obedience, and love to the publike Peace notwithſtanding. They took up no Arms, they raiſed no Rebellion, not ſo much as againſt the ſhadow of a King, or the uſurper of his Royal name. The Protector in the mean time goeth on with his work, which is principally to enrich himſelf with the Remains of the Church, having long before, as 'tis ſaid, taſted the ſweetneſs of ſuch Morſels in the Priory of *Aumesbury*. He now ſeizeth two Biſhops houſes in the *Strand*, and of them buildeth *Sommerſet*

merſet House, which, as the world ſaw, quickly reverted and ſlipt out of his hands. After this he procureth an Act to be made, whereby all Colledges remaining, all Chantries, Free Chappels and Fraternities were ſuppreſſed and given to the King. And how greedily he entered into the Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wills* his Houſes and Manors, that Church will never be able to forget; Notwithſtanding that Biſhop *Bourn* afterward by his induſtry recovered ſomething, but nothing to the ſpoiles and waſt, which was made. Nor was he ſatisfied with this; For ſhortly after contrary to all Law, to King *Henries* will, and againſt his own Covenants; (thoſe I mean, which he entred to his Advancers, when they made him Protector,) He committed the Lord Chancellor *Wriothſley* to the Tower, depoſed Biſhop *Tonſtal* both from the Counſel & from his Biſhoprick, *viz.* of *Durham*, as thinking it a ſeignory too Stately for a man of Religion. And therefore he diſſolved

it, and brought it within the Survey of the Exchequer, that is, into his own power; but, as it was observed, he never prospered after. However the Act it self was most inexcusably unjust and tyrannical, being so directly contrary to Law; as appeared, beside what hath been alledged before, by 1. *Ed.* 3. chap. 2. where the King declareth, *That the Lands of Bishops ought not to be seized into the Kings hands*, and that what had been done in that kinde in his Fathers days, *was by advise of evil Counsel*, and *hereafter should not be so.* But his sins now grew towards ripeness. Therfore having also deprived and committed Doctor *Gardiner* the Bishop of *Winchester*, dissolved the Colledge of *Stoke*, fleeced all the Cathedral Churches in *England*, and added unto the guilt of Sacrilege many other outrages, oppressions, and crimes, under the Nonage of a Pupil King, without any check or opposition, save onely in the business of the Earldom of *Oxford*, which

which he was not able to devour, as he desired; at last, in the midst of his carriere, and after he had sentenced and put to death his own and onely Brother, the Lord Admiral, chiefly (as 'tis supposed) upon the instigations of an ambitious or malicious Wife, he was himself arraigned for High Treason, and ill governing of the Realm, (as may be seen by the Articles of his Attainder in *Stow*) and thereupon condemned and executed on the twenty second day of *January*, in the year of our Lord, 1552.

When the Brothers were gone, *viz.* the Protector, and Admiral, *Dudley*, Duke of *Northumberland* comes upon the Stage; a man, whose ambition and policy, though unperceived, had ruined both of them, but especially the Protector, whose chief Adversary he was, and the principal contriver of the Charge against him, which in brief referred unto these Heads. 1. *That he had subverted all Laws.* 2. *That he had broke the orders appointed by* 4.

King

King Henry *the Eighth for his Sons good.* 3. *That he held a Cabinet-Councel: and by it transacted the publike and chief Affairs of State, without the advice of his Fellow-Counsellors.* 4. *Lastly, That he observed not the Conditions upon which he was made Protector, which were, to do nothing in the Kings Affairs without consent of the rest of the Executors.* Upon these Rocks the Protector perished, not without the manifest judgement of God, for much injustice, which he had committed in the time of his Government, especially in the business of Religion, and of the Church: and *Northumberland* for a while prevailed. This man (though he were all otherwise in his heart, yet) thought fitting to seem a little more precisely religious, then the Protector, intending thereby to assure himself of the affections of such people, as were more Zealously affected to new Religion. The Protector, looking onely at present proffit, cared to humor them in that point

no

no further [illegible]en might ſerve his own turn: But *Northumberland* had other deſigns in his head, which were no leſs, then to advance his own Family to the Crown, and to ruin the right Heirs. And therefore to ingratiate himſelf more with the Common people, in the year 1552. he cauſeth the Liturgy or book of Common prayer to be the ſecond time Reformed, and Purged of certain ceremonies and orders, offenſive to that ſort of people, which he deſired to pleaſe; and ſo to be publiſhed. This project ſtood him in much ſtead: among others of the Nobility it gained him the Duke of *Suffolk*, who from henceforward ſeemed wholly to be at *Northumberlands* Devotion, and to ſteer his courſe after the others compaſs: Being a Potent man, and the greateſt Preciſian of thoſe times; unleſs perhaps they diſſembled (both of them) upon the ſame account. But becauſe the Lord Treaſurer *Paulet*, Marquis of *Wincheſter*, was more

like

like to croſs, then [illegible]mply with them, therefore it is reſolved to remove him out of the way. And to that end *Northumberland* obſerving, that it was the Treaſurers cuſtom, ſitting at the Counſel Table, if at any time he were ſuddenly called up to the King, to make ſuch haſt, that he commonly left his Spectacles behinde him, he procured them once to be ſo ſweetly anointed and perfumed before his return, that at his next putting them on, they coſt him his Noſe, and ſcaped very narrowly with his Life; which yet with much adoe was ſaved, and the Treaſurer lived to make the Duke his good friend, ſome part of requital, as the event ſhewed.

5. Not long after this King *Edward* falleth ſick, whereupon (deſignes growing now to maturity) the Duke procures his Son *Guildford Dudly* to be married to the Lady *Jane Grey* Daughter to the Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*, one who had a remote title to the Crown: But they

they meant to advance it by their power, The Lady her ſelf being alſo ſtudiouſly affected to the Proteſtant Religion; and for that reſpect they doubted not to finde favors and aſſiſtants enough: But therein their count failed them. At the ſame time the Earl of *Pembrokes* Son was married to the Lady *Katharine*, another Daughter of the Duke of *Suffolk*; And the Earl of *Huntingdons* Son to one of *Northumberlands* own Daughters: All which marriages were ſolemnized upon one day at *Durham* Houſe in the *Strand*; And after them King *Edward* lived not long. It is ſaid that the Apothecary who poiſoned him, for the horror of the offence and diſquietneſs of his Conſcience, drowned himſelf; and that he Laundreſs, which waſhed his Shirt, loſt the Skin of her Fingers: But this is certain, there are ſome yet living in Court, who can tell, how many weeping Eyes they have ſeen for the untimely and Treacherous loſs of ſuch a Prince. But the pretence

See *Heyward* Hiſt. *Edw.* 6.

tence and zeale of Religion, which theſe men ſhewed, did ſo overſhadow all things for a time, that not many could diſcern their impiety. The Oration which *Northumberland* made to the Lords in the Tower, when he was upon his departure for *Cambridge*, to proclaim his Daughter in Law Lady *Jane* Queen, doth ſhew, what a Fox he was, and how far he could both deſcend and diſſemble to compaſs his ends. Howbeit in his way the Juſtice of God met him. For the people (the *Suffolk* men eſpecially) ſticking faithfully to the right Heir, and their lawful Sovereign Queen *Mary*, he was quickly deſerted by all men, apprehended, and received at Tower-hil the due reward of his Treaſon, and other ſins, with the loſs of his head. And ſo we ſee thoſe two Lords of Miſrule, or Reformation, if it muſt be called ſo, that is to ſay, the Protector Duke of *Sommerſet*, and this man Duke of *Northumberland*, Born (both of them) for the Scourge and ruin

Goodw. Annals.

ruin of the Catholike Church in *England*, by a juſt vengance of Heaven, proved at laſt, as it were Butchers and Executioners of one another, undid their ſeveral Families, and endangered the whole Realm: The ones Ambition, The others Avarice deſtroying him. Yet of the two the calamity of the Protector muſt, in all humane judgement, ſeem moſt diſaſtrous. For 'tis certain, through his own weakneſs and the importune inſtigations of his Wife, he was compelled to ſerve the deſigns of his greateſt Adverſary in the world, by putting his own brother to death. And after that living to ſee *Bologne* loſt, and the Crown, through his Miſgovernment engaged in many debts, wants, and trouble, he laſt of all ended his days fatally, and without any ſhew of repentance for thoſe ſins, which brought, him to that end. Whereas in this reſpect *Northumberland* was far more happy. For having in all humble and penitent maner acknowledged his offences

offences to the Bishop of *Worcester* Doctor *Heath*, his Ghostly Father, and thereby reconciled himself to God, and to the Communion of his Church, at the place of Execution, (not out of design, or hopes of life, as some would malitiously asperse the action, but willingly, freely, of his own accord, and out of conscience, as himself protesteth at his death) he made another most Christian and publike acknowledgment of his Faults, especially those which concerned Heresie, Sacriledge and Treason: in all which he confessed himself to be most guilty. *And thereupon used much and vehement exhortation to the people, to beware of those Preachers of New Doctrine, who had filled the Kingdom with so many false Opinions and much trouble: Assuring them plainly and openly concerning himself, that whatsoever he had professed or done in that kinde, proceeded wholly from Covetousness, Ambition, and other evil Motives not worthy to be named, and not from any perswasion of Judgment*

or

or Conſcience, which he ever had that way. And therefore admoniſhed them, that they ſhould willingly return to the Communion of Gods Church, and keep themſelves conſtant in the Catholike Faith, and true Religion. Which for Conſcience ſake, *ſaith he*, I onely tell you, and that I may thereby, in ſome ſort acquit me of my duty, and ſave my ſoul, and not for any humane or temporal motive, expectation, or hope whatſoever. *And ſo died.* The Oration it ſelf, out of which this is extracted, may be ſeen at large in *Schardus*, a Proteſtant chronicler of note, in his hiſtorical collections; and elſewhere, I ſuppoſe, without much difficulty. *Sim. Schard. Memor. Hiſtor. in Maximil. 2.*

6. Thus lived, and thus died, as we have ſaid, the two grand adverſaries of Gods Church, and ſubverters of Catholike Religion in *England*: after ſo many diſorders committed (as God was pleaſed to ſuffer) by their power and procurement, and that they had ſufficiently ſcourged and afflicted thoſe,

those, whose sins well deserved such punishment, they were (both of them taken away by the hand of Justice, and met with their deserts Temporally; and things were restored to some better pass. But what did the Catholikes all this while? How did they behave themselves? What Rebellions did they raise? what commotions or tumults of the people did they procure? I mean the more civil, religious, and ingenuous amongst them. 'Tis true, some Risings there were in *Devonshire*, and the Western parts, of the rude multitude, exasperated especially upon some temporal grievances, oppressions, and wants, which followed the misgovernment of those times; Religion was either not at all, or least of all pretended by them: They were vexed indeed to see the encroachments, which the Protector and others made dayly upon the Kings and Peoples Interest; They were sensible of the Scarcity and Dearth of all kinde of necessary commodities for life, which

which came ſuddenly upon them, and was far greater then it uſed to be; They could not endure well to be abridged, by Incloſures, of ſome other Liberties which they pretended to; In brief, They were ſenſible of all ſuch inconveniences in the Government of the State, as concerned *the Outward Man*; but for Religion, further then it ſerved to eaſe their Spleen, that is, to clamor, to aſperſe and rail upon thoſe, whom they conceived the Authors of their other, and more reſented grievances, I conceive they minded it not: and that there is ſcarce any good ground why a man ſhould think them, in that reſpect, more Catholikes then Proteſtants. And if a Prieſt, or ſome Eccleſiaſtical perſon were found amongſt them, (as it were ſtrange if there ſhould be none, conſidering how many there were then in the kingdom, abſolutely deſtitute, and diſcontented) yet certainly, they were not many, nor in any other quality con-

considerable. Whereas 'tis certain, that *Ket's* camp in *Norfolk*, (a business of far greater consequence and difficulty) were all of them such as were fallen with the State from the profession of Catholike Religion, and become Protestants. And this I would generally premise, desiring the Reader to observe it, that where I affirm of Catholikes, that they did not conspire against their Princes, nor raise any tumults in the kingdom, for matter of Religion, I mean such only as were Catholikes indeed, and stood firm in their Holy Recusancy, not complying in any sort with those alterations, which *Henry* the 8th. *Edward* the 6th. or Queen *Elizabeth*, in their several times procured to be made, contrary to the integrity of Christian Religion. For such as complied were not to be counted Catholikes any longer, but Heretikes, Schismaticks, Hypocrites, &c. And for such people, having corrupted their faith to God, I would

would not be taken to apologize in any other point of duty. For 'tis very poſſible they might ſtill retain ſome notions of Catholike Religion in their minds, which, afterward, and upon other occaſions, running into terms of diſloyalty, they might pretend as matter of complaint againſt their Prince, though themſelves were neither Catholike; nor *That*, nor any other matter *purely Spiritual*, the true original cauſe of their Diſorder; but onely thoſe Temporal Grievances by which they ſmarted (as is aboveſaid) and which they ſaw well enough to proceeed, either wholly, or in part, from the ſeveral alterations made.

There were the like in *Lincolnſhire*, which our Engliſh Chronicles paſs not over in ſilence. But it ſufficeth, that for the generality of Catholikes, (I mean ſtill thoſe of more ingenuous, civil, and better quality) notwithſtanding ſo great and violent provocations, as were uſed

uſed towards them; their patience and ſubmiſſive demeanor towards the State and civil Government was moſt exemplary to the World: Neither Prelates, nor Prieſts, nor Lay-people making any reſiſtance againſt thoſe unworthy men, who ſo much oppreſſed them under the Kings uſurped Authority and Name, making ſuch havock in the Church, and ſpoil of all things conſecrate to the Service of God, and exerciſe of their True, Ancient, Chriſtian-Catholike Religion, as this Nation never ſaw the like, ſince it had the happineſs to be called Chriſtian. It ſeemed, they had been bred in a better School of Vertue, then that which *Calvin* opened at *Genevah*, and had learnt to bear the croſs of their Saviour, that is to ſay, theſe temporal afflictions, calamities, and injuries, with more Patience; and that the glory of Martyrdom in ſufferance was accounted far more honorable with them, and more becomming

good

good Christians, then the Sword and Fortune of a Conqueror in comanding. In which most Christian posture I leave them to proceed.

Titulus Tertius.

1. THE laſt and greateſt tempeſt againſt poor *Engliſh* Catholikes was raiſed by Queen *Elizabeth*. This not onely ſhook the foundations of the Church, which had been ſo lately repaired by the moſt Catholike Princeſs Queen *Mary*, but proceeded, ſo far as humane policy and power could, to extirpate the very name and memory of Catholike Religion in *England*. And this, as it were, in an inſtant, and without noiſe. For, as her own Hiſtorian, *Camden*, reporteth, it was done, *Sine ſanguine & ſudore*, No man (unleſs perhaps it were Maſter Secretary *Cecil*) did ſo much as ſweat in

Camd. in Elizab.

in the bringing in of New Religion; nor was any mans blood, I mean at the first beginning, drawn about it. The Christian world stood amazed at the first news of such a sudden alteration: Both because Religion had been so lately, and so solemnly restored by Parliament; as also because the Queen her self (that now was) always professed her self so much Catholike, during the Reign of her Sister. *She constantly every day heared Mass*, saith the same *Camden*, and beside that, *ad Romanæ Religionis normam sæpius confiteretur*, went often to Confession, as other *Roman* Catholikes did. Yea, saith Sir *Francis Ingleffeild*, when she was upon other matters sometimes examined by Commissioners from the Queen, she would her self take occasion to complain, that the Queen her Sister should see me to have any doubt of her Religion, and would thereupon make Protestation, and Swear that she was a Catholike. The Duke of *Feria's*

Letter to King *Philip* is yet extant to be ſeen; wherein is certified, that the Queen had given him ſuch aſſurance of her beleefe, and in particular concerning the point of Real Preſence, that for his part he could not beleeve, ſhe intended any great Alteration in Religion. The ſame profeſſion alſo ſhe made to Monſieur *Lanſack*, as many Honorable Perſons have teſtified; and at her Coronation ſhe was Conſecrated in all points according to the Catholike maner, and anointed at Maſs by the Biſhop of *Carlile*, taking the ſame Oath to maintain Catholike Religion, the Church, and Liberties thereof, as all other her Catholike Predeceſſors, Kings and Queens of *England*, had ever done.

2. Concerning the grounds, which moved her to make this Alteration, ſo much contrary to the expectation and judgement of Chriſtendom, we ſhall ſpeak in due place. This was manifeſt, that the long ſickneſs of Queen *Mary* gave her great advantage

vantage & time, both to deliberate and draw all platforms into debate, to prepare inſtruments in readineſs for all deſigns, and to make choiſe of the fitteſt and ſureſt Counſellors, ſuch as were moſt likely to advance her ends. Neither did ſhe ſeem to value her Honor overmuch, in order to the bringing about of her chief deſign. For in open Parliament, after her intentions for a change began, to be diſcovered, ſhe proteſted, that no trouble ſhould ariſe to the *Roman* Catholikes, *for any difference in Religion*: Which did much abate the oppoſition, which otherwiſe might probably have been made by the Catholike party, and put the Clergy themſelves in ſome hopes of Fair quarter under her Government. She knew full well, that a Prince alone, how Sovereign ſoever, could not eſtabliſh a new Religion in his Kingdom; but that it muſt be the work of a Parliament to give Authority and Countenance to a buſineſs of that

Heyl. Preface of Queen Elizab.

nature. Therefore to win the Bishops, and the rest of the Catholikes in Parliament to silence at least, she was content to use policy with them, and promise them fair; as Monsieur *Mauvissier* hath well observed, who was a long time Embassador heer from the *French* King, and curiously noted the passages of those times. Add hereunto, That when the Act for Supremacy was revived (which was always the great Wheel of these Motions,) whereas by King *Henry*'s Law both Bishops and Barons stood in danger thereof (as the examples of Sir *Thomas Moor* Lord Chancellor of *England*, and Doctor *Fisher* Bishop of *Rochester* had shewen) in this Parliament the Queen was content to exempt the Lords and Barons absolutely from the Oath, (as they in King *Edward* the Sixths time had exempted themselves,) and to leave the Rigor of it onely upon the Clergy and Commons. She also thought good to qualifie the Stile somewhat, *viz.* from *Supream Head*, changing

Le Memoir de Mons. Mich. Castelnau.

changing it into *Supream Governor*; which, though it altered not the ſence, yet it abuſed ſome into a beleef, that the Queen pretended not unto ſo much in matters Eccleſiaſtical, as the King her Father had done. Beſide we are to remember, that King *Henry*, by pulling the Abbyes, had much weakned the power of the Clergy in Parliament, having deprived them of the Votes of no leſs then Five and twenty Abbots, who conſtantly ſat in Parliament in the quality of Barons. And laſtly, it is well known, The Lower Houſe of Parliament it ſelf (as they call it,) was ſo calmly ſpirited in thoſe times, that they uſed not much to oppoſe, what their good Lords of the upper Houſe liked.

All which things conſidered, and that too many of the Catholikes, both Lords and others, thinking it better wiſdom to purchaſe their future ſecurity by preſent ſilence, then to expoſe themſelves to trouble and vexation afterward, by op- 3.

posing that, which they feared, they should not be able to hinder; therefore either but faintly resist, or quietly absent themselves, who can wonder, if the whole business were carried with ease, upon such promises of the Queen, and by the industry and craft of *Sinon* (*alias*, Secretary *Cecil*,) who had the chief Management of it in his hands. By his advise it was thought fitting, that the Noble Earl of *Arundel* should, for a time, be abused with some hopes of marrying the Queen; who thereupon, by the interest which he had in the house of Peers, ingrosed into his own hands the *Proxies* or voices of so many of them (who thought good to be absent,) as when time came, served the Queens turn exceedingly well. The duke of *Norfolk*, Son in law to *Arundel*, but now a Widower, was already exasperated against the Pope, because he might not have dispensation to marry his Kinswoman; and therefore it was no hard matter to joyn him with

with *Arundel*. The Queen had alſo againſt this time, either made, or advanced in dignity, and conſequently in intereſt, certain new Lords, whom ſhe knew to be favorers of her deſign, *viz.* *William* Lord *Parr* was made Marquis of *Northampton*, a good Speaker and a Politick man, *Edward Seymour* Son to the late Duke of *Sommerſet*, was made Viſcount *Beauchamp* and Earl of *Hartford*, Sir *Thomas Howard* was made Viſcount *Bindon*, Sir *Oliver Saint John* Lord *St. John* of *Bletſo*, Sir *Henry Cary* Lord *Hunſdon*. She had alſo as much weakened the Catholikes party, by diſcharging from the Counſel-Table many of the old Counſellors, ſuch as ſhe thought would oppoſe themſelves, *viz.* the Lord Chancellor *Heath* Arch-Biſhop of *York*, the Lord *Paget*, Lord Privy Seal, the Secretary *Boxhal*, Sir *Francis Ingleſield* and others; in whoſe rooms were placed Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, The new Marquis of *Northampton*, The Earl of *Bedford*, Sir *Anthony Cave*,

Sir *Francis Knolls*, *Rogers*, *Parry*, and Secretary *Cecil*. She deposed many of the old Judges, made new Justices of the Peace; and lastly, concerning the Election of Knights and Burgesses for the Parliament ensuing, she took such order, by the great diligence and cunning of her Instruments in all the Counties, that she wanted not a competent party, ready to close with her design in that House. Besides this, to remove all scruples, as much as might be, out of the peoples heads, and to make them think, that the same Religion and Service continued still, which was so lately before reestablished by Parliament, and that all the alteration made, was but onely the turning of the Leiturgy out of Latine into English for their better understanding, she provided, that in the Common-prayer-book there should be some part of the old frame still upheld, some Collects, Prayers and Anthemes of the old Missal, some of the ancient Ecclesiastical Habits

Habits for Divine Service, as Copes, Surplices, &c. some Ceremonies, as the Sign of the Cross, Adoration and Bowing at the name of *Jesus*: The Organs also and ancient manner of Singing their Matins and Evensong was retained, especially in her own Chappels, and in most of the Cathedral and Collegiate Churches of the Kingdom. The Title, Authority, and Jurisdiction of Bishops was also preserved with some considerable Grace and Dignity in the State, together with most part of the Revenues, of which at that present the Cathedral Churches were seized. By which dexterous management of affairs, the Common people were instantly lulled asleep, and complyed to every thing; and it became not so hard a matter for the Queen to excuse her self, even to those forreign Princes, who expected otherwise at her hands: As she did particularly to the Secretary *D' Assonville*, who was sent by King *Philip* out of *Flanders* to Congratulate her

her advancement to the Crown.

4. By this time the Common-Prayer-Book was framed according to the Queens appointment, by certain Commissioners authorised for that purpose; The principal whereof were Doctor *Matthew Parker*, after advanced to the Arch-Bishoprick of *Canterbury*, having been formerly, as some say Chaplain to Her Highness: *Edmund Grindal* afterwards Bishop of *London*, *Horn* of *Winchester*, *Whitehead*, *May*, *Bill*, and Sir *Thomas Smith* Dr. of the Civil Law. The Liturgy was framed according to the Model of that, which the *English* strangers had used at *Franckford* in the year 1554. and varied not much from that which *Northumberland* had caused to be published towards the latter end of King *Edward* the Sixth. By the Nobility that were meerly *English* Protestants, as the Marquis of *Northampton*, Earl of *Bedford*, Lord *Gray* of *Pytgo*, Secretary *Cecil*, and others, it was well approved, and the establishing thereof by Parliament very much urged: But those, who had tasted

of

of *Genevah*, and were more affected with *Calvins* Model, both disliked and opposed it, either not knowing, or not regarding *the Queens reasons of State*, in the business. Sir *William Cecil*, as we said, was now Secretary of State, a Politick man, and one that knew well enough, how much this alteration would advance him; his industry carried all before him. Howbeit his fortunes were yet but low, having onely the Parsonage of *Wimbledon*, and some few Lands about *Stamford* to subsist upon. Therefore in his Letter to the Lord Marquis of *Northampton*, who was his *Mecænas*, in the year 1560. upon the birht of his son Sir *Robert Cecil*, he desires the Marquis (being the Lord Treasurer) to move the Queen in his behalf *for some means and maintenance for his C. C.* (as he calld them) who were so likely to be famous in *England* afterward. Sir *Nicholas Bacon* was his Brother in Law, and another chief Engin of State; a man of somewhat a deeper judgement in the knowledge of the Laws, and a more

more plausible Orator. I must not forget, in this Catalogue of State-Engins, the Lord *Robert* (afterwards famously known by the name of *Leicester*) who, to possess the Queens favor solely, had already discarded Sir *William Pickering*, though formerly, (*viz.* in meaner fortune) a favorite, and no uncourtly Gentleman. Nor yet Sir *Nicholas Throgmorton*, nor Sir *Francis Walsingham*, nor Sir *Thomas Smith*, who were all, with the rest, prime instruments of this Action, intimate Counsellors in the business, and possessing wholly the ears and grace of the Queen, sate as chief Pilots at the Stern, guiding the the course both of Church and Common-wealth at their pleasure. All of them at this instant big with hopes of Preferment, Honor, and great Offices, which they were sure to loose, who held them under Queen *Mary*; Though many men wondered how Master Secretary *Cecil* could so easily forget his Beads, and his Breviary, where-

with

with he so exquisitely counterfeited a Catholik in Queen *Maries* time, that Cardinal *Poole* himself was deceived by him, so far as to do him many friendly Offices towards her Majestie, which, as by the event appeared, he did not much deserve.

Their great, and indeed onely, pretence or reason for the Change was *Reason of State*, The Queens safety, *Scilicet*. This they had all of them, but especially Secretary *Cecil* wrought strongly into her Majesties apprehension, *Actum esse de eâ, si Pontificiam Authoritatem in quâcunque re agnosceret*, she was but a lost Princess, say they, if she acknowledged the Popes authority in any thing. For, *Duo Pontifices; Two several Popes already had pronounced her Mothers marriage with the King to be unlawful and Null.* It may be thought, her Mothers Conscience did likewise *pronounce* the same sentence in her own Brest; otherwise why did she, being ready to go to the place of Execution, so

5. *Camd. in Elizab.*

so solemnly entreat and charge the Lady *Kingston*, to go to the Princess *Mary*, and upon her knees *in her name* to ask pardon of her, for all the wrongs, she had done her, protesting, that until this were done, she could not dye in peace? But upon this ground the Statesmen of those times conclude it necessary, that the Queen should alter Religion, Invest her self with the Sovereignty of all Power, and banish that Authority out of the Realm, which had presumed to declare her Majestie Illegitimate. This Counsel, how prosperous soever it proved in the event, (through Gods permission,) and how speciously politick soever it might be made to seem, by the Arguments and Rhetorick of those men, who for their own ends and interests desired a change, yet *Really* it could not but be full of danger, both to the Queen and the Realm; but especially to the Queen: who, if she had pleased, might have secured her self of her own particular

Speed. Chron.

lar fears by ſome better way. For hereby, the Sentence of Excommunication in ſome ſort neceſſarily iſſuing upon her proceedings, ſhe was not onely left deſtitute of all her Allies and Confederates, and driven as it were, to ſtand ſolely upon her own guard, againſt *France*, who was already an Enemy; and againſt *Spain*, who was a friend not very well ſatisfied. But ſhe was forced, even at firſt, and at the entrance of her Reign, to run upon a Rock; which might have Shipwrackt her whole State; which was to aſſiſt the Rebells in *Scotland* againſt their lawful Sovereign, under a pretence of expelling the *French*, who were brought in thither by Authority of the Queen, onely to maintain the Government eſtabliſhed. This might have taught her own people a bad leſſon at home, a man would think; though it did not, as it proved. And being thus engaged in *Scotland*, ſhe was obliged in purſuance of her deſign, to ſuccor the Admi-

ral

ral and those Rebellious *Hugonots* of *France*; by whose perswasion she invaded *Normandy*, took possession of the Towns of *Newhaven*, *Diep*, and some other places delivered to her by the Vidame of *Chanteres*. But the disgrace in ill-defending and loosing of them, especially of *Newhaven*, was one of the greatest blemishes that ever the *English*, before that time, received upon *French* ground; and far greater then it was Honor, to have them delivered, upon such occasion, into the Queens possession. For certainly had either the cause been just, or prudently managed, they might upon that advantage, have easily brought home *Calice* again, or lockt up the Gates of *Roan* and *Paris*. But they did neither, nor brought home any thing, but a great Plague after them; in most mens judgement, a scourge to the Realm for that offence. After this upon the like necessity *of self-preservation*, and upon the *Reason of State*, which *Polybius* prescribeth

eth, *Vicini nimium crescentis potentiæ quâcunque ex causâ deprimendæ*, By all meanes keep thy Neighbor from growing too great, She made no scruple to impede and give obstruction to the affairs of King *Philip* in the *Netherlands*, who was her Neighbor, her Ally, her Confederate, yea upon more occasions then one, and in matters of no small exigence, the best friend which she had in the world. Yet by reason of those pernicious Counsels concerning Religion, which she was fallen upon, she was, as it were, compelled to disown his just interest, and profess her self Ungrateful in the face of the world. Thereupon *Orange* and the States are assisted against their lawful Sovereign King *Philip*. I must not deny, but even in doing this, she pretended respect unto the Kings interest, professing in her Declaration concerning that business, *That what she did, was to preserve the Ancient Amity and Leagues betwixt the Crown of* England, *and the House of* Burgundy, Stow.

Burgundy, *and to prevent the loſs and utter revolt of thoſe Countries from the Kings obedience, which ſhe knew otherwiſe the States and* Orange *would deliver up to ſome other Prince more profeſſedly his Enemy.* So true it is, that which *Machiavel* obſerved, I ſuppoſe, much about thoſe times, *viz. That wiſe Princes ſeldom or never want pretences for their Actions.* What a fair colour is here given to a foul Cauſe? But where is Conſcience, Chriſtianity and Truth, in the mean time? The world could ſee well enough through the Vizard; and knew, at what mark both the Queen and the States aimed.

6. But moſt Sage, ſure, and worthy of ſo great a Commander and wiſe man, as himſelf was, is that of *Thucydides, Nullus Princeps a ſuis ſubditis juſtè puniendis arcendus eſt*, &c, *No Prince*, ſaith he, *ought to be hindred from puniſhing his Subjects according to the Laws; and whoſoever goeth about to do ſo*, by his evil example *parem in ſe legem Statuit*, &c. he

he makes a Law againſt himſelf, and inables his own Subjects, in like caſe, *to ſeek forreign protection againſt his juſtice*. And this the Queen, with the whole Nation, might have found true by ſad experience, if that either *Henry* the Second, or *Francis* the Second, Kings of *France* had lived; or that her own Subjects, I mean thoſe, whom ſhe had not a little injured and alienated by her Miſgovernment, had not been more loyally reſpective of her dignity, and more inclined to obedience, and ſufferance for a good cauſe, then many other people in the world were. But Divine Providence having decreed, for our much unworthineſs and many ſins, *to remove the Candleſtick of this Nation*, that is, to deprive us of the Light of the true ſaving Faith, and of all publike and free exerciſe of true Chriſtian Religion, and to deliver us up to the darkneſs and many old deluſions of Hereſie, and *to follow our own ways* in thoſe things, wherein it moſt of all concerned us

to have been ruled by good Authority, (which is the greatest judgement, that can befall a Nation, or any people in this world) all things cooperated to the accomplishment of his just displeasure against us; And the Queen with her party, were permitted to go on with their work, without any interruption; Even before her Coronation, or that any debate or resolution had been taken in Parliament *de novo* concerning Religion, she, being herself but *a Sheep of the Flock* (as *Constantine*, *Theodosius*, and many others her Christian Predecessors in Princely Dignity have not blushed to acknowledge) yet presumed to put all *the Shepheards* of the Kingdom to silence; commanding, that none of the Bishops or other Prelates should preach, till her pleasure was further known. And after the Parliament all of them, that refused the new revived Oath of Supremacy, were deprived of all Honors, Dignities, and Employments which they

they had in Church or Common-wealth; and committed to several Prisons. Of this sort there are reckoned no less then Fourteen Bishops of *England*, all Vertuous and Learned Prelates, that were instantly deposed, and Ten of *Ireland*, Twelve Deans, Fifteen Heads or Masters of Colledges, Six Abbots, besides inferior dignitaries of the clergy, *viz.* Arch-Deacons, and other Priests without number, together with Master *Shelley*, Prior of Saint *Johns* of *Jerusalem*. All these as to their demeanor towards the Queen were blameless; there was not the least exception taken againſt them in that respect. The Bishops themselves were all sitting in Parliament at the time of Queen *Maries* death, and acknowledged by diverse Proclamations Queen *Elizabeths* Right and Title to the Crown. The Arch-Bishop of *York*, Doctor *Heath*, was then Chancellor of *England*, and labored by all means possible to do her Majestie service, and to settle the Hearts

Hearts of her people in obedience and loyalty towards her, as to their natural and lawful Sovereign; especially in that grave Oration, which he made to the Nobility and Commons of Parliament, upon the first report of Queen *Maries* death. The Bishops joyntly did their Homage and Fealty to her in all dutiful maner; and though they were not without some suspicion, that she intended to change Religion, yet did they practise neither Scotizing nor Genevating towards her: Never did they incense the people against her, though they were generally Catholik, and they might (probably) have done it, to her no little trouble. No, they never attempted any kinde, or any shew of violent resistance at all, either by Domestick or Forreign help; but always, from first to last, most submissively behaved themselves towards her, tendring her safety and the Peace of the Realm, far above their own Lives, Liberties, and Estates.

ſtates. 'Tis true, it was once debated among them, whither they ought not to proceed to *Excommunication* againſt her, both for the preſervation of Catholikes, and diſcharge of their Office: Yet conſidering the great trouble and inconveniences that might ariſe thereby, both to her Majeſtie and the State, in caſe the people ſhould fall into any diſorders thereupon, or take Arms in defence of Religion, They concluded (notwithſtanding her caſe and proceedings were very much liable to cenſure) yet, for their parts to leave her to Gods Judgement, and referred the whole buſineſs to his Holineſs.

And herein alſo the Favor and Intereſt of King *Philip*, (as they had always done) did ſtand her in no ſmall ſtead. For he, knowing the practiſes of *France* upon this occaſion, and how much they labored at *Rome*, that ſentence of Excommunication might paſs againſt Queen *Elizabeth*; onely out of deſign, and hoping to inveſt themſelves 7.

ſelves of *England* thereupon, under the Title and pretenſions of Queen *Mary* of *Scotland*, who was the next Heir, and at that time married to their King; Was the more willing to hinder it: leaſt by this means, *England* and *Ireland* both, together with *Scotland*, ſhould come to be Incorporate, as it were, into the Crown of *France*, and ſo become an enemy too potent for him to deal with; out of which reſpect alſo, even in Queen *Maries* time, more then once he had kept of proceedings againſt her, which otherwiſe would have concerned her very neerly. Therefore ſo long as there was any hope, that the Queen might be capable of better Counſels, he ceaſed not by his Miniſters to do all good Offices here betwixt the Queen and the Clergy; and at *Rome*, hindered the paſſing of the cenſures for no ſmall time, notwithſtanding all the indeavors and inſtances thereunto made by the *French*. But the Prelates all this while, as I ſaid, choſe rather a

Durate

Durate then *Armate*, ever profeſſing with their mouths, and making it good, no leſs with their examples and practiſes, that *Preces and Lachrimæ* indeed, Prayers and Tears were the onely weapons which they had, to fight againſt the Queen. Though the world knows, how little theſe prevailed with her; whoſe ſeverity towards them continued, in the ſame extremity from firſt to laſt, not relenting, nor affording the leaſt remiſſion, in any degree of Liberty or Eſtate, unto their dying day. Doctor *Scot* Biſhop of *Cheſter* died at *Lovain* in *Exile*, *Goldwel* of *Aſaph* died at *Rome*, *Pate* Biſhop of *Worceſter* was indeed at the Councel of *Trent*, and ſubſcribed there for the Clergy of *England*, but never returned. Doctor *Oglethorpe* Biſhop of *Carlile*, who had Crowned the Queen, was yet deprived with the reſt, dying ſuddenly, and very ſhortly after; ſo did alſo Doctor *Tonſtal*, that Learned and Famous Prelate, Biſhop of *Durham*, while he was Priſo-

ner at *Lambeth*: Yet not before he had perſonally given the Queen a ſound and Godly Admonition, concerning her ſtrange proceedings, with that liberty and freedom of zeal, which became ſo venerable a Prelate, and true Paſtor of Gods Church, as he was, and (as ſome have ſaid) Godfather to the Queen. *Bourn* Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells* was priſoner to *Cary*, Dean of the Chappel, and there dyed. Doctor *Thirlby*, Biſhop of *Ely*, was firſt committed to the Tower; afterwards He and Secretary *Boxhal* were ſent to *Lambeth*, and there ended their days. Biſhop *Bonner* of *London*, *Watſon* of *Lincoln* with the Abbot of *Weſtminſter*, *Feckenam*, died all priſoners, and, as ſome ſay, in the Marſhalſey. Prior *Shelly* was baniſhed, and died in *Exile*.

8. This was the the very Sad, yet (as by their Patience, Submiſſion, and Sufferance appeared) very Chriſtian Cataſtrophe of ſo many grave, religious, and good Prelates of

of *England*; chief Paſtors of the Church of God in our nation. Thus was a third, and the moſt venerable State of the Realm, who, like the Cedars of *Libanus*, ever ſince King *Etheldreds* time, for ſo many years together had ſtood, flouriſhing in great Dignity and Power in this Land, on a ſudden caſt down, diſgraced, put in priſon, or baniſhed the Realm. The chief and immediate cauſe of which hard procedings againſt them was the refuſing the Oath of Supremacy; for no other crime, no other fault could be charged upon them. This indeed they refuſed, as a thing which concerned their Conſcience very much. And although, perhaps, ſome of the Prelates now living, had either for fear, or upon ſurprizal, in the Reign of King *Henry* the Eighth, (when it was firſt enacted) given more conſent, or connivence to it, then became Prelates of the Church to do; yet they had now better conſidered themſelves, and reſolved to be conſtant,

not onely to the Doctrine of Catholike Faith in that point, but alſo to the judgement of the whole Kingdom, which ſo lately in full Parliament had deſired the Abrogation of that Law: and acknowledged the Supremacy of Eccleſiaſtical Authority to be, where Chriſt placed it, *viz.* in the Sea Apoſtolike. Nor did the *Engliſh* Prelates refuſing to acknowledge the Queen Head of the Church, any thing more, then what the Proteſtants themſelves, at leaſt no mean ones among them, would likewiſe do. For 'tis manifeſt, that ſetting aſide ſome few *Engliſh* at home, they do generally abroad diſlike the Princes Supremacy in Eccleſiaſtical cauſes, as much as any. Not to mention *Gilby*, who in his Book called *Admonitio ad Anglos* calls King *Henry* the Eighth reproachfully *Monſtrum Libidinoſum & Aprum, qui Chriſti locum invaſit*, &c. *A libidinous Monſter, a Wilde Bore broken into Chriſts Vineyard, and making himſelf Head of*

the

the Church, which belongs onely to Christ. *Calvin* himself in his Commentary upon *Osee* is very angry at those, who attribute so much to Secular Princes, as to give them such absolute power in the affairs of Religion; and in plain terms confesseth, *Qui initiò tantoperè extulerunt Henricum Regem Angliæ, certè fuerunt inconsiderati homines*, &c. *They*, saith he, *who first advanced the Authority of King* Henry *of* England *to such a height, did not well consider, what they did, when they gave him that Supream Power in all Causes: it was a matter, which always greeved me very much*, saith he, *For indeed they did no less then blaspheme, when they called him Supream Head of the Church under Christ.* Sir *Thomas Moor*, Bishop *Fisher*, Abbot *Whiteing* of *Glastenbury* and those many other Holy Abbots and Religious men of all sorts, who suffered in the case of Supremacy under *Henry* the Eighth, never said more. And *Luther* himself saith no less, but more scurrilously, as

his humor was. *Quid ad nos Mandatum Electoris Saxoniæ? What hath the Prince Elector of* Saxony *to do to command me? Let him look to his Sword, and see, how well he manageth that; and leave matters of Preaching to the Clergy*, such as himself was. *Scilicet, Tom.* 2. Fol. 259. and *Tom.* 1. *Lat.* Fol. 540. he tells them plainly, *Non est regum aut Principum*, &c. *It belongs not to Kings and Princes to take upon them, to establish Doctrine, no not the true Doctrine; but to be subject and obedient themselves in that case.* And *Chemnitius* in his Epistle to the Elector of *Brandenburgh*, speaking of Queen *Elizabeth*, after he had taxed her sufficiently in other particulars, he fals at last upon her Title of Supremacy in these words, *Et quòd fœmineo, & a seculis inaudito fastu se Papissam, & caput Ecclesiæ facit*, saying, *by a strange Womanish and unheard of kinde of Arrogance, she makes her self*, as it were, *a She-Pope in her own dominions, & Head of the Church.* What the doctrin & practise of those

in

in *Scotland* is, and hath ever bin since their pretended Reformation, is too well known, to be disputed. *Cartwright* teacheth the same in all his Books, but especially in his last: And so do all the Presbyterians generally both here and beyond Seas. They of *Amsterdam* in their *Confess. Fid.* 1607. go somewhat further; when they resolve, That *Vnicuiq; Ecclesiæ particulari est par & plenum jus* &c. That *every particular Church hath ful and equal power*, (with any other Church or Churches) *to use exercise and enjoy, whatsever ordinances of Perpetuity* Christ *hath committed to his Church*; & therefore it is cleer, upon that supposition, That no one Person is left *Supream Governor over many*. Dr. *Whitacre* in his answer to *Reinolds* speaking upon this subject, hath a passage not easie to be understood. *The Title*, saith he, *of Supream Head of the Church hath been disliked by diverse Godly Learned men, and of right it belongeth to the Son of God: and therefore*, saith he, *never did our Church give that Title*

Pag. 50. Art. 2.

Pag. 4.

unto the Prince, nor did the Prince ever challenge it. By saying that *many Godly Learned men disliked it*, meaning *Calvin, Gilby, Knox, Luther*, &c. mentioned before; and upon this ground, *viz.* that *of right it belongeth to the Son of God*, he sheweth sufficiently, what his own judgement therein is. But when he saith, *never did our Church give the Title of Supream Head of the Church to the Prince, nor the Prince challenge it*, who can tell, what he meaneth? For admit, that what was done by King *Henry* the Eighth were not rightly said to be done by *their Church*; yet I hope they will own the Church in King *Edward* the Sixths time, who challenged the Supremacy notoriously enough; as appeareth in the first Parliament which he held, wherein it was Enacted, *That whosoever, after the Fifth of March nex ensuing, should deny, that the Kings Heirs and Successors were not, or ought not to be, Supream Head in Earth of the Church of* England *and* Ireland *immediately under God,*

God, for the third assertion, should be guilty of Treason. And that Queen *Elizabeth* after him declined the Title, and chose rather to be called *Supream Governesi*, mended the matter not a whit. For it was not the Title onely, but the power pretended unto, and exercised by and under that Title, at which men made scruple; and that power Queen *Elizabeth* claimed and exercised all her Reign, as much as ever King *Edward* her Brother had done. So that the refusing of this Oath being the onely or chief matter alledged for the deprivation of the Catholike Bishops, seeing Protestants themselves were no better agreed about it, they might in all reason, have expected, if not a milder sentence, yet at least a more favorable Execution thereof, from the Queen; whom they had so lately and so unanimously acknowledged, and no less willingly then any other persons of the Realm. Who always bear themselves obsequiously towards her in temporal matters;

matters; never made complaint, never writ Libels, Invectives, or Books againſt her, as the Reformers in other parts perpetually did againſt their Princes, and as too many of her Subjects at home, that is to ſay, Miniſters of her own making, and others, in ſhort time ſet themſelves to do. No Homilies of ſedition were diſperſed among the people; No *Wyat*, No *Oldcaſtle* appeared in the Field by their inſtigation, notwithſtanding all the Adverſity, Diſgrace, Wants, which they ſuffered. In a word, ſuch was their behavior conſtantly towards her, even to the very laſt of their lives, that noe indifferent man will attribute it to any thing elſe, but to the moſt excellent and right Chriſtian reſolution of thoſe worthy men, to ſuffer perfectly for ſuch a good cauſe; and unto that Patience, Humility, Obedience, Æquanimity, and Reſigned Temper of Spirit, which, (as it was exemplary in them) ſo, is it indeed Innate, (as I may ſay,)

and

and moſt natural unto all Vertuous and Religious men, that are truely Catholike.

And ſuch in truth (though envy frown, when we ſpeak it) is the general Inclination and Temper of all *Engliſh* Catholikes, towards their Sovereign Prince, both within and without the Realm; as the experience of their quiet behavior, for ſo many years together of hard times, have cleerly ſhewen. When I ſpeak of Catholikes *within the Realm*, I mean, Recuſants in general, (as we are called) men and women of all Eſtates and Conditions; who have had our ſhares, and taſted of the Cup of affliction, (as God was pleaſed to adminiſter it unto us,) at this preſent not much leſs then a Hundred of years. When I ſpeak of thoſe *without the Realm*, I mean the Seminaries of Prieſts, Religious Perſons and Students that be Catholike beyond the Seas. Concerning which Seminaries we are to know, that when the old Clergy of *England*, Biſhops and 9.

and Prieſts, were ſome languiſhing in Priſon, other in Exile, many dead, and all in disfavor. The Secretary and ſuch other Politick Proteſtants as then ſate at the Stearn of Government in *England*, did confidently imagin, that in a ſhort time both Prieſt and Prieſthood would be worn out and extingiſhed in this Nation. And truely it was obſerved, that about the year 1576. there were not above Thirty of the old Prieſts remaining in the Realm. Hereupon Doctor *Allen*, a man even raiſed by God to do his Country good in a time of greateſt neceſſity, together with ſome others of the *Engliſh* Clergy, begun the Seminary at *Doway*, about the year 1569. meerly out of ſpiritual charity towards their poor Country, and a Chriſtian Providence to prevent the utter decay of Religious Profeſſors, Prieſts and others: who might ſerve in time to come, to uphold true Religion in *England*, and to preſerve a Continuation of the Catholike

like Church there, (as it had ever been from the Apoſtles times to that preſent) unto ſucceeding Generations: And as by the great bleſſing of God we ſee, their pious Counſels have had an happy effect unto this day; notwithſtanding the many oppoſitions, adverſities and difficulties, which they have met with, as well from *England*, as from other places. They intended alſo the Inſtruction and training up of yong Scholars, *viz.* of the Catholike Nobility, Gentry and others of our Nation in the ſtudies of Learning, Vertue, and all kinde of honeſt and chriſtian Education; which, as the caſe ſtood, they could not poſſibly have in their own Country, without Ship-wracking of their conſciences, and great peril of their ſouls. This, I ſay, was the firſt and onely deſign of the Seminaries, *viz.* to be a Nurſery of young and tender plants, as ſhould be committed to them, to be fitted for the Service of God, and the leading of a true Chriſtian, Vertuous

ous life afterward; and not to be Seedplots or Forges of Treason, and seditious practises against their Country, as their Adversaries cease not to accuse them. That's a calumny black and palpable, as shall appear more hereafter. At present I shall onely take notice of what that great Protonotary of *England* brings in charge against them, in his Book called *Justitia Britannica*, which are three things. First, That they are a company of base fugitive persons. Secondly, that they corrupt the Land with false Doctrine: and Thirdly, That they practise with forreign States to disturb the Kingdom, raise rebellion, and withdraw Subjects from their obedience. As touching the First I am very well assured that there be Gentlemen of our Nation at *Doway*, both in the Colledge and Monasteries, of as good Families, as well Bred, and as Eminent Scholars, as any I have known of all these sorts in the Universities of *England*, wherein I am not altogether a stranger.

ſtranger. I will not make Compariſons, for that were but to make them more odious; neither am I willing to detract any thing from the honor of our *Engliſh* Academies, which I am bound to maintain. It muſt be confeſſed, there be many excellent wits, and men of great learning bred in them; yet this I may truly ſay, That thoſe beyond Sea are of *no baſe quality*: neither is their education in thoſe places ſuch, as ſhould render them liable to that Character in time to come. Yea rather they are ſo orderly governed, and their times of ſtudy, devotion, exerciſe both Scholaſtical and Spiritual, recreation, yea even of their moſt neceſſary repaſt and reſt, are all ſo exactly meaſured out to them, all occaſions of idleneſs, exceſs, and ill company, ſo prudently and carefully prevented, that it is indeed no wonder, they appear ſo civil, ſo devout, ſo religious, temperate, ſober and well governed, in all outward deportment, as, through the

the grace of God, they do. They are, as I ſaid, by their Superiors ſtrictly kept to their tasks; yet rather won, then forced unto good. They are bridled with a hard bit, but it is carried with ſuch a gentle hand, as it doth not pinch, but guide them: So that, as their ſtudies, bleſſed be God, are not altogether unhappy; ſo neither is their life unpleaſant, but ſweet, agreable to vertuous mindes, and full of the Nobleſt contents. And that they ſhould be counted *Fugitives* is moſt injurious. For do they live there as Outlaws in a forreign Province? have they fled for any crime? doth Juſtice enquire after them, or wait for them in their own Country? what Felonies, what Treaſons have driven them thence? but ſuch as a very few years before, were, not onely in the ſame place, where they are now ſo hardly cenſured, but in all places of Chriſtendom, and by all people of ſound judgement, counted the greateſt vertues? Again, they live not there out of any

any factiousnes of spirit, or ill affection towards his Majestie or the State of *England*, but for conscience sake onely, and to avoid the severity of Laws enacted here against Catholikes and the profession of Catholike Religion. It is necessity that compels them to take this course. In *England* Catholikes have no Churches, wherein to serve God publickly, nor liberty to serve him privately any where else. The Sacraments are never, or but very seldom Administred to them, in comparison of what they should be. They can have no priviledge, or benefit of the Universities for education and study, without Oaths, going to Church, and hearing and doing many other things, contrary to a good conscience. Beside all this, did not *Barty*, *Knolls*, and *Hales*, did not *Jewel*, *Horn*, *Cox*, *Pilkington*, *Poynet* and many others in Queen *Maries* time, take the same course, for conscience as they pretended? They would not willingly have been called *Fugitives*,

tives, when they were abroad. Why then ſhould thoſe Gentlemen at *Doway*, Saint *Omars*, and elſewhere, Exil'd, as it were, at preſent from their native Country upon the ſame common pretence and reaſon, *viz.* reaſon of conſcience, be called *Fugitives*, or ſtigmatized with any ſuch Characters of ignominy? Let thoſe Laws be repealed firſt, which threaten preſent death to them upon their return, and which were all procured againſt them, unduly, and by miſprizion, *viz.* of their ſuppoſed practiſings againſt the State, which (as they complain) were never proved, nor are true. Let it be permitted to them to enjoy Liberty of Conſcience, and to ſerve God, as all good Catholikes and Chriſtians ought to do, without moleſtation and danger to their perſons, prejudice to their eſtates, further then they ſhall give juſt offence to the State, and the world would quickly ſee, where their trueſt affections lay: Neither *Doway*, nor St. *Omars*,

nor

nor *Rhemes*, nor *Rome* it ſelf would hold them, from returning with all thankfulneſs and ſpeed, to expreſs their humbleſt obedience to his Majeſtie, and fidelity to their native Country. And as for their Parents Kinsfolks and Friends, from whom they are now unhappily ſeparated (and from many of them, perhaps, againſt their wills,) they ſhould plainly finde, that natural affection was not extinguiſhed in them, neither would kindneſs creep, where it might ſafely go.

The Second objection is, *They corrupt the Land with falſe Doctrine.* 10.
This objection ſuppoſeth, that *Calviniſm*, and the preſent Religion *by Law eſtabliſhed* in *England*, is the true; which *England* it ſelf denied but a few years ſince: and the whole Chriſtian world doth at this day. I do not except the Proteſtants themſelves. For there is not any one of their pretended Churches abroad, that agreeth with this preſent Church of *England* in all

all points of Doctrine and Discipline established. But to wave that question at present, as no part of my undertaking, it must be considered, there are learned and vertuous men on both sides, one whereof will not, it seems, vaile Bonnet to the other, in point of understanding the Scriptures. How then should the difference be decided (even in reason) but by some Authority distinct from them both, yet indifferent and superior to both? which can be no other but the judgement and tradition of the Catholike Church precedent unto both. Besides this, the Bishops in the first Parliament offered to defend their Religion *by disputation*, which the Protestants would not accept, but upon an unequal condition, that is, (as Master *Camden* himself reporteth) *Nisi Baconus in studiis Theologicis parùm Versatus*, &c. *Unless Sir* Nicholas Bacon *might be President and Moderator of the business, who was* a man, neither of competent Dignity to preside in such

ſuch anaction (though he were newly put into an high office) nor yet of ſufficient abilities to judge of ſuch matters, being a man of the other Robe, but a Serjeant at law a few days before; and beſide all this a Partialiſt, and open favorer of the Adverſaries of the Church. Therefore the Biſhops refuſed him, as an incompetent perſon; as well they might, Though for doing ſo they endured a great deal of calumny. But indifferent men will judge beſt. And certainly had the Queen at all deſired the Diſputation, as ſome pretend, or that it ſhould have had any juſt and fair iſſue, ſhe would have provided Judges (as eaſily ſhe might,) more agreeable to the Dignity of the action, and the Qualities of the Diſputants, both for Ability, Indifferency, and Honor. Since their time *F. Robte Perſons*, *Campian*, and diverſe others have made the ſame requeſt to the State, being deſirous to bring truth to the Tryal and Touchſtone in ſome publike maner: which can-

not

not but be ſome argument, that at leaſt they do beleeve, in ſincerity and good conſcience, that themſelves are in the right; and therefore ſhould not be ſo haſtily condemned, or prejudged of their cauſe. If it be ſaid, that ſuch demands as theſe have been anſwered, diſputations have been permitted, as for example, that of Doctor *Reinolds* with Maſter *Hart*, that of Doctor *Goad* with *F. Campian*; and that in both theſe and ſome other, truth hath appeared ſo manifeſtly on the Proteſtants ſide, that both Catholikes and Prieſts ought to be convinced: I reply, There was not faire play uſed in thoſe actions? it was *iniquiſſima conditio*, the moſt unequal dealing that ever was uſed; for a man armed to ſet upon a Captive, a man at Liberty upon one in Fetters, deſtitute of Books, having no warning, nor liberty given him to prepare him ſelf; but which is worſt of all, and the greateſt inhumanity that ever was heard of,) in the

the ſight and view of the rack, whereon he had, a very little while before, been poſed with moſt cruel queſtions: which was the caſe of that excellent and bleſſed man *F. Edmund Campian*, afterwards Martyr. And as for Doctor *Reinolds* (although he pretends ſomething to the contrary, yet) it is certain, he framed that Combat, which he publiſhed between himſelf and Maſter *Hart*, at his own pleaſure. Laſtly the Clergy, and other Prieſts of the Catholike Church in *England* do pretend, and have not ſeldom offered to prove, that the chief Baſis of Proteſtant Doctrine in general is either Fallacy or Forgery; and that the chief builders of this *Babel*, by name *Bp. Jewel* (the grand Apologiſt of the *Engliſh* Church, *Luther* himſelf, *Calvin*, *Melanchon*, *Du Pleſſis*, the *Hugonots*, Saint *Auguſtine* in *France*, Doctor *Morton* their Achilles in *England*, both the *Whites*, not excepting *Laud* himſelf the late Patriarke of *Engliſh* Proteſtants,

nor *Andrewes*, nor *Mountague*, but generally all other Proctors of that cause, do defend themselves, and endeavor to bear down Catholikes, not with sincere and plain dealing becoming Christians, but with calumny and falshood; that is to say, by false Quotations, Corruptions, Falsifying, and misreciting of Authors, untrue reporting of Doctrines, false and unjust criminations of mens persons, and of whole Orders of men, and by many other indirect ways, unseemly and unworthy of the cause of truth. They humbly therefore implore and hope from the justice of his Majestie and the State, that they shall not be condemned without hearing: But as the charges, which they bring against their Adversaries, are of a foul nature, tending much to the dishonor of God, and disparagement of Christian faith, which God will not have to be upheld by ungodly and evil means; so they shall before sentence be permitted to plead for themselves,

themſelves, and to prove the charge againſt their Adverſaries: for whom it is not to purpoſe to recriminate in the buſineſs, and ſay that Catholikes are guilty of the ſame faults. For we maintain the contrary. And deſire to know, what one Doctrine it is that we charge them with, as odious and offenſive to Chriſtian eares, but the Reader, if he pleaſe, may finde it expreſsly and undeniably verified upon them by our Authors, and perticularly in that exact Treatiſe of the Biſhop of *Chalcedon*, called *Collatio doctrinæ Proteſtantium, &c.* extant both in Latine and Engliſh. what crime do we lay to their charge, but we prove it by Authors and Teſtimonies of good credit, and moſt commonly from among themſelves? What do we bring out of Antiquity in behalf of Catholike Religion, or againſt them, which they themſelves confeſs not upon ſome other occaſion? The Proteſtants Apology is a Magazine of Evidences in this kinde. And as

concerning the *Index Expurgatorius*, whereby they pretend, that we *Corrupt Authors*, it is onely a ſpecious calumny to catch thoſe, who are willing to be deceived. For firſt the very maner of proceeding doth exempt it from all imputation and ſuſpicion of Fraud with indifferent men; it being *ab origine* a thing intended and made for publike view, and to be openly expoſed and avowed to the world, as it was: which matters of Fraud Forgery and falſe play uſe not to be. Secondly, the Expurgators, appointed to the overſight of that buſineſs, meant not to *corrupt Authors*, but to *correct former and leſs perfect Editions* by better Copies and more exactly compared; eſpecially ſuch *Editions*, as they found corruptly and partially publiſhed by Hereticks. And where they obſerved, that any late writer had been bold by way of Annotations, or otherwiſe, to deliver any thing, out of his private judgement, leſs conſonant unto Catholike Doctrin

or

or Truth, then was requiſite, they ſpared not to admoniſh the Reader of it by their cenſure. In all which doing, what is there, we pray, that can be blamed? Yea ſuppoſe it ſhould happen, that the reaſons, which moved them to *Correct* in this or that place, and to vary from ſome other reading, were not ſufficient; and that they inſerted their *Deleatur* and other cenſures, where they ought not; yet, I ſay, the Index of their Expurgations being faithfully publiſhed to the world, and ſo eaſily procureable by all men, it was impoſſible, that any prejudice ſhould ariſe to truth by it; every man being left free either to follow or refuſe the ſaid *corrected Reading*, as he judged beſt. Beſide when we ſay, Catholikes are not guilty of miſalledging Authors, or of any other abuſe of that nature, we would be underſtood to ſpeak, not onely of wilful and culpable miſalledging, (of which onely we accuſe our Adverſaries) but alſo of ſuch writers eſ-

pecially, as being themſelves publikly Authorized to handle the controverſies of Religion in the Schools, Their works are afterward, upon mature examination, publiſhed to the view and judgement of the world; or elſe of ſuch Prelates and Perſons of Dignity in the Church, as have had leiſure, and ſet themſelves to combat the Hereſies of the time. For otherwiſe, as we do not charge them here with any miſtakes of *Amés*, *Bucanus*, *Daneus*, or any other of thoſe Niblers at *Bellarmine* (as Maſter *Normington* of *Cambridge* once called them in a Sermon at Saint *Maries*) much leſs with the impudencies of the Miniſter *Craſhaw*, nor with the miſtakes of *Churk*, *Fenner*, *Beard*, *Burton*, or any other Triobolary Controvertiſts at home, either of former or preſent times, but, as you ſee, onely with faults of their Prime Leaders, Claſſicall men, Prelates and Dignitaries of their Church; ſo, if it ſhould happen, that any private man of our own,

writing

writing onely by private Authority and judgement, ſhould either through overſight, or indiligence be found chargeable with ſome kinde of miſtake, we would not have it ſtood upon, as if it were the common practiſe of all to write ſo negligently; or that the defence of Catholike Religion did any wit depend upon ſuch miſtakes: As we ſay the defence of Proteſtancy doth very much upon thoſe miſtakes, which we are ready to bring in charge againſt them, and without which there were not half the colour for defence of it.

Concerning the third point, *viz.* That the Prieſts and Students in the *Engliſh* Seminaries beyond Sea are *Practicers againſt the State*, and *doſtir*, or *endeavor to ſtir the People to Rebellion*, it is indeed an odious and heavy charge, which the Book called, *The execution of Juſtice, &c.* layeth roundly upon them; and is ſeconded therein by a Proclamation in the year 1580. which doth directly charge thoſe Prieſts and 11.

others, as Acceſſories, and privy to the Counſels of *Philip* King of *Spain*, the Pope, and ſome other Catholike Princes, which (as 'tis ſaid,) had combined together about that time to invade *England*, to depoſe the Queen, and ſubdue the Nation to the *Spaniard*. But for anſwer I ſay, that jealouſie is a kinde of *Argus*, (full of eyes; (and ſo ſhe is painted,) but they are all purblinde: which is the cauſe, that ſhe miſtakes ſo oft, ſtarts at her own ſhadow, and is always trembling, and doubting the worſt of every body. We cannot deny, but there were great States-men, that governed *England* in thoſe days under the Queen; yet howſoever it happened, with all their Opticks they ſeemed not to have any particular foreſight of the dangers which threatned them, till they were at their doors: yea having *by error of Government* provoked and drawn them upon themſelves, yet they took a courſe more proper to kindle the flame, then to quench

quench the fire. But this is not a buſineſs to be diſcuſſed now. That which we are to do is to juſtifie the Prieſts and other *Good men* of the Seminaries, that they are not Traitors, are not Enemies of the State, do not practiſe, conſult, cooperate, where they live, to any thing prejudicial to their Prince and Country. Firſt, if any ſuch Confederation had been betwixt his Holineſs, the King of *Spain*, and other Princes againſt *England*, as is pretended, but was never yet proved; (and 'tis well known, that what the Catholike King did afterward, as it was upon great provocations given, ſo was it alſo upon his own ſcore onely; and with no other aſſiſtance, but what was his own, and ordinary in ſuch caſes.) Yet, I ſay, ſuppoſe there had been ſuch Confederation or League betwixt them, is it probable, that ſo great and wiſe Princes, as they were, would acquaint a few poor Contemplative men, Students at *Rhemes* and *Doway*, with their deſigns?

Men ſo inconſiderable every way in relation to ſuch ſervice, ſo uſeleſs, and unable, in reſpect of their maner, condition and place of living, to contribute any thing to the work? Is it credible, they would manage ſuch high matters, and of ſo great importance, ſo weakly? Let no man ſay, That Prieſts might ſerve them by preparing a party here, and by their *reconciling of men to the Pope.* For it is not the Prieſts work to reconcile men *to the Pope*, but unto God, and to the Communion of the true Catholike Church: whereof, although the Pope, as ſucceſſor to Saint *Peter*, be Supream and chief Paſtor; yet Catholikes, by returning to the Church, and conſequently acknowledging that Supremacy *of Spiritual Authority* in his Holineſs, are not obliged ſo much as to take notice of any Temporal deſigns that he hath; no, though they were, perhaps, for advancement of Religion: much leſs to conſent, concur, or cooperate with them con-

contrary to the Law of nature, their Duty of Allegience, and the interest of their native Country. Secondly, among so many Priests, as by that time there were, both in England and beyond the Seas, and in so long a time, that this pretended Confederacy was in framing, when Spies and Intelligencers were many, and well paid by the State, was there so much as one Priest nominated or accused to have been so corrupted, or induced any way by those Princes, or their Ministers, to practise ought to the prejudice of their Country? was there ever any one apprehended or convicted of such a treason? was there ever any Subject of *England* called in question, for entertaining Priests, that were sought after upon that account? In a word, when the *Spanish* Armado was under Sail for *England*, was there so much as one Priest, or Seminary-man found or known to be in it? or at any time since discovered to have been used, or imployed in that service? 'Tis confessed,

confeſſed, the Proclamation ſpoken of before, being framed on purpoſe to put people into a fright, and to make honeſt men odious, doth traduce them ſufficiently, as perſons ſuborned to prepare the way, and procure ſafe landing for the Navy. But *Si accuſaſſe ſufficit, quis erit innocens*? Such general charges prove nothing but paſſion, or ſome undue, byaſſed, and diſtempered judgement. They that know ſuch men well, know it to be a buſineſs far out of their way, to ſpie Countries, to obſerve, how Ports are garded, and what Havens lie upon the Coaſt. However it is evidence of fact, and the conviction, at leaſt queſtioning of ſome one perſon for ſuch crime, that would be given in the caſe: Which ſeeing there never was, Indifferent men cannot but think ſuch Accuſations to have been very injurious; and that the great fears and jealouſies ſhewen, had more of the *Chimæra* and fiction in them, then of real danger. It was otherwiſe with the poor *Engliſh* themſelves

themſelves in *Spain* not long after, both Religious and others. For when the *Engliſh* Armado, in the year 1589. made an attempt upon *Lisbon*, and invaded ſome parts of *Portugal*, the King of *Spain* took them to be ſo little either his Friends, or Enemies to their Prince and Country, as they are traduced, that he laid them all faſt by the Heeles, and kept them cloſe priſoners, (during the whole time, that the Action laſted,) as many of them, as were found at *Valladolid*, *Burgos*, and ſome other places in *Spain*. Nor was there in thoſe many Actual attempts of Treaſon, ſuppoſed to be made againſt Queen *Elizabeth*, ſo much as one Prieſt, Monk or Friar ever attainted or impeached about them; Nor in the whole Five and forty years of her Reign any more then two ſecular Prieſts attainted, or convinced of Actual Treaſon againſt her Majeſtie, *viz.* *Ballard* for knowing, and yet concealing the attempts of *Babington* in the buſineſs of the Queen

of

of *Scots*; and old Parſon *Plomtree* of the North, who ſaid Maſs once at a riſing in thoſe parts. And yet how greevouſly are they charged with ſuch crimes, all along the Queens Reign? And how much was the people incenſed againſt them upon that perſwaſion? What Sermons, Proclamations, Lawes, were made in Thunder, and Lightening, and Blood againſt theſe poor men, Souldiers of our Saviour Chriſt, and fighting onely with Spiritual Arms under his Banner, The Croſs, in that part of the Catholike Church, which is Militant in *England*? What calamities, afflictions, miſeries have they not endured, by perſecution hereupon? The onely Colledges of *Rhemes* and *Doway*, beſide other Religious Orders from other places, have ſent out into our Lords Harveſt no leſs then One hundred perſons, who have all ſuffered for *Things purely Spiritual*, that is, either for being Prieſts, or for doing the Office of Prieſthood, *viz.* Saying Maſs, Re-

Reconciling of Sinners unto God, &c.

In the year 25. of Queen *Elizabeth* it was made Felony to harbor a Prieſt; and to be a Prieſt, Treaſon. And the Act looked ſo cruelly back to *primo Elizab.* that whoſoever was made Prieſt ſince that time might very eaſily be drawn within compaſs of the charge. The Law was made upon occaſion of thoſe Treaſons of *Parry*, *Francis Throgmorton*, *Anthony Babington*, and his complices; as alſo upon occaſion of *F. Campian*, and thoſe Prieſts arraigned with him. For a general apprehenſion was taken, that theſe had combined with ſome forreign Princes, and other perſons of power within *England*, to reſtore Religion, and deliver the Queen of *Scots* out of priſon; which was a buſineſs then freſh in memory. Hereupon the Prieſts in *England* frame a ſupplication by common conſent, and finde means to preſent the ſame to the Queen at *Greenwich*, by the hands of Maſter *Shelley*. Wherein, after 12.

after they have first condemned and renounced the practises of *Parry*, &c. They profess and declare their own judgement in these words. First, we utterly deny that the Pope hath power to command or give License to any man to consent unto Mortal sin, or to commit, or intend to commit any thing contrary to the Law of God. Secondly, whatsoever person he be, that maintaineth such opinion, we renounce him, and his opinion as deviliſh and abominable. Thirdly, we protest before God, That all Priests, who ever conversed with us, have acknowledged your Majestie their lawful Queen, *tam de jure, quam de facto*, as well of right, as for your actual possession of the Crown; that they pray for you, and exhort your Subjects to obey you. Fourthly, and lastly, they profess, that it is heresie, and contrary to Cotholike faith to think, that any man may lift up his hand against Gods Anointed. Tis true, the Petition had no other success with

with her Majestie then this, *viz.* that Master *Shelley*, who presumed to commit such a Treason, as to present it, was suffered to be sent to the Marshalsea, by order of Secretary *Walsingham*, and there to be kept prisoner to his dying day; onely upon this pretence, *Scilicet*, because the Councel had not been first acquainted with the business. Howbeit, by this supplication the world may cleerly see, They answer the Six Articles, which in those times used to be so commonly and captiously propounded to such men, framed by Doctor *Hammon*, *viz.* Whither the Queen were lawful Queen, notwithstanding the sentence Decleratory of Pope *Pius Quintus* against her? whither that sentence were to be obeyed in all things? Whither the Pope by such sentence could give her Subjects any lawful Authority to rebel, or depose her, &c. For if she be their lawful Sovereign, notwithstanding that sentence; and that obedience and loyalty be due unto all lawful

Princes

Princes by the Law of God, and of nature, it is easie to see, what must be said to such questions. According also as Bishop *Watson*, Abbot *Feckham*, Doctor *John Harpsfeild*, Doctor *Nicholas Harpsfeild*, with others, (who were very often and rigidly examined upon them, yet) professed perpetually obedience to her Majestie, *tanquam veræ Reginæ*, as unto their true and lawful Sovereign. Yea saith Doctor *Nicholas Harpsfeild* (reported by *Goldastus* a Protestant) *Ego regalem ejus Authoritatem*, &c. *I do acknowledge*, saith he, *her Royal Authority in all Temporal and Civil affair without exception.* They presented the like humble supplication to his Majestie that now reigneth, some while after the discovery of that wicked and desperate Plot of the Gun-powder-treason; another to the Parliament then sitting; and another to the Earl of *Salisbury*; in all of them professing the same things. And though it hindred not the passing of some severe Acts against Catholikes

Goldast. de Monar. Sac. Imp. Rom.

tholikes in that Parliament, occasioned (as I suppose) by that foul and horrid attempt, yet the King himself in his Proclamation published upon that subject, gratiously professeth his opinion of the generality of his Catholike Subjects, *viz. That they did abhor such a detestable Conspiracy, no less then himself.* True it is, *F. Garnet* suffered for concealing that Treason; and Sir *Everard Digby*, for contributing in some sort to the security, or rather flight of some of the Conspirators. But as the one, *viz.* Sir *Everard Digby*, much lamented his ill fortune, that he should leave behinde him the memory of so great a stain; protesting always, that he was never made privy to their design and drift: So the other, *viz. F. Garnet*, knowing it onely (as he did) in the way of confession; and the Seal of that Sacrament (which is *Secrecy*,) being, by the Doctrine of Catholike Religion, and that not without most just and necessary cause, esteemed

ried so inviolable, it may abate something, even in the judgement of man, of that Heynousnes of guilt and blame, whereof all good Christians otherwise must necessarily condemn him. In a word how much Catholikes in general, and especially Priests do detest rebellion and Treason, even in times of greatest affliction and pressure; and what Religious obsevers they are of all just loyalty and obedience to their lawful Princes, appears cleerly, not onely by a book written in those times by the learned Bishop of *Chichester*, Doctor *Christopherson against rebellion*; but also by the Annotations of the Divines at *Rhemes* upon the New Testament; where *Pag.* 301. we read thus. *Subjects*, saie they, *are bound in Temporal things to obey even the Heathen, being their lawful Kings, and to be subject to them for Conscience, to observe their Temporal Laws, to pay them Tribute, to pray for them, and to perform, all other duties of Natural Allegiance.* Doctor *Kellison* in his

Survey

Survey goeth further, giving the reaſon of this. *Becauſe*, ſaith he, *Faith is not neceſſarily required to juriſdiction, neither is any Authority loſt by the loſs of Faith.* Which is alſo the Doctrine of Saint *Thomas*, who in his Book, *de Regim. Princip.* Cap. 6. denieth utterly *Poſſe Tyrannum a quoquam*, &c. *That a Prince, though Tyrant, can be put to death by any private Authority.* And at a Councel held at *Oxford* under *Steven Langton* Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* about the year 1228. Excommunication is decreed againſt all ſuch as violate the Kings Peace, or diſturb the State of the Kingdom. Yea the Councel of Conſtance Seſs 15. declares it to be an error in Faith to hold otherwiſe. *Nuper accepit ſancta ſynodus*, &c. *This Holy Synod*, ſaie the Fathers of it, *hath been lately informed, that certain erronious opinions are holden, contrary to Peace and good Eſtate of the Commonwealth*, viz. *That a Tyrant may be lawfully and meritoriouſly taken away and killed by any Subject or Vaſſal of his,*

his, &c. *Non obſtante quocunque juramento*, &c. *Notwithſtanding whatſoever Oath of Fidelity or Allegiance, that he hath made to him. Such Doctrine*, ſaith the Councel, *is contrary both to Faith and Manners, and whoſoever ſhall hold it pertinaciouſly, are Hereticks, and as ſuch to be proceeded againſt, according to the Canons.*

13. What can be ſaid, or deſired more? upon the Parricide of *Henry* the Fourth, King of *France*, the Parliament of *Paris*, a Court ever moſt ſtudious of their Princes ſafety, and extreamly vigilant againſt the encroaching of any forreign power contrary to his juſt Authority in Temporal cauſes, yet thought it ſufficient to publiſh this decree of the Church againſt the Aſſaſſinates of Princes, both to ſhew the heinouſneſs of the crime, as alſo, how much the Catholike Doctrine doth condemn ſuch practiſes. So that hereby, as in a Glaſs, the world might ſee the integrity of Catholike Loyalty; if men

men would judge of them, not by the private, and perhaps misinterpretable assertions of some particular Doctors, but by these publike and avowed principles of their beleef. This is the *Basis* on which they build, the rule by which they walk and govern themselves, in point of obedience towards their Sovereign Princes. Or if they would judge of them by their proceedings and addresses to their Superiors, their frequent petitions, professions, protestations of all just obedience, will sufficiently cleer them; If by their practice and manner of life; their quiet deportment, their peaceable manner of living and conversing with all men, yea their prayers (which they daily make unto Allmighty God in the behalf of their Prince, and for the happiness of their Country) do shew, how innocent they are, and how little they deserve those black aspersions and calumnies of Treason, Rebellion, Disloyalty, *Et quid non*? which some men are so diligent to cast

cast upon them. Yea, (to speak with no greater confidence, then we justly may) they shew, how much more secure Princes may be, and how much better Tye and assurance they have of Catholikes Loyalty, then either of *Lutherans* or *Calvinists*. For although Protestants do seem sometimes to teach obedience to the Civil Magistrate very freely, and that it is sin for private Subjects to resist them; as for Example *Melanchon* in his Epitome of Moral Philosophy makes it *Peccatum Mortale*, No less matter then *Mortal Sin*, (I use his own words,) *To violate the Temporal Laws of the Magistrates*: Yet is their Doctrine so clogged with exceptions, so many limitations and Proviso's, as it were, are commonly added to it, that Princes, especially such as differ from them in Religion, cannot finde, (I say not full and plenary, but not so much as) probable or competent security from them. *Melanchon*, in the place before mentioned, limiteth himself

self thus, *Debet autem hæc sententia*, &c. *But this which I have delivered*, saith he, *concerning obedience to the Civil Magistrates must be rightly understood*, viz. *of such Magistrates as command nothing contrary to the Law of God*; as all Catholike Princes do in his opinion. What security therefore have they from his Doctrine? Beside we have shewen before according to his doctrine, *the people or inferior Magistrates may reform Religion, and overthrow Idolatry*, as they call it, *without any publike Authority or Commission*. So that if the Justices of the Peace in some County, or but the Petty Constables in Towns, do beleeve the Religion professed by the Prince, or State to be Idolatrous, and not according to Gods word, they are discharged of obedience by *Melanchon*, and may fall to reforming solely of themselves. And what his Master *Luthers* opinions were concerning this matter, hath been sufficiently shewen already; there need be no repetition of them here. *Danæus* teacheth the same

Lib. de Consens. Evang.

Lib. 6. Polit. c. 3. or worse. So doth *Peter Martyr on Judges Cap.* 11. and in his Common places. And *Althusius Politic. Cap.* 35. P. 37. where among other causes of a *Just War* maintained by Subjects against their Sovereigns, *Puræ Religionis defensio, defence of True Religion* hath the Second place. Yea it is wel known, that *Sureau* a Protestant Minister in *France*, otherwise called *Rosieres*, wrote a Book expressly on this subject, That it was lawful to kill *Charls* the Ninth, his natural Sovereign, and the Queen-Mother, *if they would not obey the Gospel.* But to conclude with one instance for all. The *Hugonots* of *France* having in the Nine and thirtieth Article of their Confession professed *That men ought to be obedient to the Laws, to pay Tributes, and to bear the Yoke of subjection quietly, even under unbeleeving Magistrates,* They adde a limitation, which corrupts and nullifies all that they had said, *viz. Dummodo Dei summum imperium integrum maneat, So long* onely as Gods Supream Authority

Belfor. lib. 6. cap. 103.

thority is entirely acknowledged; which under the Government of an Infidel Magistrate, cannot be easily conceived. Therefore upon the matter they profess nothing, but abuse their Prince and the world with bare words; as it is usuall with them to do. Which is yet more evident, by the Declaration, which their Synod at *Bearn* in the year 1572. purposely made of this Article and of the Limitation of it.

Dei imperium dicitur manere illibatum, cum Rex exterminatâ Catholicâ Religione, &c. Gods Sovereign Authority, say they, *is then understood to be entirely acknowledged, when the King abolishing or rooting out Catholike Religion, shall set himself to advance onely the true and pure worship of God,* that is to say, that which is so in their sense and opinion. But to do this is it a thing to be supposed of an Infidel Prince, to whom they pretend to profess subjection? or is it to be expected of a Catholike? Therefore I say, they contradict themselves apparenly in their

Poplonier. lib. 34.

profession and do indeed profess nothing *really*, but that they are Impostors; and deserve to be branded with Characters of jealousie and distrust by all the Princes & States of Christendom. The book called *Comment. de Statu Relig. &c.* a Protestant piece, is ful of such stuff, but especially, *Pt. 2. Lib. 12. Cap. 1.* where he affirmeth expressly, That in all Oaths of Allegiance and Duty there is this condition always implyed at least, and necessarily to be understood, *viz.* we shall obey, *so long as you govern lawfully, and not longer*. And hence it was, that the Prince of *Conde* protested, *Anno* 1577. that the oath which some *Hugonots* had taken not to bear arms or fight against their King anymore, &c. was *factum contra Deum & bonos mores, contrary to the law of God, and their duty*, and therefore could not oblige any. He had it from *Calvin*, who *Lib. 4. Institut. c. 13. Sect. 21.* teacheth, *Quibuscunq; hujus Evangelii is lux affulget*, &c. *When men come once to be Illuminated with the light of his Gospel, they are presently*

Poplonneir. lib. 41.

ſently abſolved from all former Snares and Oaths whatſoever, that ſhould entangle their Conſcience, that is oblige them to the performance of any good work, or duty, more, then they have a minde to. *Sic dixit Calvinus.*

But I confeſs, there are ſome few particular, or rather perſonal objections made from ſome pretended matter of fact, againſt that which hath been ſaid of Catholikes Loyalty, wherein tis neceſſary, that the Reader ſhould have ſome reaſonable ſatisfaction. This done, the concluſion will be cleer, which at firſt I undertook to declare, *viz.* That there is nothing in Catholike Religion inconſiſtent with Loyalty; and that Catholikes are *de facto*, in the truth of their practice, better Subjects, generally ſpeaking, then Proteſtants have ſhewen themſelves to be, or indeed can well be, ſtanding to their principles. Theſe objections are but few, and therefore I ſhall diſpatch them breifly. The firſt is 14.

brought against Doctor *Allen*, for teaching to murther Princes, in a certain Apology, which he wrote of the Seminaries, & citing *Num.* 25. to that purpose. I answer, The mistake is very great; it was not Doctor *Allen*, but Doctor *Goodman* (if we may call him so) that citeth that Text of *Numbers* to that purpose. His words are these. *Factum illud quod memoratur* Num. 25. *perpetuum est exemplum in omnem eternitatem*, &c. *That which is reported*, saith he, in *Num.* 25. *viz.* of taking the *Heads of the people* that had committed Idolatry, and hanging them up before the Lord, *is an example upon record to all posterity, and a duty for ever lying upon the people, that in the like case they deal with their Governors in like maner*, that is, *that they take them and Hang them up against the Sun, when they withdraw the people from the true worship of God. And although*, saith he, *it may seem a great disorder, that Common people should take so much Authority upon them, yet when the*

Goodm. Obedien.

inferior

inferior Magistrate neglecteth his office, the Common people must be looked upon, as having no Magistrate at all to direct them: and in such case God puts the Sword immediately into their hands, and is their Captain and guide in the work. This I say, is all *Goodmans* Doctrine, and not Doctor *Allens*; into whose thoughts it never came to conceive, much less to publish such Paradoxes of sedition. All that he teacheth tends rather to the contrary, *viz.* to keep people in their due bounds, and to exhort them not to be transported by any unadvised or evil passions against their governors under a pretence of zeal. He confesseth indeed, 'tis a thing commendable, when men are zealous for true Religion; but he adviseth, that they act *modo & Tempore, in due manner*, that is, no otherwise then lawfully they may, and with regard unto all other acknowledged rules of a good conscience; and *in due season*, that is, not untill they be called thereto by lawful Authority:

Num. 25. 45. as in the case of the Idolatrous *Israelites*: and the place alledged is plain; The people acted nothing but by command of *Moses*, who was Supream Magistrate: Neither did he command any thing to be done, but from the mouth of God, and according to the expres Law, *Deut.* 13. This is not to put the Sword into the peoples hand, and to permit them to execute their fiery zeal upon whom they please, under a pretence of punishing Idolatry, and rooting out Superstition; especially such, as no man judgeth to be so but themselves. The Second objection is made by Doctor *Sutcliff* in his *Turcopapismus* against Father *Parsons*, *viz.* that he suborned or hired *Roderick Lopez*, a *Portugheß*, and some others to kill the Queen: Which Treason, saith he, was discovered by the Earl of *Essex*. I answer, it is like the Tale of *Peter Panny*, that was reported to be hired by *Mavaræus* a Doctor of *Doway* and Provincial of the Jesuites, to kill Count *Maurice*; which

which upon examination proved but a Fable, and ſo will this. For firſt, was there any perſon named in that Action but *Lopez* and his Countrimen, that is, ſome *Portugheſſes* and *Spaniards*? I have ſeen and read all the Examinations taken in that buſineſs, wherein all the circumſtances thereof are declared, The Ayders, Movers, Actors, all nominated: There is not the leaſt mention of Father *Parſons* in the whole buſineſs, from firſt to laſt. Secondly, when Maſter *Egerton* at *Guild-hall* ſo largely and eloquently urged all he could, did he ſo much as once name Father *Parſons*? Or was he a man likely to forget him, if he had found or thought him any way Acceſſory? Beſide all this, *F. Parſons* himſelf was known to be a man not of that weakneſs (whatſoever men will think of his honeſty) as to venture his reputation, life, intereſt and all ſo unadviſedly in a forreign bottom, and ſubject to ſo many leaks, as that was. This therefore may

pass for a scandalous Fiction and Hear-say, but no more. A Third objection is made against *Parry*, and sounded aloud in all mens eares, as a reproach and stain indelible to Catholike Religion. The sum of the charge is, that *Parry* was incited by the Popes Letters to kill the Queen. I answer, The Acts or process it self of his Examination and Tryal do shew, that having conference with Master *Wats* a Seminary Priest about this business, the said Master *Wats* disliked both his motion and attempt, and told him, that *it was a thing unlawful that he went about*: As likewise did some other Priests also, when they understood the business. Secondly, at *Lyons* coming to *F. Creighton* a Jesuite, and after Confession discovering his intention to him, out of some Confidence, it seems, that the good man would bite at such a bait, he found himself as much mistaken here, as before. For the Father resolves him, *That it was utterly unlawful*, and useth diverse reasons

reaſons to diſwade him from any further proceeding, as *Parry* himſelf confeſſeth to the Queen, and *Holinſhead* in his Chronicle doth acknowledge: So that already both the Prieſt and Jeſuites are acquitted. There remains onely the Letter of Cardinal *Como* to be conſidered. Touching which we are to know, this *Parry* had lived in *Italy*, as a Spy, a long time, and being upon his return, was deſirous to furniſh himſelf with a project, that might ſerve his turn in *England* both ways, that is, both to abuſe Catholikes, (as he did, by pretence of the Popes Letters,) and to deceive the Queen. Therefore having found ſo little encouragement at *Lyons*, as we have ſaid, he travels to *Paris*, and endeavors to inſinuate himſelf with Father *Parſons*, (who was there at that time, with the Lord *Paget*) but with no better ſucceſs to his deſigns, then he had found before with *F. Creighton* and Maſter *Wats*. Howbeit by ſome means he procured himſelf acceſs

acceſs to the Popes Nuncio then reſident in the City, to whom he preſents a Letter written in Italian by himſelf, which he deſires might be recommended by the ſaid Nuncio to his Holineſs; which was done. In this Letter he confeſſeth firſt, what great wrongs he had done to the *Engliſh* Catholikes in former time; but was now returning into *England*, intending to make them ſome ſatisfaction by his ſervice there: And to that end deſired the Approbation and Benediction of his Holineſs; not ſpecifying any thing in particular, what he intended; as may be ſeen by his Letter, which is upon Record. To this Letter of *Parry*, Cardinal *Como* anſwereth in the Popes name, in ſuch manner as every man knows. For the Cardinals Letter is common to be ſeen. Let any man read and examine it, if there be any particular ſervice intimated, or any Treaſonable or ſeditious directions given; but onely a general encouragement

to

to a *good work* (as leaſt that might be preſumed ſo by thoſe who wrote, knowing nothing to the contrary) which was onely in general offered. And what reaſonable man can think, that his Holineſs could do leſs in ſuch a caſe, then he did, *viz.* then to command a Complement to be returned unto a kindneſs, which for ought appeared, was offered onely in Complement? To have denied that, His Holineſs muſt have ſeem'd to ſlight too much the opinion of his Nuncio; by whoſe recommendation the Letter of *Parry* was preſented at *Rome*: And who indeed (if any) was the man ſurprized in the buſineſs, by giving ſo much credit to a perſon not ſufficiently known to him. The truth is, *Parry*'s deſigns were malicious every way; both in reſpect of the Catholikes, with whom he intended, by means of the ſaid Letters, to inſinuate himſelf ſo far (if he could) and to gain ſuch confidence with them, as to be able at leaſt, when time

time ſhould be, to do ſome of them miſchief: and in reſpect of the Queen, whom he abuſed along time, pretending, by colour of the ſelf ſame Letters, that he was really ſuborned and ſent by the Pope to attempt ſome violence upon her Majeſtie. Being therefore furniſhed ſome thing to his minde, (as aboveſaid) he departeth privately from *Paris*, without ſo much as taking leave of *F. Parſons*, as by whom he found neither himſelf nor his buſineſs to be much regarded) and procures a Paſs to be ſent him from the Lord *Burleigh* to come into *England*, upon pretence that he had ſome great matters to impart to the Queen. So he came; the Queen heard him: and he informed, *That the Jeſuites had moved him to kill her.* But not being able to name any in *England*, he was diſmiſſed, on purpoſe to be a Spy here at home, and to diſcover ſuch Catholikes to the Counſel, as perhaps, might be found leſs affectionate towards her perſon. And to

gain

gain him the better credit with them, *viz.* the Catholikes, it was ordered so, that he was once very formally convented in Parliament, where he so boldly defended Catholike Religion, and the Catholikes of *England*; that the Parliament it self, not knowing, that all was but out of design by the Queen and her Counsel, committed him to the Tower: Which did indeed very much encrease his reputation with the Priests and Fathers here. But his liberty was soon procured, and himself had such continual access to the Queen, such favor with the Treasurer and others, that once he had no small hopes to have been made Master of Saint *Katharines*. Howbeit the Counsel perceiving him but to faulter, and fail in the main business, *viz.* of betraying Catholikes, and especially in the business of the Lord *Latimor*, (whom the Treasurer would fain have caught in *Parries* net) himself at last became suspected, and entangled by degrees in such Snares,

as

as he could never winde himself out, but perished in that manner, which he had justly deserved, and for which no man lamented him.

15. A Fourth objection is against *F. Richard Walpoole* of the Society; who was accused by one *Squire* upon the Rack, to have encouraged him to poyson the Queen. The Story is thus. The said *Squire*, and one *Rolls*, being in a Pinnace of Sir *Francis Drakes* in the year 1596. were taken by *Don Pero Tellio*, and brought prisoners to *Sivil*: where F. *Parsons*, (happening to be there at that time) procured for them liberty, and also necessary apparel, and so sent them home. At Saint *Lucars*, through their own indiscretion, they fall into the Inquisition, and are thereupon remanded back again to *Sivil*; where this said Father *Walpoole* then being, was as ready to do them charitable offices in their necessity, as Father *Parsons* had been before. So he procured them liberty the Second

cond time, not indeed to depart without leave, but to be forthcoming, when they ſhould be called to appear: and to this he engaged his credit, having firſt made proviſion of neceſſary ſubſiſtance for *Rolls* in the Jeſuites Colledge, and for *Squire* in a Monaſtery. But they both fled away ſecretly, and left Father *Walpoole* in the Lurch to anſwer for them: yet afterwards ſending him Letters to excuſe their ſuddain departure; which he alſo produced for his diſcharge. So they came into *England*. And as it happens ſometimes with Travellers, eſpecially of ſuch quality as they were, to talk of much more then is true, and to pretend acquaintance abroad with thoſe, which perhaps they ſcarce ever ſaw; ſo it ſeems this *Squire* in his diſcourſes of the intimacy and familiarity which he had with Jeſuites, and ſuch men abroad, did overſhoot himſelf ſo far, as to let fall ſomething capable of miſconſtruction, and which an Adverſary of his,

one

one *Stallenge*, catching up at the second hand, made shift to improve into an accusation of Treason against the said *Squire*, *viz.* That he had been Counselled by a Jesuite to poyson the Queen, and concealed it. But let the Reader consider circumstances well, and then weigh the Endictment. *Squire* is accused, that Father *Walpoole* moved and instructed him to poyson the Queen, and preached to him at his departure to that purpose. Is this probable? For first they fled both of them away secretly from *Sivil*, *Squire* and *Rols* together, without Father *Walpooles* knowledge, and as 'tis generally known to be true. Secondly, *Squire* was a man, that always professed himself a Protestant, in *Spain* as well as in *England*; and so died. Who can dream that Father *Walpoole* knowing this, as well as himself, should make such a propositon to him? Thirdly, both at his arraignment and death he constantly denied any such matter

ter to have been propounded to him by any perſon on earth. And though having bin upon the Rack no leſs then five times, the torture made him at laſt to ſpeak ſomething againſt himſelf, yet he afterwards conſtantly denied it, even to his death. And all men know, an argument from the Rack, eſpecially when 'tis afterwards diſavowed, is reckoned elſewhere but a mean evidence or proof. Fourthly he was a man that had a Wife and Children in *England*, and therefore not likely to be drawn into ſuch a plot, but upon ſome great and preſent temptation; which how unable a man Father *Walpoole* was to undertake, the world knows: being only a Prieſt of the Society, a poor Religious man, and under ſuperiors. Fifthly, *Rolls*, his companion, who came along with him, never heard of any ſuch thing, nor was ever queſtioned about it. Laſtly, the device it ſelf was as ridiculous and improbable, as any thing could be.

be. It was to be done (*Scilicet* this Treason) by poysoning the Queens Saddle. But how is it possible to imagine such a thing should be done by a stranger, and neither the Groomes of the Stable, nor the Querries (which are continually attending upon the Queens Horse) discover the business; none of which were ever questioned about it. *Mariana*'s Problematicall opinion is a Fifth objection; as it happens. But I shall not stand long about it. First, because it was but a private opinion, not any general Doctrine of Catholikes. Secondly because it was onely propounded by him *problematically*, *viz.* in way of disputation, not *positively* taught, as his own words shew. Thirdly, because his whole Order disavowed it, *viz.* in a Congregation held at *Paris Anno* 1606. confirmed by their General *Claudius Aquaviva*. Cardinal *Tolet* Categorically determineth the contrary, *Summa. Lib.* 5. *Cap.* 6. as likewise doth *Gregor. Valent. Part.* 2. *Q.* 64. *Card. Bellarm.*

Bellarm. Apolog. Cap. 13. *Salmeron in Cap.* 13. *ad Rom. Leſſ. de Juſtit. & Jure, Lib.* 2. *Cap.* 9. *Dub.* 4. *Serrar. in Cap.* 13. *Judic. Azorius Inſtitut. Moral. Becanus ad Aphoriſm.* 9. *Gretſer* in his *Veſpertilio*, or *Hereticō-Politicus. Richeome* in his Apology. Laſtly, the Doctors of the Sorbon, as they had done formerly, *viz. Anno* 1413. ſo now again *Anno* 1606 they declare it to be *an unlawful and wicked Poſition.* As for *Simancha*, he may ſeem rather a Lawyer then a Divine, and muſt be underſtood to ſpeak according to particular Laws or Conſtitutions of ſome Nations, and Kingdoms; and whoſoever will but read *Heiſius* his *Reſpons. ad Aphoriſmos*, eſpecially *Pag.* 85. & 91. ſhall eaſily perceive, that neither *Simancha* nor *Becanus* were guilty of that error. Maſter *Cuthbert Mayn*'s bringing of a Bull, or Breve of the Pope into *England* is a Sixth. And for ſuch a pretended Treaſon he was executed at *Launſton*, upon Saint *Andrews* day, 1577. as *Stow* ſaith in his Chroni-

cles,

cles, *for preferring of Roman power.* His Indictment was for bringing in the ſaid Bull; and for reconciling of Maſter *Tregion.* But as for Maſter *Tregion* it is anſwered already, That he was reconciled unto God and to the Communion of his Church; and not obliged to any particular ſervice in behalf of the Pope in one kinde or other. And concerning the Bull, whereas the Law intends it in cleer words, that the party accuſed ſhould procure it immediately from *Rome*, it was anſwered in behalf of Maſter *Mayne*, that he never ſought nor procured any Bull from *Rome*. That which he had was onely the Copy of a Bull printed, which he bought at *Doway*, *onely to peruſe and ſee the manner of it*; neither was it a Bull for reconciling any man, or for doing any thing prejudicial to the Queen, or State; but onely a Bull of the Jubily that was paſſed. Which as it is a thing granted of courſe by the Pope every Five and twenty years, and not at the Suit

or

or instance of any particular person; so was it also out of date and force when he bought it, being expired with the year 1575. and so upon the matter was no more then a Scroll, or an Almanack of the last year. And yet notwithstanding, because such a Paper as this was found about him, and that he refused to come to Church, Judge *Manwood* told the Jury, *That where manifest proofs could not be had, presumptions must be allowed*: So the Jury quickly found him guilty upon such direction, and he suffered. Master *Tregion* lay a long time in prison among Felons, and in a Dungeon most noysome, fed with bread and water; although he were a Gentleman of One thousand pound *per annum* of old Rent: But being condemned in a *Præmunire*, for harbouring a Priest, his Lands were seized by Writ into the Exchequer; and though they were Entailed, yet could the Knight Marshal finde means to avoid that, and so begd them of the Queen. Lastly,

the

the whole busines rested upon the accusation of one *Twiggs*, a Parish Clerk; which was also false; for he deposed against Master *Mayne* for Christmas 1575. when it was certainly known, that he was at that time at *Doway*.

16. The Rising in the North, and the Attempts of *Babington* in the business of the Queen of Scots, were mixt Actions, not for Religion onely, nor State onely; but for both: Nor were they procured by the suit or sollicitation of Priests or Religious men, but out of their own zeal who were engaged in those Attempts. The first, as some have said, was but the effect of a resolution, which many of the Lords of the Councel had taken to pull down *Cecil*, who, being but Secretary, and a very new man at Court, over-acted his part, and had given no small matter of offence to some of the greatest Lords; but by a timely submission he made means to qualifie them: and so the business was not owned, so far as other-

And. Philop.

otherwiſe it might have been. The other, *viz.* of *Babington* and his Aſſociates, was onely to deliver out of an unjuſt priſon, the perſon of an abſolute Princeſs, and one who was no way a ſubject of *England*, further, ſay they, then ſhe was by fraud procured ſo to be; nor an enemy, further then ſhe was forced by injuries, and a deſire to ſee her ſelf at liberty. Howbeit for this reſpect they are not within compaſs of my undertaking. Nor am I to ſay any more concerning the Sentence Declaratory of *Pius Quintus* againſt the Queen. The grounds and reaſons thereof are alledged in the Bull it ſelf; to which may be added many unſeemly and ſcandalous provocations dayly given by the New Miniſters out of the Pulpits, calling him *Antichriſt*, *the Man of Sin*, *the Son of Perdition*, and what not? which the Queen and State were content publikely to connive at, and countenance. Others attribute it to miſ-information, and that his Holineſs was not

made rightly to understand the Queenes case, and of the Catholikes of *England*. And this is certain, that many godly, wise, and judicious Catholikes, both of the Clergy and others, were not a little grieved at the manner of proceeding, and wish'd rather (Cardinal *Allen* himself, Bishop *Watson*, and others) that it had been *wholly left to the judgement of God*; As we see well enough, it had been in other cases of this Nature; Neither in King *Edward* the Sixths time, nor against the Kings of *Scotland*, *Denmark*, *Sweden*, Duke of *Saxony*, Marquis of *Brandenburgh*, or any other Protestant Prince, was there ever any such sentence issued to this day. Whereupon Father *Parsons*, and Father *Campian* procured some kinde of mitigation concerning it, presently after the publishing; and Pope *Gregory* following declared, *That the Subjects of* England *ought to perform all duties to* Queen Elizabeth, *notwithstanding the censures*. So little reason is there in

in truth, that Protestants should clamour so loud as they do, and cry out nothing but *Treason, Treason*, against religious and good men; who, as they have no other business, so come they hither for no other end, but to do them good, and, so far as lieth in their power and office, to save their souls. They tell the world, that no less then two hundred Priests have been executed in *England for Treason*, since the times of Reformation; which is certainly a very heavy report, and sufficient to make them odious to all the world, if it were true, or that there were any thing in it but fallacie and æquivocation of words; whiles they call that Treason in *England*, which in all parts of *Christendome* besides is both called and counted Religion and the highest Vertue. For we beseech them to tell us of what Treason do they convict us at any time, but the Treason of *being a Priest?* the Treason *to say Mass?* the Treason *to refuse the Oath?* the Treason *to*

absolve Penitents confessing their sins? the Treason *to restore men to the Communion of the Church?* the Treason *to Preach and Administer Christs Sacraments?* the Treason *to be bred up in the Seminaries*, that is, in such places, where onely, (as things now stand in *England*) they can be Catholikely bred, and fitted for such Christian imployment? What actual and real Treason is in *England*, according to the true sense and notion of that crime (odious both to God and man) the Statute of 25 *Edw.* 3. will inform us better then any other, being enacted when the whole Kingdom was *of one mind and of one judgement* (as all Christian Kingdoms and Societies ought to be) not rent, nor overborn by factions and parties, undermining and supplanting one another by indirect and undue meanes, as it was when these new Statutes of Treason were made. By that Statute, and by the opinions of the most learned Judges in *England*, *Ployden*, *Stamford*, &c. Treason must alwayes

wayes be some Action, or Intention actually discovered; not an opinion onely, or a profession of Religion. And this is the reason why Sir *John Oldcastle*, (one of Mr. *Fox* his Martyrs, in the Reign of *Henry* the Fifth mentioned before) though he were both Traytor and Heretike; yet for his Treason he was condemned in one Court, and for his Heresie in another: as also were *Cranmer* and *Ridley* in Queen *Maries* time. Secondly, it must be some Act, or Intention discovered of a subject prejudicial to his Soveraign, or to the State where he lives. But what hurt had ever (I say not Queen *Mary*, *Henry* the Eighth (while he stood right) *Henry* the Seventh, or any other Catholike Prince, but even) Queen *Elizabeth* her self, King *James*, or any other Protestant Prince, by a Priests saying Mass, absolving of Penitents, preaching of sound Doctrine to them, and particularly of all due and just obedience to Civil Magistrates, as they have ever con- *Stow.*

ſtantly done ? Therefore by the common Laws of *England*, and *in it ſelf* it is not, it cannot be Treaſon or criminous *to be a Prieſt*, *to ſay Maſs*, *Abſolve*, &c. But onely by Statute Laws it is *made ſo* upon temporary and preſent occaſions, and for certain politick ends, which men have projected of themſelves, and which they are reſolved to follow. And therefore alſo it is by the very Statutes themſelves provided 22. and 27. *Elizab.* That if a Prieſt conforms, be content to go to Church, to renounce the Pope or his Orders, &c. he becomes *ipſo facto* without more ado, *Rectus in Curia*, and is actually diſcharged of all imputation of Treaſon; no further proceedings lie againſt him. Yea even at the very place of Execution, and when the inſtruments of death are upon him, yet ſtill 'tis in his own power, if he pleaſe, in three words to pardon himſelf, and fruſtrate the expectation of ſo many eyes, as are commonly waiting to ſee his laſt *Exit*. Let him but,

ſay

ſay, *I will conform*, or *I will ſwear*, &c. Ther's no man living dares meddle with him further. Which is far otherwiſe where the offence is judged to be *Treaſon indeed*, and really prejudicial to the Prince or State. But the fatal reſolution being taken *to change Religion*, upon a principle or pretended reaſon of State, as falſe as the Counſel it ſelf was evil, *viz. That otherwiſe the Queen could not be ſecure either of her Kingdom or Life*, it was neceſſary to take a ſevere courſe with thoſe men, whoſe Function obliged them to maintain True Religion, and to endeavour to reduce things again into the old State. From this root alſo ſprang their extream jealouſie and hatred of the Queen of *Scots*. For ſhe being Heir Apparent to the Crown after Queen *Elizabeth*, and a Princeſs zealouſly affected unto Catholike Religion, and ſo ſtrongly Allied in *France*, Thoſe Statemen, who had contrived and wrought all the alterations here, could never think themſelves ſe-

cure, ſo long as her head ſtood upon her ſhoulders. Therefore was ſhe firſt invited into *England*, upon pretence of Friendſhip, and for Safety: But when ſhe was here uſed with ſo much unkindneſs, and kept under reſtraint for little leſs then twenty years together, that at laſt, in order to procure her Liberty, ſhe was indeed provoked to doe ſomething, which it was eaſie for them who loved her not, to interpret to be Treaſon: and ſo they cut off her head. From hence alſo ſprung thoſe continual injuries and practiſes of much ingratitude againſt the King of *Spain*, The intercepting of his Treaſure, The holding of his Towns, The aydıng of *Orange* and the States, as hath been ſaid. Laſtly, from this onely Source and Fountain of unjuſt Policie ſprung all thoſe laws of ſeverity and bloud againſt Recuſants, as we are commonly called, *viz.* of *Twenty pound a moneth*, of *Two third parts of Eſtate*, againſt *Hearing Maſs*, againſt *Harbouringa Prieſt*,

Priest, against *Being reconciled*, &c. It is well known, the Recusants of *England*, against whom those Laws were made, were generally persons, in all degrees, of the Noblest quality in this Nation, Vertuous, Grave, Wise, Charitable, Just, and Good men, of fair and friendly Conversation towards all: I shall not say, Loyal to their Prince, because the contrary is so commonly beleeved; yet our own Chronicles will not altogether deny them right in that regard, while they testifie how diligent and forward they were to offer their service to the Queen and State, even in that great Action of Eighty eight. Neither were they altogether refused by her Majesty. They were also generally men of plentiful Fortunes and good Estates; and are so still, except such as the Lawes and hard times have impoverished. Yet because for Conscience sake they refuse to hear Common-prayer and Sermons, to receive the Communion according to the new order of Stow.

the Church of *England*, they ſtand by Law, as it were, marked out for deſtruction, and branded with all the Characters of ignominy, ſuſpition, and prejudice, which the people of any State, even for the greateſt crimes actually commited, can juſtly ſuffer. It is reported by a great Lawyer of this Nation, that from *primo Eliz. ab.* till the Bull of *Pius Quintus* was publiſhed, which was about half a ſcore or a dozen years after; *No perſon in* England *refuſed to come to Church*; as if perchance that Bull had been the ſole occaſion which Catholikes took to diſobey the Queens Injunctions. But it is a great error. For not to ſpeak any thing of Puritans (many of whom before that time refuſed the Church-Service) how many Biſhops and Prieſts were there in *England*, known and profeſſed Recuſants from the firſt beginning? How many Noblemen and Gentlemen of account did openly and abſolutely refuſe to joyn with their New Church? It is true, and to

Sir Edw. Cook.

be lamented, The revolt of the *Engliſh* under Queen *Elizabeth* from the true Catholike Religion, ſo lately reſtored, was too general; and too many there were, who ſuffered themſelves to be carried away with the ſtream of Authority, and with the evill example of their Neighbors, and eſpecially of Great Ones. But what is this but a general infirmity and weakneſs commonly obſerved in the people? What Form ſoever of Religious Profeſſion a State ſets up, it proves an Idol to them, and they are apt to fall down before it; yea, though the Figure, which they worſhip, (as it happens ſometimes) hath much more of the Calf, then of the Man in it. And for this reſpect it cannot but be matter of much conſideration to all wiſe States-men, and States, to be well adviſed how far they proceed in this kinde, *viz.* of eſtabliſhing or ſetting up any outward form or profeſſion of Religion whatſoever, eſpecially by any compulſory Acts or Penalties; leaſt

leſt *the blood of Souls* lye upon their account another day. As moſt certainly it ſhall, whenſoever people are miſled into any corrupt way of Religion, meerly upon the Authority and Reſolution of the State. And yet notwithſtanding there were in many places of the Kingdom, not a few of worthy and conſtant Catholikes, who *never bowed theer knees unto Baal*, that is, never conſented, nor made profeſſion of Hereſie one way or other; as *Lanhearne*, *Aſhby de la Zouch*, *Grafton*, *Dingley*, *Cowdrey*, and many other places can witneſs: by whoſe integrity the Catholike Church in *England*, (*viz.* that *Remnant according to the election of Grace*, which God was pleaſed to preſerve here from the general contagion, to glorifie his name by ſuffering, and to give Teſtimony unto Truth) have ſubſiſted and ſtood by the great mercy of God, unto this day; though indeed ſuffering grievouſly for their Conſcience, (as God was pleaſed from time

time to time to exercise them) by confiscation of their Estates, vexations by Pursivants and Promoters, restraint and imprisonment of their persons, at *Wisbich*, *Ely*, *Banbury*, *York*, *Ludlow*, *Bury*, *the Fleet*, *Gatehouse*, &c. Not to speak any thing of the spoil of their Woods, leasing their Lands, exaction of Fines, nor yet of their *disarming by Law*; because this last, (though it were as unjust and undeserved as the rest, yet) it had more of disgrace and ignominy in it, then of real damage; arguing onely suspition or jealousie, which the State would seem to have of them, and nothing more. But *the Twenty pounds a moneth* was a burden insupportable, especially to the meaner sort: Although it must be confessed, the rigour and extremity thereof was many times moderated by the Lord Treasurer *Burleigh*.

Now to compare these men with the Recusant Puritans in *England*, (for such, we must know, there are, more then a good many in all Coun- 17

Countries: All Recusants are not Popish) if it were not too odious, it might be very necessary; and the world could not but see much better, and acknowledge the patience, humility, and obsequious deportment of Catholikes, compared with the others insolency and stoutness. For tis very well seen already, that this growing Sect of Protestant Recusants are not men likely to bear such burdens, should the State finde it necessary to impose them. They discover a far different Spirit, even now, while they are but in their shell, as we may say, and without any visible power or interest within the Nation, save that of their number. Compare them with the Recusant *Hugonots* of *France* (who are Brethren, and of the same principles with ours in *England*) you would think our Catholike Gentlemen here to be all Priests, in respect of their sober, humble, and Christian carriage of themselves, whensoever they fall under question for Religion; Their very Ministers there;

you

you would take to be all Sword-men, Captains, Sons of *Mars*, so much fury & rage breaths out in every word or action of theirs, which relates to the publike. Catholikes here are persons of all other most unwilling to offend; Recusants there most unwilling to obey. These defend their Religion with their Swords, and by resistance of the Civil Magistrate; ours onely with their Pen and with their prayers. Ours endure, and à *Scio cui credidi* with St. *Paul*, is all their comfort: These endure nothing, wil trust no body with their cause, but themselves and their Cautionary towns; They have their *Bezas*, Their *Marlorates*, *Chamiers*, and other *Boutefeux* swarming thick in all parts of the Kingdom, ready to incense and set on fire the distempered multitude against their lawful governors; they have their *Montaubans*, their *Rochels*, *Saumars*, *Montpeliers*, places of refuge and retreat, strong and well fortified to shelter themselves, when they cannot make good their designs

designs in the field. Catholikes here have none of all these; They have no Preachers, but Preachers of Pennance and Mortification: They hear no Sermons at any time, but such as teach them Obedience, Patience, Resignation to the will of God, and to be willing to suffer whatsoever the will of God is. They have no places of security but their own unarmed houses; which if they change, it is always for the Fleet, Gatehouse, Newgate or som other prison and place of restraint. Much talk there is among Protestants, of the Inquisition, its severity, cruelty, partiality (and what not?) to make it odious and terrible to the people; but verily if a man do well consider it, in comparison of the troubles, vexation, and manifold danger both for life, liberty and estate, whereto the Catholikes of *England*, Priests and Religious persons especially, are subject, it may seem rather a Scare-crow, then any thing else. *Charls* the Fifth Em-

peror

peror in the year 1521. at *Worms* decreed onely *Exile* againſt *Luther*, notwithſtanding his obſtinacy, and all the miſchief, which he had brought upon *Germany*; and that his Books ſhould be burned. In the year 1526. at *Machlin* he enacted a Penalty againſt Hereticks, and all ſuch as diſputed the Controverſies of Religion Heretically, or that kept prohibited Books, *viz.* for the firſt offence Forty ſhillings, for the Second Four pound, for the Third Eight pound, and Baniſhment; as the beſt remedy he could think of to preſerve others from infection. In the year 1529. if they repented not of their error, he adjudged *Viris ignem, Mulieribus foſſam*, That men ſhould be burned, and women buried alive; which was no more then anciently the Laws preſcribed, nor then what *Calvin* himſelf exerciſed upon *Servetus* at *Genevah*. In the year 1531. he confirmed theſe former Acts, with ſomething additional againſt ſuch as pulled down Images, or

defaced

defaced them with any malitious intention, *viz.* that ſuch perſons ſhould looſe their goods. This is the ſum of all thoſe Laws of the Emperor *Charl.* the Fifth, concerning Religion, ſo much complained of in the Low-Countries: and concerning the Execution whereof there were alſo many exceptions, qualifications and limitations procured by the Regent in the year 1555. upon adviſe of *Viglius* Preſident of the Counſel at *Bruſſels*; and to take away all occaſions that might poſſibly hinder Traffick, or be a means of oppreſſion to innocent and quiet people. And for King *Philip*, he always profeſſed (particularly in his anſwer to *Montigny* in *Spain*) that he intended no addition of ſeverity to his Fathers Laws, nor to create any new offences, but onely to puniſh thoſe, which were of old cenſured for offences both by the Church and State. Let us look then upon *England*, and conſider, if the penalties upon Catholikes here be not far more

more in number, and much more ſevere. To acknowledge the Popes Supremacy *in Spiritualibus* is Treaſon; To be reconciled is Treaſon; To refuſe the Oath, upon the firſt offence is a *Præmunire*, the ſecond Treaſon. For Prieſts to come over into *England* is Treaſon; if any that were made Prieſts ſince *primo Elizab.* ſhall ſtay Forty days in *England* after the Parliament 1585. 'tis Treaſon. To Harbor a Prieſt is Felony and Death. If yong Students beyond Sea return not, and abjure their Religion it is Treaſon. To bring in an *Agnus Dei*, Beads, or Croſſes is a *Præmunire*; To bring a Bull, or any Sentence of Excommunication from *Rome*, that may concern the Queen is Treaſon. To abſolve or reconcile a man is Treaſon; Not coming to Church was at firſt Twelve pence every Sunday, and to be liable to further cenſure; afterwards, *viz. Twenty ſeven Elizab.* it was made Twenty pound a moneth, where it could be had;

otherwiſe

otherwiſe their bodies were to fine for it in priſon. To depart out of the Realm without Licenſe, and not to return within Six moneths after the Proclamation, is a forfeiture of all Goods and Lands during life. To hear Maſs is an offence fined at One hundred Marks. If a mans Son or Servant (not Merchant) goeth beyond Sea with his conſent, he forfeits One hundred pounds. I ſpeak nothing of their loſs of goods, impriſonments, reproaches, chains, fetters, which upon many other pretended and feigned occaſions they are frequently made ſubject unto: nor of baniſhment; which would be counted many times matter of great favor. Nor yet of the rigorous and vexatious execution of all theſe Laws; which makes the Tower full of ſuch Patients, and new priſons to be erected for the entertainment of them: nor of the hard uſage, which they frequently find in thoſe priſons. The ſad examples of Maſter *Tregion* at *Launſton*, of Maſter *Rigby*,

Rigby, of Master *Christopher Watson*, (who perished at *York*, with Eighteen persons more, in the year 1581. with the very infection of the prison) do shew sufficiently what they suffer. Adde hereunto the strict examination of the Justices, the proceedings of the High-Commission against them, (that inquisition of *England* not altogether untruly so called) the multitude of Promoters in all the Temporal Courts of the Kingdom informing against them, of Pursuivants searching and rifling their houses upon every light suspicion, and not seldom without any at all, but onely to make them *Fine*, and to purchase their quiet with money. Lastly, the Racks and Torturings, which Father *Campian*, Father *Southwel*, with many others tasted in their times, how can they be forgotten? concerning whose case, (I mean of Father *Campian* and his Associates especially) beside that the whole matter of their Accusation seemed upon Tryal rather to be grounded

upon

upon words and ſome verbal diſcourſe, then upon any Actual deſign or attempt really projected againſt the Queen or the State; and beſide, that at the time of their Tryal (as I have been credibly informed) there were perſons of very Honeſt Quality, who offered to depoſe, that ſundry of the Parties accuſed were, at the times ſpecified in their ſeveral charges, many hundreds of miles diſtant, from the places, where their ſuppoſed Treaſons and Conſpiracies were ſaid to be: I ſay, beſide all this, the Queens unwillingneſs to have them dye, (teſtified by her own Hiſtorian) is argument ſufficient with indifferent men, what great Traytors ſhe conceived them to be. For their Arraignment and Tryal having been in *November* 1581. * they ſuffered not till the firſt of *Septemb er* 1582. and then it was *ægrè conſentiente Reginâ*, as *Camden* himſelf confeſſeth. They who ſought their lives, had much ado to procure the Queens conſent, that

* Stow.

the

the Sentence of death ſhould be executed upon them. Surely there is no man ſo extreamly partial or purblinde but will eaſily obſerve, how much greater affliction and preſſures the Catholikes of *England* have endured by the Laws of this Realm, then the *Geuſes* of *Holland* ever did, or could do by the inquiſition among them. And how much more their ſtate and condition might be juſtly commiſerated; eſpecially, when not onely Anabaptiſts, and thoſe other more innocent and harmleſs Sects, but Puritans, great and ſtubborn enemies of the State, Arians, Socinians, yea even Profeſſed Atheiſts, and men of far more violent paſſions and deſtructive principles, then Catholikes can with any reaſon be ſuppoſed to hold, are ſcarce ſearched after, or puniſhed. And yet notwithſtanding all this, to preſerve the Queens reputation for Humanity and fair dealing with her Subjects, the Book called *the Execution of Engliſh Juſtice* will make

the

the world beleeve, *That no man in* England *is punished for Religion*, no mans *Conscience* is medled with-all, no man is examined *upon matters of Faith*. But is it possible that such a pretence should be sustained by man, so notoriously contrary to truth, so easily, so manifestly disprovable even by sight, and the evidence of their own dayly proceedings? In the year 1581. there was a general Pardon granted by the Queen, but with a strict Caution and Proviso, *That no person in Prison, nor Recusant for Religion*, should have benefit thereby; which Malefactors of all sorts had. Was this no punishment? The Recusants pay Twenty pound a moneth for their Recusancy? is this no punishment? The *Turk* himself layeth not any greater upon the Christians under him. All, or most of the old Catholike Bishops and Clergy of *England* died in prisons, (as Master *Prinn* himself confesseth of the chiefest of them) *among Rogues, Murtherers and Felons in the Marshalsea*;

Antipath. of Prelat.

Marſhalſea; The reſt in *Exile* for Religion; is this no puniſhment? Or was there any other Crime laid to their charge, but onely matter of Religion? Not to ſpeak of many others, Maſter *William Anderſon in* 45. *Elizab.* was executed upon no other charge, but that he was a Prieſt, and then found to be in *England*; ſo was Maſter *Barckworth* in the year 1600. was this no puniſhment? *Anno* 35. *Elizab.* Maſter *Barwis* a Citizen of *London* was executed, for being reconciled to to the Church: and Maſter *Pormort* attainted (at leaſt) for reconciling him; was this no puniſhment? In the year 1575. (as *Holinſhead* himſelf recordeth it for a matter to be noted) The Lady *Morley*, the Lady *Brown*, the Lady *Guildford* were committed all of them to priſon; onely for hearing Maſs, and Leaſes preſently made of two Third parts of their Lands; was this no puniſhment? I might be infinite in examples of this kinde, but it is needleſs; The caſe is manifeſt, and

the sense of the whole Kingdom proclaimes the contrary, to what that Author pretendeth, convincing his assertion of not a little imposture and calumny.

18. To conclude then, the loyalty and obedience of these Gentlemen, and other people of all sorts (which are commonly called Recusants) towards their King and the State, appears undeniably in all things: not only by their humble petitions to his Majesty that now is, in the year 1604. and at sundry times since; but by their constant and general conformity unto the temporal Government in all Queen *Elizabeths* Reign; by their Protestation made at *Ely* in the year 1588. where a great many of them were prisoners; by some other offers which they made to the Lord *North*, the Queens Lieutenant there, and by their justification of them afterwards; by their submissions sent up to the Lords of the Privy Councel, and their profession of all due acknowledgement towards her

Ma-

Majesty, notwithstanding the sentence of Excommunication; by their readiness to serve her Majesty & the State even in that Action of 88. for which they are so calumniated; Lastly, by the very *Irish* Recusants joyning their Forces with the Queens at *Kinsale*, in the year 1600. All which Arguments do indeed shew them to be subjects *absolutè*, and not *ex conditione*, or by leave of some other, as their adversaries pretend. Let the Reader therefore now judge, if he please, by what hath been said, whether to be a Protestant and a loyal subject, or a Catholike and a loyal subject, be *more incompatible things*. This was the question propounded in the beginning to be declared; and it hath been declared, I suppose, at large, both from their doctrinal assertions, and constant practises in all parts of *Germany*, *France*, *Holland*, *Scotland*, *Genevah*, and many other Countries of *Christendom*, what kinde of people both *Lutherans*, *Calvinist*, and other sectaries generally are towards

their Sovereign Princes. It hath bin ſhewn, that the chief ſcope and end of their endeavours, where they come, is to ſet up their ſeveral profeſſions by the Sword, and violent reſiſtance of the Civil Magiſtrate, doing but his Office in reſtraining them according to Law; yea with the ruin of the Church and State (both) that ſhall oppoſe them. This, I ſay, both the *Lutherans* in *Germany*, the *Hugonots* of *France*, the *Geuſes* of *Holland*, the Proteſtants and Puritans in all other places where they could, have ſo apparently done, or attempted to doe, that there is neither colour of excuſe for it, nor liberty to deny it. The World knoweth what was endeavored in *Germany* againſt the Emperor; in *France* how long continued they in Armes againſt their Sovereign Prince? *viz.* till they had by force (not to ſay contrary to his Oath) extorted from him ſuch Edicts of Pacification, as themſelves liked. And that in *Holland* and *Scotland* (where they had the

the fortune to become Masters) they renounced and deposed their Princes absolutely. On the other side let us consider, how far it is from being true, that wherewith so many Books in *England* have abused the people, *viz.* That *to be a Priest, or a Roman Catholike, and a good Subject withall, is impossible: They are things inconsistent with one another.* For if we look back to former times, we shall easily finde, that from the *Saxons* to King *Henry* the Eighth, it was never made so much as a question; To be a Catholike was never held any bar to Loyalty; and yet the Princes had their differences sometimes with the Pope, even then. And in the grounds of Catholike Faith there is certainly nothing contrary unto civil obedience, and duty towards the temporal Magistrate. Witness the Government of the Sacred Roman Empire, of the Kingdoms of *Spain*, *France*, *Poland*, and many other Christian Principalities and States; All which differing in their several

conſtitutions, or particular formes of Governing, yet doe generally and unanimouſly account him the beſt Subject, and leaſt dangerous to the State, who is moſt of all devoted to Catholike Religion. It is not therefore *malum in ſe & ſimpliciter*, whatſoever Doctor *Morton*, or Parſon *White* ſay, it is not an *evil intrinſecal* to Prieſthood, nor *eſſentially* following the profeſſion of Catholike Religion *to be an evil ſubject*. If it happens to prove ſo at any time, it is *ex accidente*, and from the voluntary wickedneſs of particular men; if not (as too often it doth) from ſome evil conſtitution of State, in which the profeſſion of Catholike Religion hath been unduly ſubverted, and is as unjuſtly prohibited and puniſhed. Neither can it be verified of Catholike Religion καθ' ὅλου, or univerſally, as ſedition and troubling the Civil Government is apparently chargeable upon *Calviniſm*, and the other ſeveral profeſſions of Proteſtancy. Therefore ſurely

ſurely it was an errour both uncivil and indiſcreet in thoſe Doctors, to frame their propoſition ſo general, onely to make us odious and ſuſpected with his Majeſtie, who yet, we hope, underſtands us better then ſo, and knows, that the imputation is groundleſs and meerly paſſionate. We deal not ſo with them. We are ready to acknowledge, that, as to particular perſons, there are many, eſpecially among the Proteſtants of *England*, of more calm and moderate diſpoſitions, of no ſuch fiery zeal, as works in many other of their Brethren abroad; *Boni viri*, *boni cives*, ſuch as we confeſs to be both *good men*, and *good Subjects*, of ſociable nature, obſequious, not inclined to Sedition, nor deſirous to perſecute. And the like good Teſtimony doth even the Author of the *Execution of Engliſh Juſtice* give unto Catholikes, acknowledging their obedience and loyalty towards the late Queen, and that in a time, when they wanted not matter of com-

plaint, for the manifold oppreſſions and afflictions, which were heavy upon them. Tis true; every man may be ſuppoſed to wiſh the advancement of his own Religion, as beleeving it to be right, or the beſt: neither are Catholikes to be excepted in that point: They muſt be permitted to deſire at leaſt, and wiſh for the reſtoring of Catholike Religion, as it ought to be. But ſurely as to the means whereby they procure it, and the courſe and manner of their proceeding that ſeek and endeavor it, This treatiſe hath already ſhewen, what great odds and difference there is betwixt the proceedings of Catholikes, and that of Proteſtants. And that what the one, *viz.* Catholikes, ſeek chiefly by way of Petition, Supplication, Prayer and humble Remonſtrating of their Sufferances; The other, *viz.* Proteſtants, ſeek chiefly by fire and Sword and Cannon Bullet, and by Thundring of Ordnances, rather then Apologies, in their Princes

ears.

ears: Beſide, (to proceed a little further in this Parallel) the Catholikes generally, and for a long time, both in *Germany* and *France* were Paſſive, as in *England* they are ſtill to this day; The Proteſtants were Active, and the offendors. Catholikes onely defend their own, maintain the poſſeſſion of that, which they have quietly held, out of all memory of Men and Ages; Proteſtants invade, and uſurp by force. Prieſts deſire onely to keep that which they once *de jure* had; Miniſters ſeek to get that which they had not. Catholikes obey *ex conſcientiâ*, out of an inflexible principle of Conſcience, and abſolutely ſubmit unto all lawful and eſtabliſhed Government; Proteſtants generally ſpeaking but upon condition, and with ſuch limitations and reſtrictions of their obedience, as they themſelves think good to preſcribe. Prieſts are puniſhed, not for any *formal wickedneſs*, or that which is a crime *in its own nature*, but for ſomething that is ſo, onely *by in-*

terpretation, or in the judgement of the present State; which perhaps a few days agoe did not *judge so*, but the quite contrary. Calvinists, when they suffer, suffer for real and foule crimes; for Sedition, Rebellion, Murther, Treason, not *imputative onely*, fictitious, or made such of late by the prevailing of some particular faction in the State, but truly and properly so, and adjudged for such by all Laws Divine and Humane, of their own Countries and of all Christendom beside, long before they or their Grandsires were born. Witness the examples of this last year in *France*, of *Lescun*, President of the Assemblies at *Rochel*, *Haute-Fountain*, *Chamier*, *P. Gomboult* and some others, who all suffered for real and actual Treasons; and by vertue of such Laws, not as the Parliament at *Paris*, or some party there had procured to be enacted a few years, or a few moneths before, on purpose to entrap them; but by the ancient known Laws of *France*, by which they

they themselves knew the Kingdom was governed, and had been ever governed time out of minde: and therefore could not in any reason but expect the execution of them upon themselves, in case they would persist to offend. Witness the Treasons of their Brother *Bischarcy* in *Poland*, who attempted to kill the King; and did indeed wound him very dangerously, as he was going to Church. They object to us the positions of some private and disavowed persons, and words onely: We object to them the resolutions of whole general Assemblies held by them, and those rebellions, which have followed thereupon, not in word onely, but in deed and in act, their real and actual Conspiracies, their many Battles really and actually fought in the Field, without lawful Authority, or any publike Call, against their Sovereign Princes; with other manifold iniuries and insolencies committed. Lastly, Protestants reform com[illegible]

lum, and by Tumults; Catholikes do nothing of this kinde but by Law, Order, and their proper Superiors. So that the difference betwixt them is manifeſt; and the integrity of the profeſſions of Catholike, in point of obedience and loyalty towards their Prince, beyond that of Calviniſts, or Proteſtants, generally ſpeaking, is viſible to every eye.

19. Why may they not then, under the Favor of the State, enjoy like Liberty of Conſcience, Perſon, and Eſtates, with other good Subjects; notwithſtanding that they differ in judgement from the profeſſion of the State? Why may not a Catholike be tolerated to live, and injoy without moleſtation, that which God, Nature, and the Laws of the Land do give him, as well as a Calviniſt? Why ſhould the Laws of *England* be fettered with ſo many Shacles of *Interpretative*, and Temporary Treaſon, to the prejudice of many innocent perſons, and to the ſcandal of the Government?

ment? Admit, that for some worldly respect they were indeed necessary, in State-policy, for the times wherein they were enacted; yet the times changing so much as they have done, and those causes entirely ceasing, which made them seem necessary then, it may be thought now, not onely safe, (as undoubtedly it is) but honorable and just to repeal them. May it not with great reason be wondered at, that a Nation so Just, so Honorable, so Wise, as this of *England* hath ever been acknowledged by the Nations abroad; and settled by Extraordinary Dispensations of Divine Providence upon such Equitable, fair and just principles of government, as be constantly held forth by the Supream Authority of the Nation, should permit any thing to be counted Treason by an Act of Parliament, which is so generally over all Christendom at this day, and hath been so anciently, and even till of late times in this our own Nation, so much honored,

honored, maintained, and reverenced by all men; especially I say, when there is no cause of suspicion remaining, when there is no cause nor colour of jealousie from any persons, that desire this liberty: at least none, but what may be easily removed by the wisdom of the State; and plenary satisfaction given in that behalf, both to themselves and to all the good people of the Nation. How much Religious men and persons Ecclesiastical (now called Traytors by the Law) were wont to be esteemed in this Nation, is not necessary now to speak; our own Chronicles and the Constitutions of our very Laws themselves do abundantly declare it. If a bondman entred a Cloysture, he could not be commanded out by any power whatsoever; The Law it self anciently holding it more reasonable, that even the King should loose his interest in such a body, then that he should be taken out from the Order, which he had

chosen

choſen. The like was judged, if the Kings Wards entred Religion. An Alien by Law can hold no Lands in *England*; yet if he be a Prieſt, he may by Law be a Biſhop here, and enjoy his Temporalties, as *Lanfranck*, *Anſelme*, and ſome others did, who were never Denizens. It is well known, The Six Clearks of the Chancery were anciently Clearks of the Church. The Maſter of the Rolls, Maſter of Requeſts, Lord Privy Seal, yea the Lord Chancellors and Treaſurers of the Realm not onely commonly, but in a manner conſtantly, till of late times, were Biſhops & Clergy-men. How ſtrange therefore may it ſeem, that the Laws of *England* ſhould make a Function ſo ancient and honorable in *England* to be Treaſon? which certainly is the ſame function now, that it was then, when it was moſt honored; and hath ſuffered no more change, from what it firſt was, then Saint *Pauls* Church hath ſuffered change, ſince the time it was firſt built by King *Ethelbert*;

Ethelbert; that is, it is grown old indeed, and by the iniquity of the times, hath loſt ſome part of that outward Glory, Magnificence, and Splendor, which it once had. And for Papiſts, if men goe about to make them a Sect, and endeavor to ſuppreſs them under that notion, truly we ſhall be found a very ancient Sect; and I believe it will trouble the beſt Doctor in *England*, to aſſign us any other Sect-Maſter, any other Author and Founder of our profeſſion, then our Saviour Chriſt, and Saint *Peter*. But moſt men know, 'tis to little purpoſe to attempt any thing againſt us that way. All other Sects have their particular Authors, and many other circumſtances of their begining aſſignable, eaſily, cleerly, notoriouſly: I mean, not onely *Lutherans*, *Calviniſts*, *Anabaptiſts*, and ſuch others of yeſterday, but thoſe more ancient, *Arians*, *Eunomians*, *Pelagians*, *Neſtorians*, *Manichees*, &c. only Catholikes have not; nor can any man ſhew when their profeſſion began

began, or from whom it came, but from our Saviour and his Apostles. What therefore should hinder a reconciliation, and a re-admission of this Ancient and Universal profession of Christianity into *England* again? I mean, unto such an equal and avowed liberty of private exercise, as other people of the Nation doe enjoy in the profession of theirs. On his Majesties part, I humbly suppose there can be little doubt made, who hath been ever of himself constantly inclined to shew mercy, if there had been no crooked and unhappy instruments about him to hinder it. *My minde*, saith the King, *was ever free from persecution, or thralling my Subjects in matters of Conscience*; And again, *Fateor me non libenter suspendere Presbyterum*, &c. *I confess*, saith he, *it goeth much against my minde, to put a Priest to death onely for his Religion, or for saying of Mass.* He who judged, that it could no way become him, though a Prince of so great Learning and Judgement, to

pronounce

pronounce ſentence lightly in ſo old a controverſie, what Prieſt or Religious man can appeal to a better Judge? or from whom ſhould they expect a ſentence of more favourable compaſſion? He who ſent into *France* to mediate for the peace of Strangers, what man can doubt, but of his own Royal inclination he is as willing to ſhew favour to his Subjects at home? Though we differ in Religion, yet in obedience to our Prince, and the State that protects us, we agree; neither will we be preceded in this part of our duty by any profeſſion under Heaven. Our bodies are at the Kings ſervice, and at the States to command; may they be pleaſed to leave our ſouls to God. Let our actions be tried; and if they finde not cauſe, let them not truſt us. It hath bin long ſince obſerved by wiſe men, That too much ſeverity doth but make men deſperate; and it is an ancient Aphoriſm of State *punire rarò*. What an honourable addition was it to *Auguſtus Cæſar* his other

other Titles, that of the Historian, *Nunquam civilem sanguinem fudisse*, That never any subject suffered by him in cold bloud: And it is as infallibly true in all generous Spirits, *fidelem, si putaveris, facies*, that confidence gains much security from them; as counting it the greatest of *disgraces* to be *distrusted*. *Malus custos diuturnitatis metus*. Fear is not always the best Guardian. *Seneca*, who lived under a Tyrant, and knew what tyranny was, giveth this counsel, *Ultima supplicia supplicijs ultimis ponat*. Let, saith he, a Prince alwayes observe this rule in the administration of justice, *viz. That capital punishments be the last punishments which he inflicteth*, and never used, but where no other remedy will serve. And *Tacitus* observes it among other marks of *Tiberius* his cruelty, *Delatorum Authoritas magna, frequens accusatio, & in quovis crimine adjuncta de læsâ Majestate Principis*, That Sycophants, Informers, and such fellows were the onely men about Sueton.

bout him, and every offence was made Treason. And certainly there can be no greater Symptome, that Government declines to tyranny, then the multitude of such people attending the Courts; and that such proceedings are used. I confess the Law was once strict at *Rome*, *Deos peregrinos ne colunto*. Yet *Marcus Aurelius*, a wise and gallant Emperor, tolerated the Christians; yea, *Theodosius*, and *Gratian*, Emperors, though most most Christian and Catholike themselves, yet for some time were contented to tolerate the *Arians*, enemies of Christ. The *Venetians*, and many other Christian States permit the Jewes to live among them; as *Spain* did the Moores, till necessity at last forced the King to expel them.

20. It is a false and uncharitable Assertion, savouring too much of gall and spleen, to say (as some do) that Catholikes are unsociable, they cannot live with Protestants in one Common-wealth without jars and tumults. For is there any thing

thing more visible, and in your eyes every day, then that the contrary is true? Doe we not live among you here in *England*? Have we not ever done so since the first unhappy difference and change made, peaceably, neighbourly, friendly? Doe we not buy and sell with you, and you with us? are we not ready to perform all offices of civility and good neighbourhood, where we live? Doe we refuse any kinde of temporal duties or payments? Even of our Tiths to the Ministers, which yet are in themselves a kinde of religious Salary; and if in any, surely we should boggle and shew unwillingness in them? Besides, it is a false surmise, that we hold all Protestants generally for Heretikes, and Excommunicate persons; (as some spare not to urge both in the pulpit and press, to make us odious) or that thereby we should think our selves at liberty, when we have opportunity, to deal less faithfully, justly, and truly with them, then becommeth honest men, and Christians.

Christians. For that they are not Excommunicate, I mean *specially, by name*, or by any such *sentence of the Judge Ecclesiastical*, as doth relax or debar either all or any civil duty towards them, is out of question. And to make a man Heretike, *formally* speaking and in the proper notion of that crime, obstinacie in opinion is by all confess'd to be requisite, and that he persisteth deliberately therein, notwithstanding that he knoweth the opinion which he holdeth, to be contrary to the Doctrine of the Catholike Church, and to the general, unanimous, or known consent of those Pastors, which as Saint *Paul* teacheth us, ought to have *the oversight and government of him in our Lord*: which, I suppose, cannot be the case of all the Protestants in *England*. Indeed of the Doctrine of Protestancy, as 't is consider'd in it self, abstracted-ly from the persons that profess it we say, 'tis *Heresie*, that is to say, a false Doctrine, a condemned Doctrine, a Doctrine, (so far as Doctrine

Acts 20. 28, *Heb.* 13. 7. 17. *Tit.* 3. 10.

ctrin can barely be) not only of dangerous, but of damnable malignity, being contrary to the Doctrine and Institutions of true Christian Religion, which our Saviour by his Apostles left unto the Church, to be professed and observed for ever; and therfore *in it self* of such nature, that it ought to be deposed by all men, who desire to be saved; and in profession whereof no man living may securely rest. This we say of their Doctrine. But as to the persons of Protestants themselves, *viz.* how far their personal errour in the profession thereof is voluntary and affectate; what means of better information they do neglect; against how much light, that is, inward knowledge and perswasion of minde, that Catholike Religion is true, they doe sin; or what secret doubtings they have that it may be true; what inward stirrings and checks of conscience they doe stifle in themselves, and persist in a way which their own hearts suspect, meerly for temporal ends, and because

cause it stands better with their designs of this world, that is, the present interests of their honours, reputation, ease, pleasure, profit, &c. or lastly, how far their ignorance of the truth may be, perhaps invincible; (which where it is so, excuseth much) of all this we say nothing. God onely knoweth how things are with them in these respects, not man; no, not the men themselves: and therefore, as concerning their persons, to his judgement onely we must leave them. This business therefore, *viz.* of Protestants being counted Heretikes by us, is but a Bug-bear, a Scar-crow set up on purpose by those our Adversaries, who would have the difference and aversions which they have bred betwixt us, to be immortal. Rather it were to be wished by all honest men, of what perswasion soever, that a just and equitable liberty in matters of conscience were granted unto all, if but for this onely respect, *viz.* That so by a free, confident, and

friendly

friendly converſing one with another, void of ſuſpition, void of jealouſie, fear, danger to one party or other, and by amicable diſcourſe and debating of things, truth might come to be more clearly diſcoverded, and we might be able, through Gods grace, mutually to give and receive good one of another. But this is a work, which hath ſo much of God and goodneſs in it, that we cannot but expect many adverſaries ſhould appear againſt it. However, thoſe Doctors *Bouteſeux* ſhould doe well to remember, if they pleas'd, that even by the Law of Seniority Catholikes might expect ſome little favour. For we beſeech them to tell us, upon what Patrimony doe themſelves and families now live, but that which the right Heirs of the Church, diſ-inherited indeed, or diſſeized by the power of the State, have left them? What Priviledges, Immunities, Honours have they, but what the old Church gave them? What Churches have

they, either Cathedral, Collegiate, or Parochial, which She built not? What Colledges which She founded or endowed not? Nay, whence have they their Bible, the Creed, the Ceremonies, or any thing else that is good and commendable among them, but from Her? If She had not preserved them faithfully to their hands, they had never found them. Shall Charity then be for ever so buried in *England*, that the posterity of those, from whom they must confess to have received these great advantages, shall never be remembred by them? never be used with equity and common justice? It were too great a shame, surely, to lye long upon such a Nation as this, and a defect of Government, which all Nations about us would observe. Beside, let our Adversaries remember what the French commonly say, *Chacun à son tour*; and we in *England*, *A dog hath a day*. Religion here with us, since King *Henry* the Eighth wore the Crown, hath had many changes

changes and exchanges, as the world knoweth: and the principles, on which it now ſtandeth, are not thought to be ſo fixed and unmoveable, but that it may take one turn more. All things are in the hands of God; and whatſoever he hath determined in the Counſel of his Divine wiſdom muſt ſtand, and take effect in its appointed due time: ſay we, or do we to the contrary, what we can. And therefore let our hot Brethren the Calviniſts, who can themſelves ſo little endure the ſeverity of Biſhops, let them not further promote, nor hold up perſecution againſt any body elſe; leaſt in an howre when they think leſt of it, the miſchief, which they wiſh to others, fall upon their own heads; and that they finde themſelves, not onely out of the Saddle (where they would be) but in the Mire, *under the Horſe belly*, and ſo obnoxious, as they may have need of favor themſelves. They deſire nothing more then *Liberty of Conſcience* in

their own way, fulneſs of liberty to themſelves; let them be perſwaded alſo to grant the ſame unto others. That this is but equal, reaſon it ſelf will tell us: And that perſecution for matter of Religion is not always the beſt means to advance religion, is the judgement of as wiſe and learned men, even of their own profeſſion, as any they can ſhew for the contrary. What *Luthers* opinion was in the point I value no much, becauſe the world did not take him for a man very learned or very wiſe; although, by Gods permiſſion, he did much miſchief in it for his time: as a ſimple Conjurer, though he be neither Mathematician, nor Philoſopher himſelf, yet, by the help of the Devil, may raiſe a ſtorm able to confound all the Sciences. Nevertheleſs what he thought appears in his Aſſertions, *Art.* 33. *de non comburendis Hæreticis. Urbanus Rhegius*, *Wolfgangus Muſculus*, famous men and Proteſtants, both of them in their Common places are

are much againſt perſecution for Religion. So is *Oſiander*, *Epitom. Centur.* 7. *Chytræus* in *Chron.* 1593. *Caſtalio*, and others. But above all *Acontius* in his Book *de Stratagemat. Satan.* is moſt earneſt. *Dominus non permittit hæreticorum ſupplicium, imò definitè declaravit, & interdixit*, &c. *God*, ſaith he, *doth not permit nor allow, that Hereticks ſhould be thus puniſhed*; yea he hath expreſly declared his minde to the contrary, and forbidden the Magiſtrate to exerciſe any ſuch Authority upon them. *Calvin* once, that is, till he had ſetled himſelf in power at *Genevah*, held the ſame opinion, and was much for *Liberty of Conſcience*, when *Annas Burges* died for Hereſie in *France*. Of the ſame judgement alſo is Monſieur *Lanou* in his Diſcourſes. *Sturmius* in his Epiſtles, *Bullay*, *Melanthon*, and many other proteſſed and earneſt Proteſtants. Not to mention *Eraſmus*, *Caſſander*, *Grotius*, or any other of that middle temper. And as for matter of example, or practiſe, do not the *Hen.* 2.

Cantons in *Switzerland* agree well enough in Temporal things, notwithſtanding their difference in Religion? is mutual Toleration of one another in their ſeveral judgements that way, any prejudice to the publike peace? Are there any people under Heaven, more happy and free then they? or more likely to continue ſuch, ſo long as they keep under ſome few fiery zealots, that would ſtill be blowing the coals of diſſention among them? Not to ſpeak of *Sweden*, *Denmark*, &c. doth not that famous Kingdom of *Poland* Tolerate diverſity of Religions? doth not the great Emperor of *Moſko* the ſame? and is not the general Unity of their Subjects, which ariſeth thereupon, and would certainly be otherwiſe, if the Government were otherwiſe, is it not a Wall of Braſs to both of them againſt their great enemy the *Turk*? Let *Germany* alſo be our example, that vaſt Nation, and people no leſs Magnanimous and Stout; is not Toleration judged

judged expedient among them? could any thing else cure their troubles? Let us consider, how peacably and happily Catholikes and Lutherans have conversed and lived there together, for no less then an Hundred years and upwards, without any disſention, without any trouble upon the account of Religion; save onely what Ambition, and the factious Spiritedness of some particular Princes have bred, and brought upon the Country, much against the will of the people, under that pretence? No man doubteth, but *Charls* the Fifth, Emperor, and *Ferdinand* his Brother were in their times great and wise Princes; yet found they no better means to redress the troubles of State, then by commanding, *Ut utraq; pars caveret*, &c. *That special care should be had on both sides to compel no man, to make profession of Religion, otherwise then in his own Conscience he should be perswaded was best*: As *Dresserus* a Protestant relates it, rejecting with

much disdain the contrary opinion of some, *who*, as he saith, *would have but one Religion onely professed in the Empire*. And for *France* the case and condition of affairs there is notorious to all the world. Nor could that Kingdom ever be brought to quiet, till the Calvinists therein were brought upon their knees, that is, to such pass, as to be glad of, and to beg for that favorable Toleration of their profession from the King, which themselves in no parts of the world beside will grant to others. What reason can be given by indifferent men, why the policy of *England* should be so singular, and so differing from that of all other Christian Kingdoms and Nations about her? Why should our Government be more severe in this point, and more Sanguinary, then that of our Neighbors? It may seem to reflect something upon the honor of our Nation, to mention the *Turk* in this case: Yet certainly it cannot be denied, but that Christians live quietly

quietly in his Dominions; and upon conditions so easie, that I am perswaded, the Catholikes of *England* would be well contented with the like. If onely it be determined, that we must purchase that with our money, which all other our fellow-subjects the people of this Nation, do enjoy freely, and count it their natural right. In a word therefore to conclude, seeing that both in the judgement of Protestant Divines, and in the practice of Protestant Princes, and States, Toleration of diverse Religions is held neither unlawful, nor unexpedient in Government; and seeing, that for so long a time of afflictions, persecution of our Priests, and other manifold pressures upon us for *matters of Conscience*, Catholikes have yet, through the grace of God, demeaned themselves so loyally and obsequiously in all points, as they have not done, or attempted to do, upon their own account, or for the interest and advancment of their own profession, any thing of-

fenſive to the State, or prejudicial to the publike peace: ſeeing that nothing can be faſtned upon them in that kinde with any colour of truth, but onely the buſineſs of the Gun-Powder-Treaſon; and ſeeing that was a deviſe, though acted by the hands of ſome deſperate and wicked Catholikes, yet contrived rather by the Devil, and ſome crafty Enemies which we had in the State, (to make us eternally odious and ſuſpected in the Nation and to diſoblige ſome great perſon of his promiſes in favor of us;) as it may be juſtly thought, conſidering, what kinde of States-men ſate at the Helme in thoſe times, what knowing men, ſtrangers abroad, have writ, and what Proteſtants themſelves at home have diſcovered ſince upon that ſubject. Seeing that Catholikes always wiſhed well to his Majeſties Title, and prayed for his happy ſucceſſion to theſe Kingdoms; ſeeing we were not of Counſel with thoſe, who ſent *Beal* into forreign parts

D' Oſſat. Lettreſ. liur. 2. ep. 43. Pryns. Antip. of Prelat. P. 151.

to

to promote the Title of *Suffolk*; nor that ſet *Hales* on work at home, as he did, with law and little art to make it good; nor that procured Sir *N. B.* to make a neſt for the Phœnix, by ſuch a great volum, as he wrote to that purpoſe: Seeing that we were ever Champions to his Majeſties juſt claim; Eſpecially Sir *Anthony Brown*, that wiſe and noble Author of the Book againſt *Leiceſter*; and that *Aiax* of the Law, (whom no man ever durſt encounter in this cauſe) Maſter *Plydon*: We hope ſo long and ſo try'd fidelity will, by the Kings gracious favor, procure us at laſt ſome liberty and refreſhment; and that our humble ſupplication ſhall be conſidered, wherein caſting our ſelves down at the feet of our Sovereign, and of the State, we beg onely of them in thoſe words of the Poet.

Hanc animam concede mihi:
Tua cætera ſunto.

Let our ſouls be left free unto God:

God: and as for our Bodies or Estates, take them, dispose of them freely, (as Justice requireth, and in due proportion with our Neighbors, and other the good people of the Nation) for the service of the Kingdom, and of the publike.

An

AN APPENDIX, Concerning LUTHERS Miſſion.

I Was now going out of the field; but behold an Ambuſh appears, which is laid to ſurprize me: it pretends at one charge to rout all the forces of my arguments, and to bereave me of my hopes of Victory, by eluding, rather then diſproving, of what I have ſaid. It is a reply, which ſome

some men are pleased to make in behalf of *Luther*; whose heat and irregular vehemency, which I call sedition, was nothing but zeal, say they, of Gods honor and truth, which burning within his own breast, happened to kindle some lively sparks also in others. They say, that *Luther* was *Elias*, a Prophet sent *immediately* and *extraordinarily* by God, to reform the errors and corruptions of the world, to restore vertue and good life, to detect Antichrist, (who had for so many ages bewitched the whole Church with his impostures, and seduced her into Idolatrie and Heresie) And that therefore such a Prophet was not to be tedder'd, as it were, and bound up to the rules of ordinary professors. But if he neglected Authority, despised the Laws, abused and insulted upon the Majestie of Princes, disturbed the peace and tranquility of their States, we are not to wonder, nor lay it to his charge: It was no more then a Prophet might do.

Tune

Tune es, qui conturbas Israel, did not *Ahab* say to *Elias*, *Art not thou he, which troublest Israel?* The world was in a Lethargy of superstition and ignorance at that time, and could not be recovered by gentle means. Such an inveterate disease, as that was, required strong and violent purgation. Thus they Plead. But it is answered, The foulest Face may have a fair Vizard put upon it: and these pretences, howsoever men may be amused at them at first hearing, are but like the Apples of *Sodom*; specious and seeming fair at the first sight; but if you touch them, they turn to ashes. I confess, *Luther* perceiving, how apt the world was at that time to *Beleeve lyes*, and to swallow whatsoever baits of Novelty and unsound Doctrine he offered them, was not asham'd to arrogate all those things to himself, that were above mentioned; and to pretend *an extraordinary calling from God* for all that alteration and stir which he made in the Church. Witness him-

himself in one place, *Ego Lutherus sum, Alter Elias & Currus Israel*, &c. *I am Luther*, saith he, *a second Elias and the Charriot of Israel.* And in another, *Tanta est dignitas mea, & Ministerium mihi Divinitus datum*, &c. *This Ministry*, saith he, *which I profess, and this Calling, which I have from God, is of that Excellency, that it is in vain for Princes or any Persons on Earth to expect submission, or forbearance from me: They must, whither they will or no, acknowledge me at length for an Holy instrument chosen of God, &c.* and yet again, *Certus sum*, &c. *I am sure*, saith he, *that I have my Doctrine from Heaven*; and therefore why should he regard any thing objected against it on Earth? *Comment.* 1. *Cor.* 1. he blusheth not to glory, that *by him* and *through his means* the Gospel was more *cleerly* and *plentifully* preached, then it was *ipsis temporibus Apostolorum*, even in the times of the Apostles themselves. Which he avoucheth again, *Serm. de destruct. Jerusalem.* Nor do his followers forbear any thing

Lib. de fals. stat.

Lib. cont. Reg. Angliæ.

Ibid.

thing to flatter him in this humor. The *Collocutors* at *Altimbergh* call him *The Angel of God, Elias, and the Last Trumpet*, alluding as I suppose, to that of the *Apocalypse, Chap.* 11. 15. *Aretius* affirms expressly, that he was sent by *an immediate call from God to reform the world, bewitched*, as he saith, *with many impious and ungodly opinions in Religion.* But let us pawse a while. We must distinguish, as I said, betwixt pretenses, and proofs; They are not all one: And they do but deceive themselves, who think, that men will always accept the one for the other. All that these men say, comes up to this; *That* Luther *was extraordinarily sent by God to preach Reformation, and such other Doctrine as he did.* But we reply, *Extraordinary Mission* hath always *Extraordinary Signs* and *Arguments* going along with it, to evidence and make cleer the truth thereof to the people, unto whom such *an Extraordinary Messenger* is sent. Thus was it with *Moses*, *Exod.* 4. who being sent

Colloq. Altegh. P. 80. 587.

ſent upon an extraordinary Meſſage from God to the Children of *Iſrael*, *viz.* to bring them out of *Egypt*, where they lived in bondage; and the caſe being ſuch, as they might probably not *beleeve him*, but make doubt of his calling, and ſay unto him, *The Lord hath not ſent thee*; to remedy this inconvenience, and to give the *Iſraelites* reaſonable aſſurance, that he was *indeed* ſent to them by God for that purpoſe, The Divine wiſdom doth not think it ſufficient to bid *Moſes ſtand to it, affirm it ſtoutly*, not to bluſh, nor give over ſaying ſo (which were all the *Extraordinary Arguments* that ever *Luther*, or any of his Reforming Brethren could give of their *Extraordinary Calling*) But what doth he ſay? *Caſt thy Rod upon the ground*: So it becomes a Serpent. *Put forth thine hand, and take it*: So it becomes a Rod again; that is to ſay, God Allmighty enabled him to do this, and many other wonderful and ſupernatural works before them,

and

and before the King of *Egypt*, ſufficient to convince them, that he came *in truth* upon the Lords Meſſage, and not of his own head. Thus was it alſo with the true *Elias*, *Elizæus*, *Daniel*, and many other of the Prophets. Thus was it laſtly with the Apoſtles of Chriſt, and all Apoſtolical men ſucceeding them in that priviledge of *Extraordinary Miſſion*. Yea ſuch and ſo abſolutely neceſſary is *the condition of miracles* (or at leaſt of ſomething elſe equivalent thereto in the way of ſupernatural Extraordinary aſſiſtance and teſtimony) in all thoſe, which pretend unto *Extraordinary Calling*, That our bleſſed Saviour ſaith, even of himſelf *John* 15. 24. That *if he had not done among the Jews works, which never any man did*, that is wonderful works, ſupernatural, and ſtupendious works, *They had not ſinned*, in refuſing his Doctrine. And in another place, *If I do not the workes of my Father, be-* Chap. 10. *leeve me not.* But this is a ſtone too 37. hard for *Luthers* Teeth; we muſt never

never expect that he, or any of his followers wil anſwer punctually upon this ſubject. They do many of them, beſide *Luther*, pretend to Extraordinary Calling; as *Beza* for example, publikely inſiſted upon it, or rather fled to it, in the Conference at *Poiſey*: But if you demand miracles of them to evidence it to us, (that is ſuch arguments as reaſon requires, and the experience of all ages hath afforded in like caſes) they are inſtantly ſilent; or uſe onely ſuch cavelling pretences and pleas, as may ſerve the turn of any Hereticks whatſoever, as well as theirs. For we entreat them to tell us, what can *Luther* pretend for his preſumption in this kinde, Which *Calvin* and the Sacramentaries cannot? And yet tis well known, he counted them all for Hereticks of the deepeſt ſtain. Yea (to uſe his own words) *ſeriouſly, and in very good earneſt*, he counted them ſo, and that *they did not belong to the Communion of the Church*. And for *Zuinglius*

Cont. Artic. Lovan.

De Canâ Domini.

glius himself he held him for scarce a Christian. What can *Calvin* or his followers pretend more, then the new Arians, Antitrinitarians, Socinians, and others plead for themselves? And yet tis known *Calvin* burnt the principal of them, *viz. Michael Servetus*, at *Genevah*. Beside how perillous a thing is it, and how many dangerous inconveniences may follow upon it, if onely upon pretence of *Extraord.-nary Calling*, (not made out and evidenced in due maner to be such) men should be permitted to seduce people into new and by-ways of Religion, at their pleasure? Did not *Mahomet* first abuse the world, upon like pretences to this? What other thing meaneth the Story of the Angel *Gabriel* so familiarly acquainted with him? And of the Pigeon, that so often visited him with Revelations? And did not *Thekel*, another imposture of that Sect, perswade the *Persian* to reform *Mahomets* Law, upon pretence that God had appeared to him

him and commanded it so, upon the top of *Anti-Taurus*. Doth not the Scripture tell us, how far *Theodas* blinded so many of the *Jews* to their destruction, upon this account? Doth not the History of the *Jews* tell us of another fellow like him, one *Bar-Cosba*, who had prevailed so far upon the people, not long before *Jerusalem* was besieidged, that *Akiba*, and some others of the chiefest Scribes and Elders, took him verily for the Messias, and interpreted all the Prophesies of Scripture concerning Christ in favor of this impostor? Neither could they see their error, till they saw *Titus* come before the City with his Army, and found themselves blockt up on all hands. Then indeed at last, they could examine his pretences; and finding him neither able to help himself or them (as they expected, their Messias should) when it was too late they fell upon him, and put him to death. Did not *Muncer* possess the Boors of *Germany*, upon this

Galat. lib. 4. c. 21.

this very account, of *Extraordinary Calling*, that God had given him *the Sword of Gideon*, that is, power to reform and destroy at pleasure? Did not *David George* play all his prancks in *Holland* and the Low-Countries upon this score? Lastly, to come neerer home, what other pretence had *Hacket*, *Arthington*, *Coppinger*, *Henry Nichols*, and others, for those horrible Blasphemies which they vented, and their preaching themselves to be Christ, in Queen *Elizabeths* days? Were they not all of them *inspired men*? Were they not all, I mean in their own opinion, *Extraordinarily* sent? We must therefore, in such cases as these, stand well upon our guard, and not beleeve every man upon his bare word, in a matter that concerns us so much. If *Luther*, *Calvin*, *Beza* pretend *Extraordinary Mission* to teach us, contrary to what the Catholike Church, and the lawful Pastors thereof have always taught us, (although in such case we ought not to beleeve even

Gal. 1. *an Angel from Heaven*) yet at leaſt let them give us ſome competent argument and ſign thereof; or be content, if we do not beleeve them.

2. *Beza* himſelf, when he is out of Controverſie, and purſuing ſome other ſubject, can acknowledge, That God ſendeth not *Prophets now Extraordinarily*; and that we are *to keep watch of our ſouls*, when any man thinketh, that he is Inſpired of God to any work. *Let ſuch a man ſound himſelf well*, ſaith he, *and take heed, that he be not inſpired with Pride, and make an Idol of himſelf.* Very good! And may not other men alſo *take heed*, as well as himſelf, that they do not Idolize ſuch a pretender? We deſire to do no more, but to examine the pretentions of all men juſtly, yea with ſome favor. And therefore, ſeeing that in reſpect of *power*, and the working of miracles, *Luthers* Plea fails him; let us ſee how far it will hold in point of vertue, and good converſation; that is, how neer

Vindic. cont. Tyran.

neer he cometh unto *the Spirit of Elias*, whose second he would be. *Elias* was a man of retired life, sequestred, so much as could be, from all worldly conversation, and dedicated wholly unto Prayer, Contemplation and Conversing with God, and Meditating of Divine things; a great Faster, and one, that mortified his Natural Appetites and passions with much Austerity, Rigor and Pennance: As also did *Esdras*, *Eliæus*, *Daniel*, Saint *John* Baptist, and all other Servants of God, imployed in such Office as *Elias* was. But *Luther* did not so; he did the clean contrary. No sooner did he apprehend himself *Called* with this *Extraordinary Call* we speak of, but off goes his Cowle immediately, that is to say, the Ensign of Obedience, Humility, Modesty: Never shall we know him guilty of those vertues again. Out of his Cloysture he runs, where for many years together (by his own Confession and other good Testimony) he had through Gods

Cochlæ. in vitâ ejus.

grace, lived a good, regular, and vertuous life, in all Chaſtity, Piety, and Pennance. Neither does he run alone; many run with him of both Sexes. His Breviary is laid aſide; his Vows forgotten, or rather ſacrilegiouſly violated, trampled upon, deſpiſed: No more watching, faſting, praying now, then will pleaſe the fleſh; But a Companion muſt be had, whom he calleth *Wife*; and one every way as bad as himſelf, and onely fit for ſuch a Husband. All theſe things are much different from the ſpirit and practice of *Elias*. And that we may ſee further, how much his minde was corrupted by his Apoſtacy, and how little he could endure thoſe priſtine vertues of his former profeſſion, after he had commenced his new Miniſtry upon his pretended *Extraordinary Call*, ſee how licentiouſly and ſtrangely he writes. Among the Fathers Saint *Hierome* is one obſerved to be much in the praiſe of Virginity, Chaſtity, Pennance, &c. For this *Luther* cannot

not abide him, but expungeth him out of the Catalogue of the Doctors of the Church. *Nullum scio*, &c. *There is no man living*, saith he, *whom I hate more, then I do this* Hierome, *he so magnifieth Virginity, Chastity, Fasting and Penuance. Vows of Chastity*, saith he in another place, *are worse then Adultery. Tom. 6. Germ. ad Dom. Tenton.* P. 252. Tis with him matter of necessity, *a precept, yea and more then a precept, that every Man have his Woman, and every Woman her Man.* Yea, to shew the brutishness of his disposition perfectly, and that he might degrade all men, and bring them as much under the perfection of a beast, as, it seems, himself was, in the point of governing their passions, *These things*, saith he, meaning, To have company with a Woman, *can be no more forborn, then we can forbear to eat and drink, to sleep, and wake.* Yea, saith he, *tis no more in our power to live without a Woman, then it is to chuse, whither a man should be a man or no. No more*

Colloq; Convit.

Ibid.

Ibid. P. 171.

Pag. 505.

in our power to live Chaſt, then it is to work miracles. Neither was his Counſel to others any better, then what he ſpeaks of himſelf. For meaſuring other men by his own humor, in his Book *de vitâ conjugali*, (a ſubject certainly which required ſome diſcretion, and modeſtie at leaſt) yet ſee what wholſom Counſel he gives to married folke.

Pag. 147. *Si cui Mulieri maritus frigidus*, &c. *If*, ſaith he, *it happeneth at any time, that a Woman takes a Husband who proves Impotent*, that is, leſs able to perform Conjugal duty, in ſuch caſe *the Woman may lawfully demand of him, to lye with his Brother, or ſome neer Kinſman*: *Yea*, ſaith he, *the Horn-headed piteous fellow, her Husband, is bound by Law to ſuffer her ſo to do.* And ſo on the other ſide, if the Wife prove peeviſh, froward, or unfitting on her part, *Si Uxor nolit aut non poſſit, veniat Ancilla*, A man is at liberty to make uſe of his Maide. Elſe-where he maintaines *Pylogamy* to be lawful. *Non eſt prohibitum*, &c. *it is no where forbidden*, ſaith

In Cap. 16. Geneſ. Pag. 95.

saith he, *for a man to have more Wives then one; nor would I be he, that should now prohibit it, although I perswade it not.* And concludes generally, that whatsoever the ancient Patriarks are reported to have done in this kinde, is free in it self to be done, and ought not to be prohibited at this day. Thus did not *Elias* preach, nor Saint *John* Baptist, nor any of the Prophets. But of all his Doctrine concerning grace and good life is most scandalous and detestable. *Si vera Gratia est*, &c. *would you be sure*, saith he, *that the grace of God is true grace in you?* (And that with him is only Remission or Pardon of sin) *See then that you be truly sinners, sin lustily, and with a witness; onely trust as much, and be confident in Christ. For tis not sin, that can divide you from him*, (no, nothing but unbeleeving) *though you should commit Murther, Adultery, or Fornication a Thousand times in a day.* As for his Pride it was so intolerable, that even those complained of it, who were his

In *Philip.* Fol. 345. *Tom.* 1. *lat.*

followers in most things, and of his excessive scurrility even in matters most sacred. Now to speak of *Calvin*, who was little less then a professed Adversary, and taxed him frequently, not onely in point of Doctrine, but of manners and good life; nor of *Tossanus*, and others of that side, *Bucer* himself who was his Friend, Disciple and Follower, confesseth plainly, *That* Luther *was blamed of all men for an immoderate insolency, and contumeliousness of Spirit, which he manifested in all his writings. Oecolampadius* tells him, *he begins and ends his work commonly with the Devil.* But *Zuinglius*, and his Brethren of *Zurick* are hottest of all, *Nullum unquam Mortalium*, &c. *We beleeve*, saith they, *that never Mortal man handled the mysteries of Christian Religion more unworthily and filthily, then* Luther *hath done, not observing the bounds even of common modestie and good manners.* Another calls him *Devilish Lyar*, and maintains, that he never had any *true Light or understanding*

Cont. Melanch.

Resp. ad Luth.

Campanus.

ſtanding of the Goſpel in him. No? what then is become of *Elias*, their Prophet, the man ſent ſo *Extraordinarily* (they ſay) by God to reform the world? Doth ſuch a *Seer* ſee nothing now but Phantaſmes, and the immaginations of his own vain heart? This were very ſtrange indeed, and the poor Country of *Germany* in an unhappy condition, to have followed a ſeducing Epicure ſo far? But who can they blame but themſelves? It was too much confidence, even in the judgement of their own Brethren. For not onely *Calvin* is very angry, that the world ſhould have ſuch opinion of him, ſaying directly, *Qui volunt de Luthero intelligi*, &c. *They that apply the Propheſies of* Elias *unto* Luther, *do in my opinion very unadviſedly, and commit as great a ſin, as thoſe* Egyptians *did, who adored the Body and Sepulcher of the Prophet Jeremy*: But to call him *The laſt Elias* is unpardonable, *Sacrilegæ temeritatis eſt*, &c. *It is a Sacrilegious raſhneſs*, ſaith he, *to do ſo; as if* *Admon. ultim. ad Weſtphal.*

the Lords hand were shortned, and that he could not finde a better, or his equal to send forth, for the reforming of the Church; which was much contrary to the opinion he had of himself. I say not onely *Calvin*, but many other more moderately affected, more Allied in point of opinion unto *Luther*, do yet finde fault with those Exotick Titles and pretentions of his to *Elias*, and *Extraordinary Mission*. *Vrbanus Rhegius* both for Quality and cleer confession may serve for all, *Scimus istos Magnis clamoribus regerere, Lutherum esse Prophetam* &c. *I know*, saith he, *very well, what some men will reply with no little confidence, That* Luther *was a Prophet immediately raised by God to reform the Church*, &c. *but, Manifestum est illos pessimè de totâ Christi Ecclesiâ mereri*, &c. *They*, saith he, *who think so, or say so, deserve very little thanks of the Church of God; neither do they well by such extravagant and undue Titles to exempt any man from the Censure and Judgement of the Churches much*

Admon. Cap. 6.

less

leſs to make his writings (as it were) a Rule of Faith and Beleeving unto all men.

And therefore, as to the pretence of *Extraordinary Miſſion* (a thing onely given out to amaze the ignorant world, and to countenance irregular courſes) I ſuppoſe it will hardly ſtand in the judgement of indifferent and wiſe men; there is ſo little evidence, or argument for it: Either extraordinary, as was moſt requiſite to have been ſhewen; or ordinary, that is, of but vertuous and commendable Converſation. Shall we conſider a little the fruits of it, and what good it wrought in the world? Our Saviour (*Matth.*7. 15.) ſpeaking generally of falſe Prophets and ſuch Pretenders as *Luther* was, telleth us, *By their fruits you ſhall know them.* And it is certain, the experience of all Nations and Ages doth confirm it, That when a Country hath the happineſs to be converted from Hereſie, Infidelity, or any other falſe and corrupt way of Worſhipping God, by

Preachers lawfully and in truth ſent unto them from God, ſome extraordinary and ſingular Reformation of manners doth follow thereupon, and their Converſion worketh in them a great and eminent degree of Holineſs, Vertue, Piety, Devotion, and purity of Converſation, anſwerable to the means, which God uſeth towards them, and to the Spirit which worketh in them. But in the Reformation of *Luther* it was nothing ſo. The change of the world, which followed upon his preaching, was notoriouſly ſeen not to be to the better, but to the worſe, both in reſpect of the Publike Affairs of State, and of the private manners of men. Men grew upon it much more lewd, much more vicious, unchriſtian, and godleſs in their converſation, then they were before: And this ſo evidently; that it is, not without much regret and ſhame acknowledged, even by thoſe, who were a principal cauſe of it. Let *Luther* himſelf

ſpeak

ſpeak in the firſt place. *The world*, ſaith he, *groweth every day worſe and worſe; it is apparent, men are now much more covetous, much more malicious, and given to revenge, much more unruly, ſhameleſs, and full of all vice, then they were in time of Popery.* *Serm. in 1. Dom. Advent.*

Auriſaber pronounceth as from *Luthers* own Mouth, *Poſt exortum Evangelium*, &c. *That ſince the appearance of this Goſpel, vertue ſeems to be utterly extinct, and devotion, as it were, driven out of the world.* *Smidelin* confeſſeth of the *Lutherans*, That the world may eaſily ſee they are no Papiſts, and truſt not to good works. *For*, ſaith he, *they do not any.* *The greateſt part of our people*, ſaith *Bucer*, *ſeems to have imbraced the Goſpel onely out of intent to ſhake of the Yoke of Diſcipline, which lay upon them, and the obligation of Faſting, Penuance*, &c. *which they were forced to obſerve in the time of Popery, and to live at pleaſure, enjoying the full ſwinge of their Luſt and Lawleſs Appetites without controule.* *In vitâ ejus.* *Bucer. de Regn. Chriſti. lib. 1. c. 4.*

Laſtly *Erasmus*, who was a man of intimate

intimate acquaintance with them, and knew their ways as well as themselves, and beside, one that never writ partially in favor of Catholikes, as the world well knoweth, what a Testimony gives he of them in his *Spongia adverſ. Hutten. Lutheranos video multos*, &c. *I meet*, ſaith he, *with many Lutherans abroad, but with ſuch as live according to the rule, which they pretend, very few or none. Conſider well*, ſaith he, *all this ſort of people, which call themſelves Goſpellers, and tell me, if you can, where in the world is there more Luxury, Prodigality and Exceſs uſed; where Luſt and Debauchery on the one ſide, or Covetouſneſs on the other rageth more. Are thoſe people* (meaning the Catholikes) *whom yee have forſaken, and ſeem to deteſt ſo much, in any reſpect ſo blamable as they? Give me one example, if you can, of any one man whom this Doctrine of the Goſpel,* (as you call it) *hath at all bettered in his manners, hath made of a drunkard or intemperate perſon, ſober and well governed, of ſhameleſs or licentious, modeſt*

modeſt and chaſt. I can give you many, ſaith he, *who by turning Lutherans, are become Ten times worſe then they were. What man living ever ſaw a Lutheran ſhed a Tear*, out of any ſenſe or diſlike of ſin? or *ſo much as to breath out a ſigh, or knock his breſt*, in ſign of ſorrow and deteſtation of himſelf, that he had offended God? No verily; Contrition is not any neceſſary part of their Pennance, it is a thing altogether unknown among them, I mean, as to the practice and true exerciſe of it. Their opinion or principle of *onely Faith*, viz. *That Chriſt hath done all for them, and that they have nothing to do* in order to Salvation, *but to beleeve this*, is a ſufficient Antidote againſt all ſuch kinde of ſadneſs; with which they like not to be troubled. Yea it is moſt lamentable to conſider, how generally men live and dye without any other ſenſe or feeling of their ſins at all, ſave what the ſhame, prejudce or ſome other Temporal inconvenience (which com-

commonly attendeth the doing of evil) may, perhaps, cause in them; in relation to God they perswade themselves, that nothing is required of them, *but onely to believe that all is forgiven, That Christ hath done all that is to be done by them, and suffered all that is necessary to be suffered*; so they take no further care, but dye accordingly, that is, in a most unhappy security.

4. For as concerning that other pretence, *viz.* that *Luther* should be *sent thus Extraordinarily*, as they say, *to detect Antichrist*, unless they mean by giving some example or pattern of him in his own person and practises, (which in many respects were indeed very Antichristian) I know not, how it can be understood. For if they mean, he should discover the Pope to be Antichrist, it is a stale, I had almost said, an exploded pretence, no less vain then any of the rest; discovering more inconsideration and spleen in the pretenders, then any thing else. The Characters, which

Holy

Holy Scripture doth give of that great Antichriſt, who is to come, and make War upon the Church towards the latter end of the world, are many and cleer; yet ſo little applyable to the Pope, as not any thing can be leſs. The ſum of them all is expreſſed in thoſe Titles, which Saint *Paul* giveth him, 2 *Theſſ.* 2. ὁ Ἀντικείμενος, and ὁ Ἄνομος; by which is underſtood, That Antichriſt muſt be a profeſſed and open Enemy of our Saviour Chriſt, holding and maintaining all things diametrically contrary, and in oppoſition to him. He muſt be the head of a people openly and expreſly at defiance with the Kingdom of Chriſt, which is the Church; and not onely ſuppoſed to be ſo in the opinion of ſome few men, *by interpretation*, and ſome ſtrained conſequence of miſgovernment in that ſociety, which is profeſſedly Chriſts own Kingdom. No, the people, and followers of Antichriſts Kingdom muſt oppoſe and perſecute the people and followers

of

of Christ to the death. He must be an Enemy in all points, unto Christs law, to Christs Testament, to Christs Priesthood. All which he must, for some short time, Universally abolish and put down. It is not vice alone, nor some supposed superstition, nor error in opinion onely, which shall erect and constitute that accursed State, but it must be a general Apostacy and departure from the Law of Christ, (as both *Melanchon* in his Common places, and *Zanchius* a famous Protestant in his answer to the Arians do acknowledge) it must be an opposition publike and professed to the same Law, γυμνὴ τὴν κεφαλὴν, as they say, and a persecution of the Professors thereof general all the world over. But doth Saint *Peters* Successor thus? are these things applyable to the State of the Church under his government? What face of Brass can maintain it without blushing? Doth he persecute any man for professing Christ? Or doth he punish or censure any, but

Basil. 1562. Pag. 34. *Tom.* 7. P. 875.

but according to his office, and as the Canons of the universal Church enacted, acknowledged and exercised by all Christian Princes and good Prelates before him, do prescribe? Doth not *Luther* himself confess, that in *the Papacy true Christianity, is still retained?* Doth he not confess, that *the Popes Church* (as he calls it) *is the Church of God?* That *there is true Baptism, true Absolution* or Remission of sins *among them*, the *true office of Preaching*, yea the *true Catechism*, that is, the Summary of all Doctrines necessary to be preached? Are these things to be maintained by Antichrist? Or to be found and professed in that rabble of Miscreants, which shall follow him? Doth not *Whitacre*, *Junius*, *Saravia*, *Zanchius*, and almost all Protestants generally acknowledge as much, that we hold at least, the principal Articles of faith, That we agree in Fundamentals, That the *Roman* Church is a true Church of God, yea our Mother Church, in whom is yet remaining *Contra. Anabap.*

maining, and from whom *English* Proteſtants at leaſt, pretend to have received True Ordination, True Calling and Authority to preach? Laſtly, is there any Prince or Perſon on Earth that profeſſeth greater reverence and obſervance to the Law of Chriſt, then the Pope doth? How then can he be Antichriſt? is there any Power or Authority known in the world more vigilant, active, zealous, and continually attent to preſerve this Law in its full Honor, Eſtimation and Integrity with all men, then the Sea Apoſtolike hath always been, and is? Nay (to ſpeak ingenuouſly and ſeriouſly) in what condition, think we, had Chriſtianity been at this day, if that Authority had not been eſtabliſhed and acknowledged in the world; but that all things had been left to thoſe Arbitrary and dividing Principles on which Proteſtancy pretendeth to build, viz. *Sole Scripture*, and *every mans private Interpretation*, or *Reaſoning*: The deſtructive inconvenience whereof are

appa-

apparently ſeen at this day; may it pleaſe the *Divine Goodneſs* to give us grace to lay them to heart, as is meet. 'Tis true, in their opinion, and as they have confidence to ſay, *Filia devoravit Matrem*, The Daughter, (that is the Proteſtant Congregations) have over-reached the Mother-Church in perfection of wiſedome, and hath been able to reform Her in ſome parts; yet certainly they ought not to pretend Her to be ſo foulely apoſtatized, as that Antichriſt ſhould govern there, where *Calvin* himſelf confeſſeth, even in the deepeſt of her ſuppoſed Errours, there hath ever remained *inviolabile Fœdus Dei*, *The Covenant of God inviolate*. Beſide, the Apoſtacy of that great Antichriſt muſt be a publike thing, notorious and viſible to all men, not ſecret, nor creeping on by degrees, and unperceived till after ſome long tract of time. He is *Stella cadens de Cælo*, and drawing a third part of the Stars with him; ſo ſtrangely, as it ſhall aſtoniſh and amaze the world to obſerve

Inſtitut. lib. 4. c. 2. Sec. 11.

obſerve it. Whereas (to ſuppoſe the worſt that can be) The departure of the Roman Church from the purity of Chriſtian Faith, and that Apoſtacie, which ſhould make her become of the Church of Chriſt the Synagogue of Antichriſt, was ſo obſcure, ſo inviſible, ſuch a long time of drawing on; that as the greater and better part of Chriſtendom doe not perceive it unto this day, ſo of them which pretend they doe, there is ſcarce any one couple among them can agree upon the time of his Appearance. *Many Ages ago*, ſayes *Calvin*, but *when*, he dares not ſpeak. *Napier* a Scot, and a great Traveller in this pretended ſearch of Antichriſt, is of opinion, that he hath reigned ever ſince the time of Pope *Sylveſter*, and the year 313. and ſo very wiſely makes all the Chriſtian Emperors, Kings, Queens, &c. that ſucceeded *Conſtantine*, yea and *Conſtantine* himſelf (who dyed not till the year 340.) in ſtead of being *Nurſing Fathers*, *and Nurſing Mothers* of the Church

Church, and Defenders of the Faith of Christ, (as by the Prophesies of Scripture concerning them they were to be, *Psal.* 72.11. *Isa.* 49.23.) to have been the supporters of Antichrist, and advancers of his Superstitions. *Beza* assigneth Pope *Leo*, and the year 440. Doctor *Fulk*, *Willet*, and *Downham* seem to name *Boniface*, and the year 607. *Bullinger*, and some other with him are content to stay longer, and expect some hundred of years more, *viz.* untill the time of *Hildebrand*, that is, Pope *Gregory* the seventh, & the year 763. yet Doctor *Whitaker* sayes Pope *Gregory* the first was the last true Bishop of *Rome*, and all that followed after him Antichrists. *Perkins* thinketh Antichrist appeared about 900 years since, *Hospinian* 1200. *Danæus*, about the year 574. It were infinite to relate their jarring and contradicting of one another in divers other very material circumstances touching this question; as whosoever please to see, may finde in such Catholike Writers as

as have handled this controverſie; but eſpecially in cardinal *Bellarmin.*

5. Now ſeeing *Luthers* pretended Calling proves ſo unjuſtifiable, and hard to be made good, we muſt of neceſſity take ſome liberty to look further into the buſineſs, and to examine what his *True Calling* was, and who it was indeed that ſet him on work to play ſuch odd pranks in the Church of God. Of this there goeth a black Story, which divers men labour to palliate and diſguiſe (as well as they can) divers wayes: but *Luther* himſelf telleth the plain truth, *viz:* that it was the Devil that firſt ſet him on work to write againſt the Maſs; which all men know is the Principal and moſt Divine Office of Chriſtian Religion, and whereunto whatſoever elſe is done in Religion, in one way or other relateth. In his Book *de abrogandâ Miſſâ*, thus he writeth. *Contigit me ſub mediam noctem ſubito expergefieri; ibi Satan mecum cepit hujuſmodi diſputationem. At midnight*, ſuch a time, ſaith *Luther*, *I hap-*

happened to be suddenly awaked out of sleep; and presently the Devil fell a disputing with me: and so he proceeds in his Narrative; wherein all all those Arguments are formally produced and urged by the Devil, upon which *Luther* afterward resolved to abrogate Mass; as any man may see in the Book it self above cited, which is commonly extant with the rest of his Works. This with Doctor *Fulk*, *Charke*, and some others, is onely a spiritual combat in minde, which, they suppose, *Luther* might have with the Devil, as many other good men have had in spirit; but not any real or personal conflict. But we reply, whether those reasons came from the Devil by bodily and outward conference, or onely by way of inward suggestion, it is not so material; that they came from the Devil, in the opinion and apprehension even of *Luther* himself, is confessed. But Secondly, *Luther* in that Narrative, describeth the very voice and accent of the Devil in the dis-

disputation; which he saith was a great, yet a base and hollow voice; and which so affrighted him, that he sweat again; although, as himself confesseth against the *Swenkfeldians*, upon other occasions, such encounters were not unusual with him, but rather familiar. Thirdly, the Devil (knowing his humour) flatters him with Titles, and calls *Doctor, very learned Doctor*, up and down the disputation. Fourthly, *Luther* affirming elsewhere, that *Empser*, and *Oecolampadius* (two Preachers of Reformation, but not of his strain) were strangled by the Devil, confesseth here, that *this encounter was like theirs:* though he had the good hap to come off alive; perhaps because he yeelded: as neither *Job*, Saint *Paul*, nor ever any good man ever did. See *Hospinian* also, a *Calvinist*, in his *Historia Sacramentaria*. Fifthly, *Jo. Manlius*, a great *Lutheran* Preacher, and *Luther* himself *Epist. ad Pat. em. Tom.* 2. *Wittеb. fol.* 269. confesseth, that he was frequently haunted by Spirits,

rits, and that Satan used personally to affright and molest him; he maintaines that *Zuinglius*, *Carolstadius*, &c. had their several Expositions of the words, *Hoc est corpus meum* from the instruction of the Devil, why may it not then be as probable, that they had all one Master? Sixthly, *Baldwinus*, another *Lutheran*, writes a Book purposedly upon this Subject, and confesseth in plain termes, That it was a real Truth, no fiction or dream, but a matter of fact, and a true Story. His onely excuse of it is this. *It happened*, saith he *after* Luther *had abandoned the Mass*; and thinkes the Devils intent was onely to bring to *Luthers* remembrance *his old errours*, that he *had been a Priest*, *and said Mass fifteen years together*, *and so to drive him to despair*. But truly, if that were all the design, *The Devil was but an Ass*. To attempt such a tried souldier as he was, armed *cap a pe* with a confidence invincible, and the Doctrin of *only Faith*, with such a blunt and

feeble weapon as deſpair? *Luther* was a man out of his reach for that. He that teacheth, nothing can hurt a Chriſtian but *onely unbelief*; *That if a man ſhould commit adultery or murder a thouſand times a day, it could not divide him from Chriſt*; *That the greater ſinner a man is, the neerer he is to Gods grace*; could ſuch a man, think we, be brought *to deſpair*, onely by being told that he had ſaid Maſs in his time? and this too, as himſelf confeſſeth ſomewhere, with *a very pious intention*, and thinking that he had pleaſed God, and done very well in ſo doing? Neither is there any paſſage in the whole diſputation to inſinuate ſuch a purpoſe. The Devil only plies his arguments againſt Maſs, againſt Prieſthood, and nothing elſe. And therefore if it muſt needs be granted, that the diſputation happened after that *Luther* had abrogated the Maſs, it may be much better thought, that he began to ſtagger in his enterprize, and to repent, perhaps, of what he he had done;

Supr. Sec. 2. med.

done; and that the Devil saw it neceſſary to re-inforce his former, and but private ſuggeſtions (which yet had miſled him) by a ſecond and more ſolemn encounter. However 'tis clear, he was ſo far from pretending to make *Luther deſpair*, that he apparently tempts him to *preſumption*, while he blames him and *the Papiſts* for not having more *confidence*, for making as if Chriſt were unmerciful, by their flying to the Mediation of Saints and Angels. And this by the way is another argument, that the buſineſs fell out before *Luther* had abandoned Maſs, and not after, as this Author pretendeth. For that it is now onely related, *viz.* when *Luther* wrote his Book *de Abroganda Miſſa*, (which was about the year 1521. and perhaps after he had aboliſhed Maſs) yet it proves not but the Conference might be ſome yeares before. For 'tis well known, (and himſelf profeſſeth it often) that *Luther* fell by degrees into Hereſie, and not into all at once; and that he *Sur. Chron.*

maintained Paradoxes at the laſt, which at the firſt he did not ſo much as think of. So that, having out of the vanity and pride of his heart given the Devil advantage over him, by his conteſting in the buſineſs of Indulgences in the year 1517. he lay open to any further temptation afterward. Add hereunto that in the procedure of the diſpute, the Devil ſayes thus to *Luther*, *Hæc Unctio tua vanior eſt, quàm Baptizatio ſaxi.* *This thy Anointing* (ſaith he, meaning that of his Prieſthood) *is a vainer thing, then if thou ſhouldſt baptize a ſtone.* Which plainly inſinuates, that *Luther* was look't upon by his Adverſary at that time as a Prieſt, and one that uſed to ſay Maſs; and therefore it was before he had renounced either the one or the other.

Maſter *Chillingworth* in his anſwer to his own Motives, hath a conceit beyond all theſe. He denieth not, but that the Story is true, the diſputation real, nor but that it was while *Luther* was a Prieſt, and ſaid

Maſs;

Masſ; But ſuppoſing Maſs to be evil, he thinketh the Devils deſign was thereby *indirectly* to keep him cloſer to it, *viz.* to saying Maſs: as knowing that any man, and conſequently *Luther*, would be ſhye of imbracing that which the Devil ſhould ſo apparently tempt him unto. But doubtleſs it were to engage our ſelves in a wilderneſs of uncertain thoughts, if leaving the certain Rule of Faith, and the no leſs clear evidence of fact (which in all caſes of this nature are the beſt grounds to frame a right judgment upon) we ſhould give our ſelves liberty to conjecture and ſuppoſe whatſoever may come in our minds. It is far better, and more ſafe to ſtick to the Rule; ſuch arbitrary conjectures having commonly more of prejudice and private Intereſt (not to ſay paſſion) in them, then of ſound and unbyaſſed reaſon. Now doth not the Scripture tell us, that the Devil is *the Father of lyes, a lyar from the beginning*? Is he not the Enemy of God,

and the great enemy and deceiver of Soules? Are we not commanded to *resist his Temptations*? to *beware of his wiles*? not to hearken to his suggestions? why doe we not so? why will we deceive our selves, by pretending, even in our compliance to his suggestions, as it were to over-reach him; who is a Spirit, yea the quintessence of deceit, and infinitely more crafty (I say not, then we can be, but) then we can imagine? You will say, shall we not hearken to him, when he perswades us to good? I answer, He is a Spirit, *tantùm non* Essentially malicious, that is, immutably and unchangeably so; he is confirmed in evil, through the act and demerit of his own perverse will, as the Blessed Spirits are in all good by Grace. And therefore, though by the permission of God he can sometimes depose his own natural and ugly shape of Evil, and *Transform himself*, as the Apostle speaketh, *into an Angel of Light*, yet he can never perswade us to good, but out of some

ſome evil deſign: and that obligeth us to ſtand well upon our Guard, whenſoever we perceive him, to ſuſpend our conſent, to deliberate, to take all good adviſe, and to beware, though the thing which he perſwades were never ſo apparently good and honeſt; leſt, I ſay, we be caught by his wiles, which are many, and ſo intricately woven many times, that they are not eaſily perceived at firſt. As in this very caſe and combat with *Luther*, ſurely he was not ſo dull, as to think that *Luther* ſhould be *directly* perſwaded *by him* to any thing, or that he would take any thing *directly* upon his word, argument, or perſwaſion onely; who can imagine this in reaſon? But this, I ſuppoſe, we may, *viz.* That he might think, *Luther* upon this diſputation, and ſeeing the Devil ſo earneſt againſt Maſs, might be apt to have many apprehenſions in himſelf, and caſt in his minde This and That, and probably enough that very thing in particular which

Master *Chillingworth* pitched upon, *viz.* That he should think *The Devil does but prevaricate with me all this while, and seemingly tempts me from that, to which he would have me stick close*: which apprehension alone, considering how much wavering and unsetled in his minde he was already, the Devil knew wel enough would be able to carry him cleerly to the point whither he most of all desired to bring him, which was to renounce his Orders, and to abrogate Mass. As the event most unhappily shewed to be true; yea and as *Luther* himself in the sequel of the Discourse doth seem more then to intimate, answering an objection which some body made in these words, *An ignoras Diabolum esse Mendacem, &c. Know you not that the Devil is a Lyar? why then would you be perswaded by him? why would you beleeve him?* Thereupon he enters a discourse of the various fetches and stratagems which Satan useth to deceive soules; and sufficiently shewes how much he deceived himself

himself, by thinking to be too cunning for the Devil. Doctor *Morton* in his Apology hath the last Plea, but it is the most impertinent of all. For by telling a Story out of *Delrio* his *Magia. lib.* 4. *c.* 1. of the Devil appearing to an Abbot, and perswading him to say Mass, he would conclude *ad hominem*, that we especially ought not to hold it alwayes to be evil, which the Devil tempteth a man unto; nor consequently good, because he dissuades us from it. But the case is so unlike, and there are so many mistakes in the report of it, that it might well have been spared, had it not been, that the Doctor would seem to say something more then had been said before him. For first it was not an Abbot, but a Monk, whom the Devil tempted to say Mass. Secondly, That Monk was not yet Priest; and so it was against the Canons, yea it had been a grievous sin in him to have said Mass: This was fit matter indeed for the Devil to tempt a man *Lib.* 2. *Part.* 2.

unto; but, it ſeemes, it was not ſo fit for the Doctors purpoſe to mention this circumſtance, and therefore he leaves it out, as he uſeth to do ſometimes in other like caſes. Thirdly, neither did Satan enter any diſputation with the Monk either to prove, or diſprove Maſs. Fourthly, nor did the party tempted conſent. Fifthly and laſtly, neither did Maſs then firſt begin, which is a thing principally to be regarded: It was not (in the ſubſtance of the thing) a Novelty, which the Devil tempted unto, but an office of Religion generally acknowledged, profeſſed, obſerved in all Chriſtendom over. That which *Luther* was tempted unto (to ſay the leſt of it) was a Novelty, and therefore *ex naturâ rei*, neceſſarily and in all reaſon to have been ſuſpected; and which he would have ſuſpected, had he not been blinded with ſelf-conceit, and preferred his own ſingle opinion and fancy above the ſenſe of the whole

whole Church; which to do is an argument of *most insolent Madness*, as Saint *Austin* speaketh. *Epist.* 118. cap. 5.

7. This may suffice to have answered concerning *Luthers Vocation* or *Calling*, as well that which *he pretended*, as that which *was true*; I should now give you his Character; but that he hath done himself to the life, in his writings and practises mentioned already: Yet, if you please, for a taste of his modestie I shall adde a word or two, (not more) out of his own writings; and first concerning the Fathers *Colloq. Convival. cap. de patrib.* he rejects them all. Saint *Hierome hath not a syllable in all his writings of faith or true Religion.* Chrysostom *was a meer babler.* Basil *a Monke all over, and otherwise not worth a Button.* Tertullian *was a Dunce, a meer Carolstadius among the Doctors.* Cyprian *a poor Divine.* Austin himself, *hath nothing singular concerning faith.* And for Saint *Ambrose* he *wrote most drily and impertinently upon*

upon Geneſis. Saint *Bernard* indeed *is the beſt Preacher of them all; but where he diſputes, he is all for Free Will.* And ſo concludes at laſt, that *Melanchons* Apology hath more true Divinity in it, then all the Doctors of the Church. Secondly, in reſpect of the Saints. *Serm.* Fol. 442. *de Nativit. Mariæ. We are all Equal to the Mother of God, and as great Saints as ſhe. In Ep.* 1. Pet. 1. *When we are once regenerate,* ſaith he, *and made the Children and Heirs of God by Faith, we are all Equal in dignity to Saint* Peter, *Saint* Paul, *yea unto the Bleſſed Virgin her ſelf Mother of God. We have the ſame treaſure in us, which they have; and all the graces of God as largly beſtowed upon us, as they.* Which may ſeem not a little ſtrange, conſidering what he ſaith of himſelf elſewhere. *Nihil ſingulare in vitâ meâ eminet,* &c. *There is not any thing,* ſaith he, *very ſingular or extraordinary, in the manner of my life. I can jeſt, I can play, I am a merry companion with*

Colloq. Fanckford. Fol. 445.

with men; *yea* (*to Gods glory be it ſpoken*) *not ſeldom I love to take a luſty Cup alſo, &c.* But by his leave where did the Saints of God thus? *Elias* was no ſuch Boon, no ſuch Jovial Companion; it was not the Language, much leſs the Exerciſe of Gods Prophets to Carowſe and Quaff in this maner. Saint *Paul chaſtized his Body*, and *held it in ſubjection* by Faſting, Watching, and Pennance; did not pamper it, nor ſtudy to pleaſe his Appetite with Drink and Belly-cheer, as *Luthers* faſhion was; Who both lived and died an Epicure, beſide all his other crimes; and his too much Indulgence towards his Genius in that kind ſhortned his own days: as may be more then probably collected from the reports of good Authors; not excepting ſome of his own, *Juſtus Jonas*, *Aurifaber*, and others. *Sur. Chron. Ulember. vitâ Luth.*

I ſhould adde here a word or two concerning the *Vocation* of *Calvin* to his Miniſtery; but it was much 8.

much the same with that of *Luther*. For he finding *France* a Country too hot for him, ever since the Iron was set to his Shoulder, takes a Voyage first into *Germany*, then afterward into *Italy*; where getting entertainment in the house of the Dutchess of *Ferrara*, a Lady inclined to new opinions, in time he creates himself a preacher of the Reformation: *Extraordinarily* too, you may be sure; For no man living gave him Authority, but himself. From thence he goeth to *Genevah*, with intent to set up and exercise: but, as we have said, his first attempt failed him; and he was constrained to retire for a while to *Strasburgh*. Yet his party at last prevailing at *Genevah*, he returned, and setled his Chair of Pestilence there, which he held unto his death. But I have not obliged my self to write the Character or life of any persons. My Task was onely to shew, That Catholikes in general were as good

Sub-

Subjects, both in respect of their principles and practice, as Protestants in general; and better then the most: And this I conceive is already done; And therefore I shall trouble the Reader no further.

The

The Jeſuites ſpecial Vow.

THe ſociety of the Bleſſed name of Jeſus endureth much prejudice with many men, by reaſon of a certain *Special Vow* (as they call it) which they are ſaid to make to his Holineſs, over and above the Three Common Vows of Chaſtity, Poverty, and Obedience. It is generally conceived by Proteſtants, that by vertue thereof they ſtand obliged, upon command, and at the pleaſure of his ſaid Holineſs, to attempt the life of Kings, eſpecially thoſe, which he hath declared to be Hereticks, or Excommunicated, to murther

ther Princes, to embroyl and trouble States, and in a word, to plot and execute any Treasonable design whatsoever, that may advance the Popes Interest. But that the world may see how much they are wronged herein, and know, both what the substance of that *Special Vow* is, and what the Intent, Matter, and End of such Mission or Command from his Holiness ought to be, which they promise so presently to obey, it is here Transcribed out of the Bull or Constitution of Pope *Paul* the Third, by which their Order was Confirmed in the year 1540. and runnes thus.

And

AND further *we judge it expedient for our greater Devotion to the Sea Apoſtolik, and more full Abnegation of our own wills and pleaſures, That the Profeſſed of this Society, beſide the Common band of the Three Vows,* (*viz.* of Chaſtity, Poverty and Obedience) *be further tied by ſpecial Vow: So as that whatſoever the* Roman *Biſhop for the time being, ſhall command*, pertaining to the Salvation of Souls, *and* propagation of the Faith, *they ſhall be bound to execute the ſame, without Tergiverſation or Excuſe; whether* they ſhall be ſent unto Turks, *or unto* Infidels *yea even unto thoſe that are commonly called* the Indies, *or unto any other* Hereticks *or* Schiſmaticks *whatſoever.*

Now

Now what danger can arise unto Princes from such a vow as this, further then the Preaching of true Christian Catholike Faith, and the advancement of Religion is counted dangerous to their worldly Interests, unhappily setled in opposition to it. The indifferent Reader may judge.

FINIS.

Errata.

PAg. 7. in margin. r. lib. 51. P. 8. in margin. l. 2. r. lib. 120. l. 3. 4. ibid. deleatur *Thuanus* lib. P. 53. deleatur all that is in the margin. P. 132. l. 3. r. deny. P. 268. l. 18. r. condemned. P. 287. l. 5. r. deſerve. P. 309. l. 4. r. principal. 388. l. 20. r. Thirty Thouſand. P. 435. l. 24. r. ſeem. P. 439. l. 9. r. pulling down. P. 440. l. 3. r. did therefore. ibid. l. 4. r. amuzed. P. 453. l. 26. r. manifold. P. 487. l. 9. r whit. P. 564. l. 7. r. Catholikes. P. 578. l. 24. r. *Chacun*. P. 573. l. 8. r. we. P. 606. l. 3. r. not. P. 618. l. *ult*. r. inconveniences. P. 624. l. 10. r. calls him.

THE

Jesuites

To suppress

MONARCHY

Historically displayed

With their

SPECIAL V

Made by

POL

had the plea been? For ſhall the Duke of *Saxony* take arms for the defence of *Lutheraniſm*, and may not the Count *Palatine* of *Rhine* do the ſame in defence of *Calviniſm*, which yet the *Lutherans* will not endure? or an *Halberſtat* for *Epicuriſm?* or a *Muncer* with his Boors for *Anabaptiſm?* and ſo by *Anarchy*, under pretence of Conſcience and Liberties, rend in peices the Empire, and open the Ports of *Germany* to the *Turk*. But to ſtop the mouth of Learned Ignorance, I will diſcover more particularly, and lay down the foundation of this great quarrel betwixt *Cæſar* and the Confederate Princes, and the legal order and method of proceeding, which the Emperor conſtantly obſerved therein.

21. In the year 1521. The Emperor conferred perſonally with *Luther* at *Worms*, and out of his ſpecial Grace and Benignity, further required the Archbiſhop of *Triers*, and the Elector of *Brandenburgh*, to treat with him, and perſwade him to Conformity;

Conformity; but perceiving him obſtinate, and reſolved not to ſubmit himſelf to any due Authority, and finding that all his Courſe, Books, Sermons tended to nothing but Sedition, and making further diviſions among the people; at laſt he made a Decree, with the general conſent of the States, not to put him to death, ſuch was his mercy, but to baniſh him the Empire, wherein was ſhewn, as appeared afterward by the event, much more lenity then juſt providence. In which Decree, after the Cauſes and Reaſons of ſuch proceedings at large declared and ſet down, he concludeth thus. *Mandantes de eorundem Statuum conſenſu, ſub crimine læſe Majeſtatis, &c. Commanding by and with conſent of the ſaid States, under pain of High Treaſon, and forfeiture of whatſoever, Lands, Principalities, Goods or Priviledges holding of us, and of the Sacred* Roman *Empire; as alſo of Proſcription, or our Imperial Ban to be* ipſo facto *incurred, & c. That neither you, nor any*

of

any of you do presume to receive, maintain, or harbor the said Martin Luther, *&c. And that ye burn all those his foresaid Heretical and Seditious Books.* And this Edict was directed to all the Electors, Princes, Imperial Towns, and States. Now can you imagine, that the Duke of *Saxony*, or the *Landsgrave*, were exempted from this Edict? or that the Emperor had not as full power to call them to account for their contempt of it, as any inferior persons? or otherwise, that those Princes were the *Ephori* of *Germany*, and might curb the Emperor himself, if they saw cause? Then certainly the Emperor of *Germany* were but a poor shadow of an Emperor, a *Titulus sine re* indeed, a matter of nothing but empty Title, and it were true that which *Bodin* saith, that *Imperium in Imperio quærendum est*; A man might seek for an Emperor all the Empire over, and not finde him: Which yet by his leave, is a gross error. Well! The Duke of *Saxony*, notwithstanding this Edict, would maintain

Jo. Bodin, de Rep.

maintain and protect *Luther*; as he did at *Alstat* a Town of his own in *Turingia*; which place *Luther* with no ſmall arrogance, or impiety rather, was wont to call his *Pathmos*; and in the mean time changed Religion, and eſtabliſhed *Lutheraniſm* in all his own Dominions; and at *Smalcald*, as we ſaid before, entred a League againſt the Emperor for maintenance of it.

Which actions of the Duke, that you may underſtand how directly they are againſt Law and Juſtice, *Andrew Gail* that famous Lawyer ſhall tell you, *Receptores bannitorum perinde puniantur, &c. The Receivors*, ſaith he, *of Outlaws or Baniſhed perſons, are lyable to the ſame puniſhment*, that ſuch people are; and *Domini Prædiorum, The Lords*, ſaith he, *of thoſe places where they lurk, are bound to deliver them up; viz.* To Juſtice. And again, *Qui bannito commeatum & annonam ſuppeditat, He that ſupplieth an Outlaw with proviſion or victuals, is ordinarily judged as a receivor.* *Brunus* ſhall alſo tell you,

22.

Gailius de Pace public. c.10. ſect.36.

Adverſ. Hereſ. lib. 1. c.4.

you, That in *excommunicatis, qui bannitis*; *That the very entertainment of excommunicate and outlawed persons, is criminal and lyable to punishment.* If you suppose, that these Laws respected onely inferior receivors, and that the Duke was free, hear what *Gail* saith again.

Lib. 1. c. 1. sect. 9. *Conditio Pacis publicæ, &c. An Edict for the publike Peace, obligeth all persons in the Empire of what state, condition or dignity soever, as well the Princes themselves, as the inferior people*; *yea*, saith he, *though it were published against some one or more of the Princes.* The Duke therefore not obeying the Law, and knowing that the Emperor had oft written out of *Spain*, that the Edict of *Worms* should be executed, he aggravated his crime fearing the indignation of *Cæsar*; and thereupon took up arms, and entred into the League, as hath been said. And yet notwithstanding after this League entred, such was the lenity of *Cæsar*, that his Ambassador at *Spires*, in the year 1529. offered

the

the Confederates moſt equal and moderate terms of accord, *viz.* No more then that *utrinque ab omni injuriâ, &c. That henceforward both parties ſhould abſtain from doing injury to others, and from all offenſive language or reviling each other; and that onely offenders againſt this agreement ſhould be baniſhed.* A man would think this were a reaſonable offer from the Supream Magiſtrate to the Inferiors, obnoxious both to him and the Law: Yet was it rejected by the Confederates. At *Auſpurgh* again in the year 1530. the Emperor moſt graciouſly entertained the Duke, and received a Petition from him, with as much favor and indifferency as could ſtand with his honor: And there again revived his Ambaſſadors motion at *Spires*, that no further Innovations might be made, no more Books publiſhed, but that at leaſt all things might abide in quiet State, till the Seventeenth of *May* enſuing: So much did his Imperial Majeſty yeeld for Peace ſake. And

yet

yet the Duke rejected his motion; which ſo much diſpleaſed the Emperor, that he forbore not to tell him, and the reſt of the Leaguers, *That if they obeyed not, they ſhould repent it.* And yet again, at *Spires* he labored to have prevailed with them by fair means; but thither the Duke (being grown more jealous and fearful of *Cæſar*) would not come. However by this courſe, which the Emperor conſtantly held towards them, you may ſee, how unwilling he was to diſturb the Peace, or to begin the War; and how inexcuſable they were, that rejected ſo often the offers of accommodation.

23. But beſide this, if I ſhould relate the malice and contempt they uſed to him, you might well think they ought not to have expected the leaſt degree of mercy from him, in caſe they ſhould fall into his hands, as it hapned they did. For in all their publike Letters they vouchſafed him no other Title, then *Charls of Gaunt, uſurping the name of Emperor;*

Surius in Chron.

Emperor; whereby they renounced all obedience to him, and ſo far as in them lay, depoſed him: Which was an indignity the meaneſt Prince of them all, would not have accounted ſufferable in his own perſon. I muſt not forget, that the *Landſgrave* did uſually, both by Letters and Meſſages, with no little bravery and confidence aſſure the Princes, and Towns of the League, that within three moneths they would force *Charls* to flie out of *Germany*, and leave the Empire to them. But how then did their pretences hang together? that this League was made onely *ſe defendendo*, and for their Lawful Protection? Surely they aimed at ſome thing more, when they talked of expelling the Emperor out of *Germany*. As they alſo did when they ſolicited the Kings of *France*, *England*, *Denmark*, the *Hans* Towns, and *Swiſſes*, to joyn with them, and diſhonorably abuſed him by many foul and infamous aſperſions. It is true, *France* indeed, (though his

enemy at that time) nobly denied them; *Denmark* lingred, expecting the ſucceſs; neither was King *Henry* forward, though his great Counſellor, and Favorite, *Cromwel*, ſollicited their buſineſs diligently, and was ſo forward, as to promiſe an hundred thouſand Crowns for their aid. At which time Doctor *Thirlby*, Biſhop of *Weſtminſter*, and Sir *Philip Hobby*, were the Kings Ambaſſadors with the Emperor, and by that occaſion witneſſes of the whole Tragedy.

24. And yet a little further, to diſprove their proceedings by Law: Let us remember firſt the Decree at *Worms* above-mentioned, which as *Gail* the Lawyer hath told us, in the caſe of publike Peace, obligeth all perſons alike: Let us remember the Decree of *Maximilian* the Firſt Emperor, about the year 1500. in theſe words, *Conſentientibus Statuum & Ordinum votis, &c. By the general conſent of the Princes and States of the Empire, an Edict or Conſtitution was publiſhed neceſſary for*

for publike Peace, called in the Language of the Empire *Landtfrieden. By which Conſtitution, Proſcription* or Baniſhment *was adjudged to all ſuch as diſturbed the publike Peace by force of Arms*; which *Gail* further explains to this ſenſe. *Omnia Bella, &c. All War*, ſaith he, *made without conſent of the Prince, and Commiſſion from him, upon private revenge or quarrel onely, is adjudged unlawful.* And Cap. 5. *In crimen læſæ Majeſtatis incurrit, &c. He commits high Treaſon*, ſaith he, *whoſoever within the Empire raiſeth Arms, but by the Emperors Authority and Commiſſion; becauſe he uſurps to himſelf, that which is the proper Prerogative Imperial.* Yea, their own *Goldaſtus* confeſſeth it to be ancient Law, *Nemo intra Imperii fines, &c. That no man preſume to gather Soldiers within the bounds of the Empire, but by conſent of the Prince of that reſpective Circle where he is; and that he give ſufficient Caution to the States, that he intends not to attempt any thing againſt the Emperor, or againſt any of the*

Gailius de Pace. lib. 1. c. 14.

Lib. 1. tit. 190.

Tom. 2. *States of the Empire.* And in another place he alledgeth a Decree of *Ludovicus Pius*, againſt the King of the *Romans* and his Confederates, as guilty of High Treaſon, for attempting againſt the Emperor. The like alſo of *Henry* the Firſt, againſt *Arnulphus*, Duke of *Baviere*, who rebelled againſt him; and of *Otho* the Firſt, againſt *Ludolphus*, King of the *Romans*; and laſtly, of *Maximilian* the Firſt, againſt *Emicho*, Earl of *Lingen*, whom he proclaimed Traytor, confiſcated his Lands and Eſtate, and gave them to other Princes of the Empire, onely for going to ſerve the *French* King in his Wars, though out of the Empire, contrary to his Proclamation. And as for the Imperial Towns, which confederated with theſe Princes, there is as little to be ſaid for them: For it is a Maxim of Law, recorded by *Gail*, *Ubi ſupra*; that *Civitatum Imperialium ſolus Imperator eſt dominus. That the Emperor onely is Lord of the Imperial Cities, and not their ſeveral Magiſtrates:*

ſtrates: And that they pretended their Liberties in this caſe againſt the Emperor, to no purpoſe.

And for *Luther*, who was the *primum mobile*, and cheif wheel of all theſe motions; or rather the *malus Genius*, that Fury which agitated the people, and ſtirred them up to all theſe diſorders, if the Princes and Towns were thus guilty, he could not be innocent. If the Flock did erre, the Shepherd which led them, was to blame. I ſhall not here charge him again with any ſmall faults, I will not accuſe him of belying *Cæſar* moſt impudently, when he wrote to his friend thus: *Wormatiam ingreſſus ſum. I entred* Worms, ſaith he, *at a time, when I knew that* Cæſar *would not keep Faith with me.* Nor of his traducing or vilifying that moſt Fundamental Conſtitution of the Empire in *Aureâ Bullâ*, making it one of the cheif miracles which Antichriſt was to work, *viz.* The tranſlating of the Empire from the *Greeks* to the *French*, in the perſon of *Carolus* 25. In Epiſt.

Turcsel. Epitom. lib. 6. p. 204.

Magnus, which was done by Pope *Leo* the Third: Nor of his usurping upon the Emperor and Temporal Government, in those pretended Laws of his which he published, concerning the Publike Exchequer; and how he would have Church-Lands and Abby-Lands to be disposed, when he and the Princes should be Masters of all. It shall be enough, that I say, He first counselled the Princes to take Arms, and oppose *Cæsar* in his quarrel; and this *Sleydan* himself acknowledgeth. And that all his Preaching, and all his endeavors were to overthrow the Ecclesiastical Electors, whose Dignities and Estates being established by the *Aureâ Bullâ*, it was Treason, or Sedition in the highest degree so to do. The three Ecclesiastical Electors, are three Chancelors of the Empire, and in respect of their Regalities, immediately subject to the Emperor; so as there lieth no appeal from them to the Pope, but to the Emperor, and Chamber at *Spires*. *Luther* therefore

fore contriving their ruine, attempted treacherously to pull the faireſt Flowers out of the Imperial Crown. Neither could he effect the ſuppreſſion of them, but he muſt undermine and endanger the State of the Temporal Electors alſo; who, as links of the ſame chain, muſt neceſſarily have faln to the ground upon the diſſolution of the other; for they had no other ground, nor could plead any other Charter for their Dignities and Immunities, then the Eccleſiaſticks did.

Therefore, to draw towards a conclusion, concerning *Luther* and his practiſes, I ſhall adde one inſtance more of intolerable iniquity and arrogance, which *Cochlæus* relates, either of *Luther* (as is moſt probable, for the Author appeared masked, and was *Anonymus*) or at leaſt of ſome *Lutheran*, publiſhed upon theſe differences betwixt *Cæſar* and the Princes. *Atque ut ora eis obturem*; *And that I may ſtop their mouths for ever*, ſaith he, *they are to* 26. *Cochlæ.* in Miſcel.

know, ſpeaking of the Pope, Emperor, and other Princes Catholike, *That they are but Elective all of them, and that they may be depoſed for their miſgovernment, as hath been oftentimes done.* This is very modeſt, in compariſon of what follows; for having unto this Propoſition added an Aſſumption, as full of calumnies and ſlanders, he concludes very Logically againſt *Cæſar* thus: *Hunc ego exactiorem; Such an Oppreſſor and Tyrant, as this, ſuch a* Moabite, *ſuch a* Phalaris, *ſuch a* Nero *to drive him out of the Country, to put him out of his Throne, cannot but be a thing moſt acceptable to God.* How juſtly therefore may that ſage Counſel of *Mecænas* given to *Auguſtus*, be applied unto him, and thoſe of his Gang; as the Hiſtorian relates it. *Eos, qui in divinis aliquid innovant, odio habe & coerce. They that introduce Innovations in the matters of Religion, deteſt*, ſaith he, *and be ſure to reſtrain, not onely for the ſake of the gods (whoſe honor yet whoſoever neglecteth, doth ſeldom advance himſelf*

Dio Caſs. lib. hiſt. 52.

ſelf much) but alſo for thy own: For ſuch perſons by bringing in of new opinions, and new cuſtoms concerning the gods, do very much diſquiet the people, and make them deſire change in the Affairs of State: Whence proceed Seditions, Conſpiracies, Factions, and Tumults among them; all which, are things prejudicial to the Dignity of a Prince, and ſhould be avoided. How true this is, *Germany* and theſe other parts of Chriſtendom have been a ſad example, for theſe hundred of years. And how juſtly it might be done, *Luther* himſelf will tell you as clearly as any man, if you conſult him, when he is himſelf: For though he were a mad Doctor, yet he had his *lucida intervalla*, and could now and then diſcern Reaſon, eſpecially when he declaimed againſt Sacramentaries and Anabaptiſts; for then the Magiſtrate muſt do his office, and no man muſt complain. *Neque is Sectarius, in quem animadvertitur per Magiſtratum, cogitur ad fidem.* For, ſaith he, *ſuch a Sectary as is puniſhed by the*

Enarrat. in Pſalm 82. Tom. 3. f. 488. Wittemb.

in the example of an infamous Empirick ſent from *Genevah* thither, whoſe practices have inflamed the whole Body of that Kingdom, and filled it with ſo much irregular Zeal, and abundance of ill Humors, as thereby hath grown a Pleurifie of Troubles in that State, which hath coſt much blood, and is not perfectly cured to this day. The Authors of the Tumults and Alterations in *Scotland*, with the Actors alſo, were as violent as Whirlwinds; they blew down all that ſtood in their way, even Royalty and the Crown it ſelf. *John Knox*, *Goodman*, *Gilby*, and *Buchanan*, were the principal Inſtruments of the Work, and emiſſaries of Maſter *Calvin*; yet bravely ſeconded by Maſter *David Fergerſſon* (a Learned Shoemaker, but Miniſter at *Dundee*,) by Maſter *Coverdale*, *Willox*, *Rous*, *Harriot*, and *Montgomery*. *Victrix Legio*, a man may well ſay, *Et Novatores ſtrenui*. Men of invincible obſtinacy in their way, and as perfect Innovators, as could be deſired. All of them Miniſters,

Miniſters, and of ſuch *Salt-peter Spirits*, as were fit to blow up, and put into Combuſtion any Nation in the World. By theſe was the Church of *Scotland* Reformed, according to the Standard of *Genevah*, and the Platform of thoſe Elders. *Knox* was their *Nehemia*'s, but far unlike him, both in proceedings and qualities; yet he pretended to act his part: How properly and piouſly his Countryman will beſt inform you, who wrote of his vertues. *Buchanan* was ever a rude and ſlovenly *Swiß*, of a preſumptuous audacity, and by nature factious. He was one of them, that in the time of *James* the Fifth, at *Edinburgh*, did ſolemnly in *Lent* eat the Paſchal Lamb; and being convicted of that *Judaiſm* (a buſineſs which the King himſelf examined) his Companions were condemned and burnt for the Hereſie; but he himſelf eſcaped, and fled over into other Countreys, as a man reſerved to be a ſcourge to his own. But to diſcern their ſpirits cleerly, and to judge

Langius vitâ *Joh. Knoxi.*

judge of their *peaceableneſs*, *patience*, *ſanctity*, &c. which yet they ſo much pretended, we muſt firſt read their Theorems, and by the Maxims of their Doctrine, we ſhall finde them *Doctors extraordinary* indeed, and ſuch as were ſcarce to be matched again in the whole World, for the buſineſs which they came about.

2. I ſhall begin with *Knox* firſt, who in his Book to the Nobility and people of *Scotland*, inſtructs them thus in the point we treat of, *viz.* Of obedience to Princes, and Loyalty, *Neque promiſſum, neque juramentum obligare poteſt*, &c. *Neither promiſe*, ſaith he, *nor oath can oblige any man to obey, or give aſſiſtance unto Tyrants, againſt God.* It is true; no man ſaith that they can, when the Tyrant expreſly *commandeth*, that which God expreſly *forbiddeth*; but that is not the caſe: All the World knoweth, in the ſence of *Knox* and *Genevah* there is much pretended to be *againſt God*, which is not at all *forbidden by God.* And when a Chriſtian Prince *commands* nothing, but

but what his Office and the Laws of his Kingdom do require him to *command*, certainly we may not ſo haſtily preſume it to be *againſt God*; ſome better Authority muſt declare it to be ſo, then the bare opinion of a *Knox*, or a *Buchanan*. So in his Hiſtory of *Scotland*, *Princes*, ſaith he, *may be depoſed by the people, if they be Tyrants againſt God and his Truth; and their Subjects are free from their Oaths and Obedience.* Secondly, *Goodman* his Companion and Fellow *Boutefeu* ſings to the ſame tune out of *Exodus*, in a Book which teacheth any thing, more then what the title promiſeth. *Toti populo hoc onus incumbit, &c. This is a duty*, ſaith he, *which lieth upon all the people in general, to ſee that Idolaters be puniſhed, whoſoever, or how great ſoever they be, none muſt be excepted, neither King, nor Queen, nor the Emperor himſelf.* This is his Homily; *If Governors fall from God* (and ſtill we muſt remember, what it is *to fall from God* in his ſenſe) *ad furcas abripiant*, away

Goodm. de obedientiâ.

away with them, God requires it of the people, that they fall upon them, and *Hang them up instantly*. Most excellent Consistorian Doctrine verily! such Spirits, and such Preachers deserve the countenance of the State. Neither is *Buchanan* much behinde in such grave and wholesome Counsels. For first he tels you, *that the people is above the King, and of greater Authority then he.* If he means this of the *people Collectively taken*, and Legally represented; albeit it were true, yet is it not any way pertinent to his purpose; for never did he, nor any of his reforming brethren beyond the Seas, act any thing by the Authority of the people in that sense: if he means, as he must do, of *the people dispersedly*, and rising, in tumults heer and there of their own heads, it is apparently seditious, and destructive of all Governments whatsoever. After he hath said this, and that *the people may bestow the Crown at their pleasure* (notwithstanding that the Law ordereth the descent

Buchan. *de jure regn. apud Scotos.* p. 61.

ſcent thereof in a particular and certain ſucceſſion) he falls at laſt into a Dialogue worth your obſerving. *They hold*, ſaith he, meaning Royalliſts, *that Kings muſt be obeyed good or bad. It is blaſphemy to affirm that*, ſaith Buchanan. But, *God placeth often times evil Kings*, ſay the Royalliſts: *So doth he oft private men to kill them*, ſaies Buchanan. But *in* 1 Tim. *we are commanded to pray for Princes*, ſay they. *So are we commanded to pray for Theeves*, ſaith he. Bnt ſay the Royalliſts, *S.* Paul *commands obedience to Princes. Saint* Paul *wrote ſo*, ſaith Buchanan, *in the infancy of the Church; if he lived now, he would write otherwiſe.* It hath been ſaid, that *nullum magnum ingenium ſine aliquâ mixturâ inſaniæ*, Theſe great high-ſoaring wits have commonly ſome tincture of frenzy following them. *Buchanan* in his time was counted for ſuch, a great wit; but queſtionleſs had he been perfectly ſound, he could never have let ſlip ſuch a Hyſteron-proteron, as this is, from his Pen; he would

would never have ſet the Cart thus before the Horſe, the people above the King, arming them to kill their Princes, under any undeclared, unjudged pretenſe of Tyranny; For when ſuch a thing is done without juſtice and publick order, what can be more impious and abominable? yet *Knox* not onely juſtyfieth it, but could be content, *there were publike rewards appointed for ſuch Aſſaſſinates*, and Murderers of Tyrants, as he calls them, *which there are for ſuch as kill Wolves*. So far doth the zeal and light of their new Goſpel carry them. The ſword of *Gideon* is now in their hands, and all are *Midianites*, *Moabites*, and Enemies of God that ſtand in their way. But I pray thee good Reader what is Anarchy, Sedition, Treaſon, if this be order or good government?

Hiſtor. of *Scotland.* p. 372.

3. I ſhall not need to trouble you further with inſtances of Doctrine: The book of *Dangerous poſitions, &c.* gives a general Sentence, that *ſuch Divinity as this, is not holden by* Knox *and* Buchanan *alone*, but *generally*, ſaith

ſaith he, *for ought I can perceive by the chief Conſiſtorians beyond the Seas.* He means the Presbyterian Divines, *Calvin*, *Bezæ*, and the reſt of their Gang; whoſe opinions have been but too much reverenced here in *England*, ſince the year 1570. and it would be very unhappy, that ſuch ſhops of ſedition, as their Conſiſtories be, ſhould be ever ſet up, or opened: here *Whittingham* in his Preface to *Goodmans* Book *of Obedience*, teſtifieth from *Genevah*, that it had been allowed, and much commended by the chief Divines of that place. *Calvin* himſelf *Epiſt.* 105. to *Knox* doth applaud his practices, and encourage him to proceed. *Buchanans* works paſs'd for a long time as currant in *Scotland*, as if they had been Printed *Cum privilegio*; till the King at laſt found it neceſſary to prohibite them. So we ſee, it was not *Goodman* alone, nor *Knox* alone, but the whole Congregation of Presbyterians, that defended ſuch dangerous Paradoxes; and not in one Country, but generally

rally where they were admitted; not lately or newly, but originally and from the beginning of their ſect. Yea their *Geneuah* Bibles pretend to prove it from 2 *Chron.* 15.16. where they allow the depoſing of Queen *Maacha*, by her ſon King *Aſa*, for Idolatry. But it is an example, which by no violence they can uſe, will be fitted to their purpoſe. For firſt it was done, not by private perſons, but by *Aſa* the King. Secondly, not by *the King alone*, but with the full conſent, yea, Covenant of all the people, *V.* 13. and not contrary, but according to the expreſs Law, *Deut.* 13. 9. What is this to private perſons, or the people tumultuouſly runing together againſt their Princes, and killing them not only without any publike order or authority acknowledged, but even contrary to the Laws eſtabliſhed, and while the Princes themſelves are doing nothing, but what the Laws eſtabliſhed and their Office oblige them to do? Such practiſes as theſe are not allowed at *Doway*; nor are there

Mark that.

there any ſuch notes to be found in the Rhemiſts Teſtament. The Biſhop of *Roſs* chargeth them, but *Knox* eſpecially, that in his Sermons he bitterly inveighed againſt the Nobility, *Quod Jeſabelem illam ex medio non ſuſtalerunt, &c.* becauſe they were ſlow in removing that *Jezabel* (ſo he calls the Queen Regent of *Scotland*) *either from the Government, or out of the World:* For it is not certain, which he meaneth, and the phraſe, as his Spirit, inclines to the worſe. And therefore, becauſe the Nobility, as it ſeems, would make no more haſte, they begin the Reformation themſelves, *viz.* He and thirty more of his company; firſt of all, by ſurprizing the Caſtle of Saint *Andrews*, and murdering of the Cardinal *Betun.* This was in the year 1546. The Queen hereupon ſummoning him to appear, and anſwer for ſuch outrages, he refuſed; ſhe proclaims him Traytor, he contemns her Proclamation; and having ſecured himſelf at Saint *Johnſtons* from any danger

Leſlæus Hiſt. lib. 10.

danger of apprehenſion by the Queens Officers, who ſought him, he was ſo far from relenting, or ſhewing any reſpect to the Queen Regent, that at the ſame time he perſwades the Burgeſſes of the place, *viz.* Saint *Johnſtons*, and of *Dundee*, to ſuppreſs the Frieries, to pull down Images in the Churches, and overthrow the Abbeys of Stone, and Saint *Andrews*: Which they did, keeping Forces in the Field two moneths together, taking the Coyning Irons into their cuſtody, and proceeded ſo uncontroulably, and without reſiſtance in their diſordrous courſes, that it even brake the heart of that Noble and Religious Queen Regent to ſee it. After whoſe death, in the year 1560. (the Queen being then in *France*) by the inſtigation and procurement of *Knox*, it was enacted, as a Law perpetual and fundamental in the State, *That Catholike Religion ſhould be aboliſhed*, and that whoſoever defended the Popes Authority in *Scotland*, ſhould be

baniſhed

baniſhed, and that all former *Acts to the contrary ſhould be repealed.* This was pretended to be done *by the three Eſtates*; but the Queens Commiſſion could not be ſhewn, nor any conſent of hers to confirm ſuch Acts; beſide the oppoſition which the Clergy or State Eccleſiaſtical generally made againſt ſuch proceedings, not onely in the Parliament or Convention of States, where they happened to be overborn, but all the Kingdom over. Therefore to make that ſeem good by a colour of Law, which was at firſt begun by meer Faction and Violence, ſome years after; *viz. Anno* 1567. and after the depoſition, or rather unjuſt and forced Reſignation of their lawful Sovereign the Queen, they procure an other Parliament to be called (the Earl *Murray* being then Regent, and the King ſcarce out of his Cradle) which confirms the Acts of the Parliament, 1560. and preſcribes an oath to be taken by all ſucceeding Kings, to maintain the Religion then

See *Jo. Leſlæus* hiſt. of *Scotland.*

Cap. 9.

then received (to which as yet no King had ever consented) and establisheth the Confession of that Church. The Queen provoked with their many and insufferable indignities, had, before this time, sent for some *French* Forces into *Scotland* to oppose them: But this they take so ill, and the Preachers of new Doctrine in all parts of the Kingdom, improve the occasion so much to her disadvantage, and to the further incensing of the people, that at last, they not onely make shift to exclude her from all Government, putting her in condition of a private person, but dishonor her beside with most capital and criminous Accusations; yea; and cast her into prison, not without great danger of her life. *Beza* (that *Tibullus* of *Genevah*) instigating and encouraging them much thereunto, who is pleased in his Reformed Zeal and Eloquence to call her *Medea, Athaliah*, and what not? *Nullum ejus sceleribus nomen, &c.* The Good Man, it seems, could not finde

words

words bad enough to expreſs her guiltineſs; and yet how well is it known, he had ſtore of them always at command; and how maliciouſly he pleaded againſt her, while ſhe was priſoner in *England*, onely out of hatred to the Houſe of *Lorrain*, appears abundantly in his Book called *Reveille-Matin*.

I confeſs, generally tis better to bury old quarrels, then to renew their memory; yet to juſtifie the Innocent, and to detect perfectly the evil practiſes of theſe men, I cannot forbear to inſiſt a while on this Subject, and to declare more particularly, what inducements they pretended, for ſuch exorbitant courſes. They accuſed the Queen of procuring the death of her Husband, the Lord *Henry Darley*, out of a deſire and intention to marry *Bothwel*, who was principal in the murther. Therefore ſay they, for zeal to Juſtice, for the Honor of the Realm, and ſatisfaction to Forreign Nations, it is neceſſary, that ſhe be under re-

ſtraint, til ſhe cleer her ſelf from the imputation of ſuch heinous crimes. Theſe were their Accuſations and pretenſes. But touching the Murther it was very unlike to be true; and certainly required manifeſt proofs, if ever any cauſe did. Her Sex was not fit for ſuch a Butchery; and her nature known to be too Royal, to harbor ſuch diſhonorable Treachery: though ſhe had ſome juſt cauſe of offence againſt him. If ſhe had deſired to put him to death, he was her Subject, and ſhe might have done it, openly, legally, and by courſe of Juſtice. He had been of the Confederacy for the killing of *David Rizu* her Secretary; his own Dagger was found in his Body. The Earl *Morton* beeing fled into *England* upon that offence, he preſumed to revoke him, and call him home without the Queens knowledge or allowance. Neither was he Loyal to the Queen in reſpect of Conjugal affection and duty; his offenſiveneis in that kinde was very

very notorious and ſcandalous to all the Court, and occaſion of much diſquiet and difference betwixt the Queen and him; and from whence their common Adverſaries took advantage, in a ſhort time, to ruin them both: What then is the proof of ſuch a crime? what evidence bring they to convince her guilty of the Fact? Firſt they object, that *Douglas*, Earl *Bothwels* man, was executed for it. True. And that it was he, that brought a Box of Letters of the Queens to *Bothwel*, which he had received of Sir *James Balfoor* at *Edenburgh* to carry to his Maſter; by which Letters intercepted, their juglings and practiſes (*viz.* of the Queen and *Bothwel*) were diſcovered. It is anſwered, Lyes have commonly one Leg ſhort; and ſo 'tis here. For is it probable, that either the Queen, or the Earl ſhould repoſe ſuch confidence, and ſo great ſecrets in a man, that was known to be at the devotion of a contrary Faction, as Sir *James Balfoor* was? Is it likely

General of the League. They admitted also the Marquis of *Baden* the Duke of *Wittembergh*, *Landgrave* of *Hessen*, Duke of *Dupontz* and *Strasburgh*, *Norimbergh* and many other Cities. All which contributed so largly to these Wars as the Emperor never received the like Aid from them against the *Turke*. For as *Cogmandolo* testifieth, The several Taxes afforded by them from the year 1608 to the year 1619 amounted in the whole sum to no less then Four Millions, one hundred seventy six thousand, nine hundrd and seventeen Florens. The concurrence of so many Princes could not but argue mighty force; which was much increased by the Negotiations of *Mansfeld*, and *Nomarus* in *Italy*, (which *Nomarus* was *Baltazar Newwen* principal Secretary to *Onoltzbach*.) and of *Volrad Plessen* with the *Hollanders*; and of others with the Duke of *Bullion*, *Bethlehem Gabor*, and the Rebels of *Hungary*. And though they could not perswade the King

of

of *England* to enter into their League, for great and weighty reasons which he alledged, yet they hoped for some good assistance from the *Grisons*; and gave out also that the *Hans* Townes favored their Union. They omitted not to solicit the *Venetians* also with much earnestness, as conceiving it to be their interest to keep the other Princes of *Europe* in balance, as much as may be, and to be jealous of the too potent Supereminency of any one; but what answer the Common-wealth gave them is not certainly known. The pretense of their Union was, that it was purely defensive, for the protection only of their Religion, Liberties and Priviledges. *Vetus Cantilena*, the old song, I confess, but who can beleeve them? Can it be supposed of *Anhalt*, that he took Arms onely for Conscience, having been so well beaten in *France* for it, both out of his Honor and Fortunes? or that Count *Mansfeld* is a man that fights onely for Conscience,

and Publike liberty, whose Trad
and patrimony is the Sword, an
who, braving the World m
commonly with a running Arm
more used to Pillage then Fig
Robs and Spoils all, where ever
comes? Besides, doth not *Acha*
a Donau write to *Anhalt*, *Novem*
the Fifteenth, 1619. that the int
tion of *Bethlehem Gabor*, a princi
Confederate, was *pied a pied*, b
degrees, yet as closely as foot co
follow, *to root out the Antichris*
an Papacy, where he came? Th
was something more then to b
onely defensive. And in the Uni
on it self, which contains One and
twenty Articles in all, although
they say, it was onely their *Buckl*
against the Catholikes *assaulting*
them, yet do they not profess, *Art*
8. to have intention to expel *Pa*
pism, as they call it? and to pre
serve themselves from the Yoak o
Spain and forreign Government?
And doth not *Bethlehem Gabor* in
his Letter to the *Turk*, profess also,
how much he labors now, *Ut reg*

Pon-

Sanctificiorum Cohors, &c. that *those seven Companies of Papelings* (so he calls the Catholike Clergy, and Religious,) might be utterly destroyed. This therefore was certain, had they prevailed, Catholike Religion long before this time had been extinct in those Countries, and Catholikes themselves banished, destroyed and gone. In order to this do they not decree among themselves, *Pag.* 43. to fall upon Church-men, and Church-goods first? *Pag.*131. do they not resolve to invade some part of their Adversaries Country, (as they call the Catholikes, having first compelled them to be so, for their own defense?) and in particular do they not name and design out the Arch-Bishoprick and City of *Triers*, as lying fairest in their way, and being a Prince Electors Country, Catholike, and the Clergy rich? But their Noblest and Chief project was to invest themselves of two Crowns, (goodly booties indeed, if they could catch them, and

Temp-

Temptations fit for such high Spirits,) that is to say, of the Kingdoms of *Bohemia* and *Hungary*. The reason is given *Pag* 25. because thereby in the Assembly of Electors *they should be always Secure of a double Vote*. And therefore doth the Count *Palatine* confess in his Letter to the Duke of *Saxony*, that he took upon him the Administration of *Bohemia*, among other reasons, principally for this, *viz*. *That by this means the Election of the King of the* Romans *might be hence forward in the power of the Protestants*. This was certainly a main part of their design, according to that which *Anhalt* writes unto *Donau* in *May* 1519. *That it were better the* Turk *were chosen to wear that Crown*, then Ferdinand; yea *Gabor* tells the *Turk*, that the *Palatine* and *Brandenburgh* were resolved *no longer to endure* Ferdinand, and that all those Provinces that were Confederate with them, *Corde & animo omnia officia fidelissimè præstabunt*, *were ready with heart and goodwill to tende*

tender all faithful ſervices to his Ottoman Greatneſs, and the whole Nation of Turks; and that In a ſhort time *Ferdinand* would ſurely be expelled out of all *Germany*, and forced to ſeek his fortunes in *Spain*. But O Monſtrous! O Incredible! that ſuch deſperate malice and impiety ſhould enter the hearts of any that profeſs themſelves Chriſtians! were it not, that the Records themſelves be extant *fide publicâ*, which do aſſure us thereof even beyond contradiction, who could beleeve it? O Malice implacable! O Envy moſt perfectly diabolical! And O happy houſe, Family, Name of *Auſtria*, which for the intereſt of true Religion, and Conſtancy to Juſtice, deſerveſt to be made the object of ſuch execrable Spleen, and to Combat perpetually with ſuch odious and Antichriſtian Conſpiracies. It is no new thing. But *Macte iſtâ virtute*; Be faithful to God, and to thoſe principles of piety and juſtice deſcended from ſo many, ſo Religious, and ſo Renowned Anceſtors,

Guicciard. Lib. 20.

Temptations fit for such high Spi-
rits,) that is to say, of the King-
doms of *Bohemia* and *Hungary*. The
reason is given *Pag* 25. because
thereby in the Assembly of Electors
*they should be always Secure of a dou-
ble Vote.* And therefore doth the
Count *Palatine* confess in his Let-
ter to the Duke of *Saxony*, that he
took upon him the Administration
of *Bohemia*, among other reasons,
principally for this, *viz. That by
this means the Election of the King of
the* Romans *might be hence forward
in the power of the Protestants.* This
was certainly a main part of their
design, according to that which
Anhalt writes unto *Donau* in *May*
1519. *That it were better the* Turk
were chosen to wear that Crown, then
Ferdinand; yea *Gabor* tells the
Turk, that the *Palatine* and *Bran-
denburgh* were resolved *no longer to
endure* Ferdinand, and that all
those Provinces that were Confe-
derate with them, *Corde & animo
omnia officia fidelissimè præstabunt,*
were ready with heart and goodwill
tende

tender all faithful ſervices to his Ottoman Greatneſs, and the whole Nation of Turks; and that In a ſhort time *Ferdinand* would ſurely be expelled out of all *Germany*, and forced to ſeek his fortunes in *Spain*. But O Monſtrous! O Incredible! that ſuch deſperate malice and impiety ſhould enter the hearts of any that profeſs themſelves Chriſtians! were it not, that the Records themſelves be extant *fide publicâ*, which do aſſure us thereof even beyond contradiction, who could beleeve it? O Malice implacable! O Envy moſt perfectly diabolical! And O happy houſe, Family, Name of *Auſtria*, which for the intereſt of true Religion, and Conſtancy to Juſtice, deſerveſt to be made the object of ſuch execrable Spleen, and to Combat perpetually with ſuch odious and Antichriſtian Conſpiracies. It is no new thing. But *Macte iſtâ virtute*; Be faithful to God, and to thoſe principles of piety and juſtice deſcended from ſo many, ſo Religious, and ſo Renowned Anceſtors,

Guicciard. Lib. 20.

ceſtors, and reign in ſpite of Hell, *ſo long as the Sun and Moon endureth.*

5. The Truth is, Ambition was ſo hungry with them, that they conſulted about dividing the Bears Skin, before the Bear was taken; They conſulted how they ſhould ſhare among them the ſpoils of the *German* Clergy, and of the houſe of *Auſtria*, before either of them was in their power. For as by their Chancery-rolls it is evident, Their intent was to advance the *Palatine* to *Bohemia*, *Alſatia*, and ſome part of *Auſtria*, enlarging his Dominion alſo with the Biſhoprick of *Spiers*, and a part of *Mentz*. *Bethlehem Gabor* ſhould be aſſiſted to keep *Hungary*, which afterward (this *Gabor* having no iſſue) might alſo probably fall to the *Palatines* lot. Too many Crowns here, you will ſay, to expect any in Heaven. *Onaltzbach* gaped for Two fat Benefices, the Biſhopricks of *Wirtzburgh* and *Bambergh* his Neighbors: and therefore was it agreed, that their Ar-

Cancel. Anhaltina.

mies

mies should Rendevouz in those parts. The Marquis of *Baden* aimed after *Brisack*, and was willing by this occasion to continue his possession of the upper Marquisate, against the more just claim of the Count *Eberstein*. *Brandenburgh* expected the least of all, being content onely with a part of the Bishoprick of *Wirtzburgh*, which lay fit for him; But *Anhalt* intended to recruit both his purse and broken fortunes with the spoils of *Mentz*, *Bamberg*, and other Catholike places, as also with some Lands and Lordships, which were like to Estheat in *Bohemia*. If the *Venetians* would joyn with them, they might make themselves Masters of *Istria* and *Friuli*, and so *Oceanum cum Adriatico* (as their *Cancellaria* speaks) they might *joyn Sea to Sea*, and *Land to Land*, and carry all before them without controule. Such were the vast, but vain, designs of their Ambition and Avarice. But before we proceed any further, it may not be amiss to

examine

examine their Plea. It is manifeſt, their deſign in it ſelf was moſt pernicious, and ſuch, as (if it had taken effect, which God would not ſuffer) had been of general prejudice to the State of Chriſtendom, and not onely to the Peace of the Empire; which yet every one of the Princes Confederate were bound, in ſome relation or other, to maintain: beſide the ſubverſion of all Laws, which apparently it carryed along with it. Who doth not remember, how all the Pulpits in *England*, when time was, and generally of all the Reformed Churches abroad, ſounded the Alarme againſt the League and Leaguers in *France*? Which yet was not half ſo miſcheivous as this; but was at firſt ſet on foot quietly, without any ſedition or inſurrection, onely for defenſe of the Ancient Religion, always received and eſtabliſhed in *France*: yea confirmed with the Kings perſonal Oath and approbation. And though it were afterward continueed, and

more

more ſtrictly proſecuted, upon occaſion of ſome horrid Actions of murther and tyranny, yet Monſieur *Villeroy* himſelf, (who was a wiſe man, and a great Royalliſt,) profeſſeth,) that their aim was not the *Extirpation* of the King of *Navarre*, but his *Reformation*; and that if they might *be aſſured of his Religion* (which he had promiſed) he *ſhould be inſtantly aſſured of their obedience*: as in the concluſion it clearly appeared; every perſon in *France*, according as the King condiſcended to give them ſatisfaction in that point, entirely acknowledging their Allegiance to him. And the miſhap which befel him afterwards, was not in purſuance of the League, but upon a private account, not to ſay, upon ſome new provocation given, and which no man living juſtified. But as for this Union, it runs in a far wilder ſtrain, and is for the advancement of a *new Religion*, entirely diſavowed by all the States of the Empire in all their publike Acts. How then

then can it be otherwiſe then e
treamly diſloyal and criminous
The Duke of *Saxony* himſelf
though a Proteſtant Prince, diſ-
ſwaded it, and adviſed the *Palatine*
very prudently, and like a friend,
to quit *Bohemia*, and to ſeek for
reconciliation and pardon, where
as yet, he might poſſibly finde it.
Beſide it opened the Gates of the
Empire to the *Turk*, which miſ-
chief alone, had there been no o-
ther going along with it, had been
ſufficient to condemn it. But *Pleſ-
ſen* confeſſeth in his Letter to *An-
halt*, That *it was an Action of the
ſame nature with* Holland : and
what that was, we have ſeen al-
ready. In brief they took arms a-
gainſt a King Lawfully Elected, ſo-
lemnly Crowned, and eſtabliſhed
in poſſeſſion by conſent of the
States. It is true, when they firſt
went about the work, they nomi-
nated the Duke of *Saxony*, as Com-
petitor with the *Palſgrave* for *Be-
hemia*; but that was meerly craft,
and a trick of maliciouſneſs, to

render

under the Duke ſuſpected with the Emperor. They knew he had refuſed their offer and Confederacy long before, when their Agent the Count *Slick* ſollicited him in their names. By this means they put *Auſtria* it ſelf, the Emperors Patrimonial Country, into ſedition; The people there, through correſpondence with the *Turk* and *Gaſper*, were ſo bold as to tell *Ferdinand*, that unleſs he would grant them *Toleration, and ſuch Liberty of Conſcience, as they deſired*, they would join with his Enemies. And they were in this point as good as their words; For in the year 1620. all the upper *Auſtria* did really quit their old Lord; and ſubmitted unto a new Protector in his ſtead. If the Catholikes of England ſhould attempt the like, how would it be cenſured for ſedition, and puniſhed ſeverely, as it might? and yet ſurely the caſes are much Parallel, and if there be any advantage, it is on our ſide; who deſire the exerciſe of nothing, but what was once publike,

like, owned for many ages together by all the people of the Nation and legally established before us.

6. But nothing makes the Action more offensive and scandalous then that *Anhalt*, and *Onoltzbach* two such private and inconsiderable persons, in relation to the business they dealt in, should take upon them (*insciis Electoribus*, without the knowledge and consent of the Princes Electors themselves) to dispose of the succession of the Empire; and in order to effect this more then treasonable design, should Confederate themselves with one, who is a declared Enemy of the Emperor, and the *Turks* Vassal, a Reprobate, a Monster, called *Bethlehem Gabor*, and calling himself Prince of *Transylvania*, King of *Hungary*, and what not? one, who to hold himself firm in the *Turks* grace, had already delivered up to him the Town and Fort of *Lip*, the Towns of *Solimos*, *Tornadg*, *Margat*, and *Arad*, all well

well fortified places in *Hungary*? and labored hourly how to do him further ſervice, to the prejudice of Chriſtendom. One, who had ſworn Allegiance to his Soveeign Lord *Gabriel Batthori*, Prince of *Tranſylvania*, yet afterward Trayterouſly murthered him, and uſurped his State. One, who made a League with the Emperor *Matthias* in the year 1615. to be quiet, and to attempt nothing contrary unto the Liberties and Peace of *Hungary*; yet preſently after invaded the Country in perſon with a great Army, took upon him the Crown, carried the Emperors Lievtenant *Andrew Dockzy* (whom he had caught by Treachery,) priſoner into *Tranſylvania*, baniſhed all the Clergy, and maintained his Soldiers with the ſpoils of the Church; profaned the Cathedral Church at *Poſon* with his own Heretical or Mahometan Chaplains, and from thence certified the *Turk* boaſtingly under his own hand, how ſucceſſfully he had now begun the work, which

which he promiſed; that moſt of the Nobles of *Hungary* were under his command, and that ſince the Popes Clergy gloried to wear their Crowns ſhaven, he would make bold to ſhave ſome of their heads and all. Upon which good news, and in expectation to turn all his Warres now upon Chriſtendom, the *Turk* inſtanſtly made Peace with the *Tartar*, and offered *Gabor*, to aſſiſt him upon any occaſion of need, with Forty thouſand men. Yet, I ſay, upon this mans head did the Union reſolve to ſet the Crown of *Hungary*; to which end his neereſt Kinſmen lay all this time at *Heydlebergh*, as the Intelligencer, Treating with them yet diſguiſed under the habit of a Scholar.

7. Let now the impartial Reader caſt his eye upon *Germany*, and ſee, as an effect of this wicked Combination, the picture of *Troy* on fire, that is to ſay, the lively image and horror of War. And when he hath done ſo, let him reflect, how well it

it would please him, to see the face of *London* and *Middlesex* so disfigured with wounds and desolation. That furious Zealot, who is now most forward to blow the Coals of dissention, and to inflame a State that is at quiet, would quake and tremble, when he should consider on what devastation all that once flourishing Country of the Empire now lieth, mourning and groaning by reason of this War. Those fertil Provinces about the *Rhine* all wasted, and impoverished by Soldiers on both sides, especially about *Worms*; Tillage forborne, Traffick decayed, Trades ceased, Taxes imposed, Fortifications raised at the charge of the Country; and for what? onely for defense and security of those, who oppress, or impoverish them: No man master of his own, all at the will of Soldiers and Strangers; and above an Hundred thousand persons reckoned to be slain. These are the effects and issues of this War, the fruits of *Calvinism*; which though

directly

directly prohibited by the Laws
the Empire, and onely tolera
by connivance, and the mercy
the State; yet was now come
such a point, that it sought to su
press the Emperor himself, a
hazarded the subversion of
whole State, both Ecclesiasti
and Temporal. An unchristian
turn doubtless, and without
stamp of Religion: Their *sole ju*
fying Faith will scarce justifie this,
because it was with breach of Fait
and of so many civil bonds, a
contrary to charity. The tru
marks of Charity are Humility
Patience, and Zeal perfectly con-
joyned and qualified with the o
ther two: Your little Patience
and less Humility do convin
your Zeal to be no less counterfe
then your Faith is fruitless. Ch
rity would never have suffered yo
to invade the Duke of *Bavie*
Country, notwithstanding he w
willing to have stood Newter, n
onely because he would not joy
with you. Charity never coun-
selled

called *Anhalt* to design for pillage, and, as it were, to devour beforehand the spoil of a City, valued at Two and thirty Millions, as he did in his Letters to *Donau*, 1619. Charity never directed Christians to seek assistance from the *Turk*, Christs greatest enemy; nor to frame so many treacherous and malicious plots, as they did, *Pag.* 32, 42, 66, 80. of their *Cancellaria*, against such as were either Neighbors, or Friends to them, or their lawful Superiors. What the Laws of the Empire are concerning such proceedings, hath been seen above in the case of *Luther*, where they are sufficiently condemned. I shall therefore add here one onely passage of *Leopold*, King of the *Romans*, in his Supplication unto his Father the first, Emperor; who, because he had broken the Peace of Germany, and called in Forreigners, *Membrum Imperii appellari non debeo*; I ought not, saith he, *to be accounted any longer a Member of the Empire,*

having brought in Forreign and Barbarous Nations into the heart of Germany. Put these Minions of *Genevah* stand not upon the Law, it is Gospel that they plead; let the Gospel therefore condemn them. The Word of God saith, *Per me Reges, &c. Kings reign by me*; It is by Gods appointment, that they bear rule over men: Therefore forbear, ye people, shew reverence to the Ordinance of God, observe your distance, *Touch not mine Anointed.* The Gospel saith, *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers, &c. And he that resists, resisteth Gods Ordinance, and shall receive damnation:* Yea, the Gospel saith, *Be subject unto every ordinance of man, viz.* That is established, and by which the Will of Divine Providence may be seen, *For the Lords sake, whether to a King, as Supream,* or more Excellent, *or unto Governors, &c.* How much do the Doctrine of the Gospel, and the Doctrine of *Calvin* differ? The Gospel teaches

us to honor the King, to obey Governors, &c. *Calvin* directs us rather to degrade and depose them. But this is a matter needs no disputation; Grace and Honesty would decide it best.

[illegible]

defence of the Kingdom and all o-
ther Military occasions of State
should be maintained, of no les
then Forty thousand men, besid
Forty Earls, Sixty Barons, an
Three thousand Knights for the
Command and Conduct of thi
Army, where need should be: So
that the Commons of *England*, by
this means, should never, heare o
Tax or Subsidy any more. This
indeed was as pleasing a bait for
the people, as could be devise
and it took accordingly: They
bit willingly at it; But the Hook
sticks in their jaws to this day.
Such a motion as this (to note in
a word by the way) was made in
that Parliament of *Henry* the fourth
which they called *the Lay-mens*
Parliament, by those which coun-
tenanced *Wicleff*, and loved the
Lands, far better then they did the
Religion of the Church: But their
designs at that time were defeated
by the Stout and Religious oppo-
sition of *Thomas Arundel* Arch-Bi-
shop of *Canterbury*, and other Pre-
lates

[illegible] joyning with him. Though [illegible] there were an unfortunate and [illegible]orthy *Thomas* found, (yet fit[illegible] in that Seat of *Canterbury*) rea[illegible] to side with them for his own [illegible] ends) and to countenance [illegible] *Wicleffists* of these times, that [illegible] those *Lutheran* and malicious [illegible]its, who by their Libels, (*The* [illegible]*plication of Beggars* well answer[illegible] by Sir *Thomas Moores Supplica*[illegible] *of Souls*) and other wicked [illegible]ctises, went about to destroy [illegible] Church, and extripate true Re[illegible]on.

[illegible]dde here unto the Kings natu[illegible] Inclination to vain glory; which [illegible] very great, and begat those [illegible]digal expences, which he used towards his Favorites and Flatter[illegible]: And these could not be long [illegible]intained but by extraordinary [illegible]port; which being not to be [illegible] in any way of Legality and [illegible]ice, Avarice at last, and many [illegible]er vices, which he was fallen to, prompted him to fall upon the Church. The Lords and Courtiers 7.

could not dislike the motion, knowing what a rich Prey would fall to be divided among them. Especially this pleased the principal Secretary of State (afterward Lord Privy Seal, Lord High Chamberlain of *England*, and Earl of *Essex*) who being a man of great experience and of a deep reach in worldly policies, knew full well, that such a confused Innovation as this, and so full of Spoyle, would be infinitely advantagious to him, and a Ladder, to clime at ease unto what Wealth or Honor he could wish. He therefore instigates the King with all might and main to go through with the Action, and to stand stoutly to his Prerogative and profit, knowing his conscience was already buried in *Anne Boleyns* Tombe. To this end, and the better to pave the way to this evil designs, (Sacriledge and Bloud not seldom going along together) Three of the principal Abbots of the Kingdom, and Barons of Parliament, *viz.* the Abbots of *Glastenbury*, *Reading*,

[illegible], and [illegible], Stout, Vertu- and Religious men, and like- to oppose such practises, were away before hand, being con- ned and executed upon the ite of Supremacy; as well to ent the Bishops mediating for , as to terrifie the other Re- ous of the Kingdom from oppo- the Kings designs.

ut may we ask, *quo jure, quo ti-* by what colour of Law or t was this suppression of the ies made and done? I cannot , what it may do now, but cer- ly to have mov'd such a questi- then, it would have cost a man head. It is certain, these Ab- held their Lands in *Frank Al-* , and in Fee, They were qui- possessed of them by the Dona- and Guifts of many *Saxon*, *ish*, *Norman* Kings, Princes other Subjects, who were r Founders; continued legal- by prescription in them; admit- , acknowledged and established all Laws; beside the accessory

Charters

Charters of many ſucceeding Princes, who confirmed them, and moſt commonly added to them. They held all their Lands, Immunities and Eſtates by the ſame Law, Authority, and Right, by which the Temporal Lords held their Baronies, as *Magna Charta* 9. of Hen. 3. and the confirmation thereof 28. *Ed.* 1. do abundantly teſtifie: where it is granted, *that the Church of* England *ſhall be Free*, and have *all her Liberties* preſerved to her *inviolable*. Chap. 2. any Judgement given againſt them is declared to be Null and Void. And chap. 4. The Biſhops are ordered to Excommunicate all ſuch, as ſhall ſeek to infring thoſe Charters; as alſo they did 30. *Ed.* 1. including all thoſe, that ſhould either make, or procure to be made any Statute contrary to thoſe Liberties. Whence we may note Two things, The Firſt, that as Excommunication is the higheſt puniſhment, which can be inflicted upon a man *Spiritually*; ſo the State cannot declare its de-

teſtation

testation and dislike of any crime more then by requiring or ordering such a punishment for it. The Second, That as by one and the same Charter, both the Church and the Temporalty held their Liberties; so that which gave, or pretended to give, the King power to abrogate and destroy the one, could not, in point of reason or justice, but make the other obnoxious. In the Leidger-book of *Peterborrough* are to be seen all King *Johns* Grants and Confirmations more fully and at large, then they are set forth in any Printed Book. Let any man but read them seriously and with attention, and he will wonder at the proceedings of later times. What need I remember that same Law called *Sententia lata super confirmatione Chartarum* by *Ed.* 1. or the 42. of *Ed.* 3. chap. 8. where it is declared that any *Statute whatsoever* made contrary to *Magna Charta, shall be void.* or the confirmation of all these in 1, 6, 7, 8. of *Rich.* 2. and in 4. of *Hen.* 4.

All

All which good Laws were intended ſurely to prevent Sacriledge and Tyranny in ſucceeding times, and to ſecure both Church and people from the encroachments of injuſtice.

The King knew very well he had no Title to any of theſe things, but by colour and conceſſion of Parliament; (and how far a Parliament hath power to give away the Lands or Intereſts of a Third Perſon, neither heard nor convicted orderly of any offence, that ſhould deſerve ſuch ſentence, is a thing to be conſidered: Surely, is it not?) Therefore to make his Title appear ſtronger in the eye of the World, *Anno* 31. of his Reign, he procureth an Act to be made in Parliament, expreſſing, how that ſince the Act of *Anno* 27. the Religious Houſes themſelves had *voluntarily, and of their own good wills, without conſtraint*, in due courſe of Law, and by writings of Record under their Covent-Seals, given and confirmed to the King, their

Lands,

Lands, Houſes, Rents, Revenues, and all Rights whatſoever; yea, to this Statute they are ſaid to conſent, as to an Act of their own ſeeking and ſuit; and you may ſee among the Records of the *Augmentation Court*, a great Cheſt full of particular Surrenders, made by the Abbots and Covents under their hands & ſeals to this purpoſe. But is it not a likely tale, that out of their *piety* and *good will*, they would renounce their Livings, and become beggars? Indeed unto ſo gracious a Prince, as he was become towards them at that time, it was the leſs marvail. I my ſelf did once deliver my purſe upon *Salisbury*-plains; and though I could not commend the honeſty of thoſe that took it, yet was I fain for a while to commend their humanity towards me, that they uſed me no worſe. You will ſay, how then came it to be done? why would the Abbots, and other Religious give away their Lands, if they were not willing? I anſwer, becauſe they could

hold

hold them no longer: They saw themselves generally deserted, and forsaken by the Commons, and knew very well what the King was resolved to do, by that which he had done already. And therefore to make some petty accommodations for themselves, perhaps by granting or renewing of Leases, or otherwise, (which the King for his own ends, *viz.* to make the work more plausible and easie, was content to connive at, and which, we may be sure, came not to much) they thought best to give that which they were otherwise sure to lose. And by doing so, rather then by using any kinde of contestation, they shewed the simplicity of their obedience to be such, as became their Holy Profession; and the King shewed, how little he feared God, or regarded his Honour in the censure of the World. Whosoever therefore considers the business impartially, shall finde this great conquest of Religious Persons to deserve little Triumph; and that the augment-

augmentation of Revenue and Treaſure by it, being ſo palpably Sacrilegious, and contrary to all acknowledged Law, Divine and humane, proved to be *Aurum Tholoſanum*, a curſe to him that took it, and upon which the judgement of God hath viſibly attended ever ſince.

Nor is it ſtrange, that it ſhould; 10.
for firſt, what ſaith the Scripture? *Is it not a curſe to him that devoureth* Prov. 20.
ſacred things, and after vows to make 25.
inquiry? And what ſaith Hiſtory, and the experience of all Ages? Did ever Sacrilege go unpuniſhed? *Marcus Craſſus* robbed the Temple at *Hieruſalem*, but is not his ſad and diſaſtrous end noted by *Joſephus*? Lib. 18.
Herod likewiſe opened the Sepul- C. 8.
cher of King *David*, and took hence much ſpoil; but into what great miſeries and misfortunes he fell afterwards, the ſame *Joſephus* Lib. 16.
relateth. *Urraca*, a Gothiſh King, C. 11.
going to rob but one Chappel of St. *Iſidore* in *Spain*, and that in a caſe of neceſſity too, as might be

pre-

pretended, *viz.* to defray the charge of war, and to pay his Army; yet his very guts burst out of his belly in the Church-porch, as the Hiſtory ſaith. *Leo* the Fourth, Emperor, taking a precious Gem out of the Coronet of St. *Sophia* at *Conſtantinople*, which had been dedicated to it, died himſelf not long after of a Carbuncle. *Sigon. de regn. Italiæ, Lib.* 1. So *Gonderieus* King of the *Vandals*, when he took *Sivil*, took alſo the ſpoils of the Churches, and ſeized upon all their riches; but, to revenge it, the Devil ſeized and poſſeſſed him. *Tarapha. in Honorio.* What need I alledge more? *Julian* the Apoſtate was alſo a Church-robber, moſt tyrannicall and notorious, but his end is well known. And ſo it is, what miſery befell *Heliodorus*, the Treaſurer of King *Selencus*, for the like crimes, though but attempted, againſt the Sanctuary at *Hieruſalem*, 2 *Macc. chap.* 3. *Nicephorus Phocas* the Emperor was the neereſt parallel to King *Henry* that we meet with in all

Hiſtor. gen. of Spain.

Tripart. Hiſtor. *lib.* 6. *c.* 31.

of the Eccleſiaſtical Story. For he returned all donations that had been made unto Monaſteries and Churches in his time; but ſuch afflictions and furies haunted him for ever after, that his Succeſſor *Basilius* (though himſelf none of the beſt Emperors that have reigned) was yet careful to abrogate thoſe Lawes of *Phocas*, among the firſt Acts which he did, and as the root of all publike calamities of thoſe times.

Nor did indeed King *Henry* him- 11.
ſelf finde any better ſucceſs to attend his impieties. Did he not, (like that ſacrilegious *Herod* mentioned before) live jealous of his Wives, and not confident, even of thoſe his Friends, which he had ſo much enriched with the ſpoils of the Church? His exorbitant luſts, which were the original cauſe of all the miſchief, became at laſt his torments. For after his Divorce from his firſt and lawful Queen *Katharine*, no wife could pleaſe him long; few of them could get protection

for

for their heads, and none of them all live long either ſecure or joyful. Beſide, did his Exchequer thrive any better for the Augmentations? Was his Treaſury any whit better furniſht, then his Predeceſſors before him, Catholike Princes, and Favorers of the Church? Nay, was there ever King of *England* more neceſſitated then he was in point of Treaſure, and that immediatly as it were, and in very few years after thoſe great ſpoils? Did ever King of *England* before him lye more heavy upon his ſubjects in matter of Taxes, Subſidies, Loanes, then he did after that? Did ever any of them uſe more ignoble and unprincely wayes to raiſe money then he? Our own Chronicles, and the much baſe money which he coined, doe ſufficiently ſhew how things went with him in that regard. But that which may ſeem moſt of all to be noted, as an argument of Gods diſpleaſure againſt him, was the fruſtrating of that, which was pretended to be his chief project and

deſign

design in all those frequent marryings and unmarryings, *viz.* Succession and Issue. All his hopefull Stem and Branches have been taken away one after another without Issue; and some of them but unhappily too: And his Crown and Scepter translated, much contrary to his intentions; unto another Name and Nation, God suffering him, as a blinde man, to erre in his ends, and wander in all his courses. Yea all that great Treasure which he raked together upon the ruins of the Church; how was it employed? How spent, but in the excess of vanity and evil? Neither to any honour of the Realm, nor to the ease of his subjects, nor to the maintenance of Souldiers, nor to the relief of the poor, (all which were pretended mainly when the business was to be done) but in Tiltings, Triumphs, Mummeries, Masquings, in pleasing and enriching his Mistresses, and to satisfie the greedy appetites and expectations of those sollicitors

plaint, for the manifold oppre-
ſions and afflictions, which we
heavy upon them. Tis true; eve-
ry man may be ſuppoſed to wiſ
the advancement of his own Reli-
gion, as beleeving it to be right
or the beſt: neither are Catholike
to be excepted in that point: They
muſt be permitted to deſire at leaſ
and wiſh for the reſtoring of Ca-
tholike Religion, as it ought to
be. But ſurely as to the means
whereby they procure it, and the
courſe and manner of their pro-
ceeding that ſeek and endeavor it,
This treatiſe hath already ſhewen,
what great odds and difference
there is betwixt the proceedings of
Catholikes, and that of Proteſtants.
And that what the one, *viz.* Ca-
tholikes, ſeek onely by way of Pe-
tition, Supplication, Prayer and
humble Remonſtrating of their
Sufferances; The other, *viz.* Pro-
teſtants, ſeek chiefly by fire and
Sword and Cannon Bullet, and by
Thundring of Ordnances, rather
then Apologies, in their Princes

ears.

Beſide, (to proceed a little
rther in this Parallel) the Catho-
es generally, and for a long time,
th in *Germany* and *France* were
ſſive, as in *England* they are ſtill
this day; The Proteſtants were
ſtive, and the offendors. Catho-
es onely defend their own,
intain the poſſeſſion of that,
hich they have quietly held, out
all memory of Men and Ages;
oteſtants invade, and uſurp by
ce. Prieſts deſire onely to keep
at which they once *de jure* had;
niſters ſeek to get that which they
d not. Catholikes obey *ex conſcien-*
ia, out of an inflexible principle of
onſcience, and abſolutely ſub-
it unto all lawful and eſtabliſhed
vernment; Proteſtants general-
ſpeaking but upon condition,
d with ſuch limitations and re-
ſtions of their obedience, as they
mſelves think good to preſcribe.
rieſts are puniſhed, not for any
rinal wickedneſs, or that which is
crime *in its own nature*, but for
mething that is ſo, onely *by in-*

interpretation, or in the judgement of the present State; which perhaps a few days agoe did not judge *so*, but the quite contrary. Calvinists, when they suffer, suffer for real and foule crimes; for Sedition, Rebellion, Murther, Treason, not *imputative only*, fictitious, or made such of late by the prevailing of some particular faction in the State, but truly and properly so, and adjudged for such by all Laws Divine and Humane, of their own Countries and of all Christendom beside, long before they or their Grandsires were born. Witness the examples of this last year in *France*, of *Lescun*, President of the Assemblies at *Rochel*, *Haute-Fontain*, *Chamier*, *P. Gombaut* and some others, who all suffered for real and actual Treasons; and by vertue of such Laws, not as the Parliament at *Paris*, or some party there had procured to be enacted a few years, or a few moneths before, on purpose to entrap them; but by the ancient known Laws of *France*, by which they

hey themselves knew the Kingdoms
ere governed, and had been ever
overned time out of minde: and
herefore could not in any reason
ut expect the execution of them
pon themselves, in case they
ould persist to offend. Witness
he Treasons of their Brother *Bis-*
arcy in *Poland*, who attempted to
ill the King; and did indeed
ound him very dangerously, as
e was going to Church. They
bject to us the positions of some
rivate and disavowed persons, and
ords onely: We object to them
he resolutions of whole generall
Assemblies held by them, and those
ebellions, which have followed
hereupon, not in word onely, but
n deed and in act, their real and
ctual Conspiracies, their many
attles really and actually fought
n the Field, without lawful Au-
hority, or any publike Call, a-
gainst their Sovereign Princes, with
other manifold injuries and inso-
lencies committed. Lastly, Pro-
testants reform commonly *per popu-*
lum

him, and by Tumults; Catholikes do nothing of this kinde but by Law, Order, and their proper Superiors. So that the difference betwixt them is manifest; and the integrity of the professions of Catholike, in point of obedience and loyalty towards their Prince, beyond that of Calvinists, or Protestants, generally speaking, is visible to every eye.

19. Why may they not then, under the Favor of the State, enjoy like Liberty of Conscience, Person, and Estates, with other good Subjects, notwithstanding that they differ in judgement from the profession of the State? Why may not a Catholike be tolerated to live, and injoy without molestation, that which God, Nature, and the Laws of the Land do give him, as well as a Calvinist? Why should the Laws of *England* be fettered with so many Shacles of *Interpretative*, and Temporary Treason, to the prejudice of many innocent persons, and to the scandal of the Government?

ment? Admit, that for some worldly respect they were indeed necessary, in State-policy, for the times wherein they were enacted; yet the times changing so much as they have done, and those causes entirely ceasing, which made them seem necessary then, it may be thought now, not onely safe, (as undoubtedly it is) but honorable and just to repeal them. May it not with great reason be wondered at, that a Nation so Just, so Honorable, so Wise, as this of *England* hath ever been acknowledged by the Nations abroad; and settled by Extraordinary Dispensations of Divine Providence upon such Equitable, fair and just principles of government, as be constantly held forth by the Supream Authority of the Nation, should permit any thing to be counted Treason by an Act of Parliament, which is so generally over all Christendom at this day, and hath been so anciently, and even till of late times in this our own Nation, so much honored,

honored, maintained, and reverenced by all men; especially I say, when there is no cause of suspicion remaining, when there is no cause nor colour of jealousie from any persons, that desire this liberty: at least none, but what may be easily removed by the wisdom of the State; and plenary satisfaction given in that behalf, both to themselves and to all the good people of the Nation. How much Religious men and persons Ecclesiastical (now called Traytors by the Law) were wont to be esteemed in this Nation, is not necessary now to speak; our own Chronicles and the Constitutions of our very Laws themselves do abundantly declare it. If a bondman entred a Cloysture, he could not be commanded out by any power whatsoever; The Law it self anciently holding it more reasonable, that even the King should loose his intereſt in such a body, then that he should be taken out from the Order, which he had

chosen

chosen. The like was judged, if the Kings Wards entred Religion. An Alien by Law can hold no Lands in *England*; yet if he be a Priest, he may by Law be a Bishop here, and enjoy his Temporalties, as *Lanfranck*, *Anselme*, and some others did, who were never Denizens. It is well known, The Six Clearks of the Chancery were anciently Clearks of the Church. The Master of the Rolls, Master of Requests, Lord Privy Seal, yea the Lord Chancellors and Treasurers of the Realm not onely commonly, but in a manner constantly, till of late times, were Bishops & Clergy-men. How strange therefore may it seem, that the Laws of *England* should make a Function so ancient and honorable in *England* to be Treason? which certainly is the same function now, that it was then, when it was most honored; and hath suffered no more change, from what it first was, then Saint *Pauls* Church hath suffered change, since the time it was first built by King *Ethelbert*;

Ethelbert; that is, it is grown old indeed, and by the iniquity of the times, hath loſt ſome part of that outward Glory, Magnificence, and Splendor, which it once had. And for Papiſts, if men goe about to make them a Sect, and endeavor to ſuppreſs them under that notion, truly we ſhall be found a very ancient Sect; and I beleeve it will trouble the beſt Doctor in *England*, to aſſign us any other Sect-Maſter, any other Author and Founder of our profeſſion, then our Savior Chriſt, and Saint *Peter*. But moſt men know, 'tis to little purpoſe to attempt any thing againſt us that way. All other Sects have their particular Authors, and many other circumſtances of their beginning aſſignable, eaſily, clearly, notoriouſly: I mean, not onely *Lutherans*, *Calviniſts*, *Anabaptiſts*, and ſuch others of yeſterday, but thoſe more ancient, *Arians*, *Eunomians*, *Pelagians*, *Neſtorians*, *Manichees*, &c. onely Catholikes have not; nor can any man ſhew when their profeſſion began

began, or from whom it came, but from our Saviour and his Apostles. What therefore should hinder a reconciliation, and a re-admission of this Ancient and Universal profession of Christianity into *England* again? I mean, unto such an equal and avowed liberty of private exercise, as other people of the Nation doe enjoy in the profession of theirs. On his Majesties part, I humbly suppose there can be little doubt made, who hath been ever of himself constantly inclined to shew mercy, if there had been no crooked and unhappy instruments about him to hinder it. *My minde*, saith the King, *was ever free from persecution, or thralling my Subjects in matters of Conscience*; And again, *Fateor me non libenter suspendere Presbyterum*, &c. *I confesse*, saith he, *it goeth much against my minde, to put a Priest to death onely for his Religion, or for saying of Mass.* He who judged, that it could no way become him, though a Prince of so great Learning and Judgement, to

pronounce

pronounce sentence lightly in so old a controversie, what Priest or Religious man can appeal to a better Judge? or from whom should they expect a sentence of more favourable compassion? He who sent into *France* to mediate for the peace of Strangers, what man can doubt, but of his own Royal inclination he is as willing to shew favour to his Subjects at home? Though we differ in Religion, yet in obedience to our Prince, and the State that protects us, we agree; neither will we be preceded in this part of our duty by any profession under Heaven. Our bodies are at the Kings service, and at the State to command; may they be pleased to leave our souls to God. Let our actions be tried; and if they finde not cause, let them not trust us. It hath bin long since observed by wise men, That too much severity doth but make men desperate; and it is an ancient Aphorism of State *Semire rarò*. What an honourable addition was it to *Augustus Cæsar* his other

other Titles, that of the Historian, *Nunquam civilem sanguinem fudisse*; That never any subject suffered by him in cold blood: And it is as infallibly true in all generous Spirits, *fidelem, si putaveris, facies*; that confidence gains much security from them: as counting it the greatest of *disgraces* to be *distrusted*. *Malus custos diturnitatis metus*. Fear is not always the best Guardian. *Seneca*, who lived under a Tyrant, and knew what tyranny was, giveth this counsel, *Ultimo supplicio supplicia ultimis pona*. Let, saith he, a Prince alwayes observe this rule in the administration of justice, *viz.* *That capital punishments be the last punishments which he inflicteth*, and never used, but where no other remedy will serve. And *Tacitus* observes it among other marks of *Tiberius* his cruelty, *Delatorum Auctoritas magna, frequens accusatio, & in quovis crimine admissa de læsa Majestate Principis*, That Sycophants, Informers, and such fellows were the onely men about Sueton.

bout him, and every offence was made Treason. And certainly there can be no greater Symptome, that Government declines to tyranny, then the multitude of such people attending the Courts; and that such proceedings are used. I confess the Law was once strict at *Rome*, *Deos peregrinos ne colunto*. Yet *Marcus Aurelius*, a wise and gallant Emperor, tolerated the Christians; yea, *Theodosius*, and *Gratian*, Emperors, though most most Christian and Catholike themselves, yet for some time were conceited to tolerate the *Arians*, enemies of Christ. The *Venetians*, and many other Christian States permit the Jews to live among them; as *Spain* did the Moores, till necessity at last forced the King to expel them.

20. It is a false and uncharitable Assertion, savouring too much of gall and spleen, to say (as some do) that Catholikes are unsociable, they cannot live with Protestants in one Common-wealth without jars and tumults. For is there any thing

thing more visible, and in your eyes every day, then that the contrary is true? Doe we not live among you here in *England*? Have we not ever done so since the first unhappy difference and change made, peaceably, neighbourly, friendly? Doe we not buy and sell with you, and you with us? are we not ready to perform all offices of civility and good neighbourhood, where we live? Doe we refuse any kinde of temporal duties or payments? Even of our Tiths to the Ministers, which yet are in themselves a kinde of religious Salary; and if in any, surely we should boggle and shew unwillingness in them? Besides, 'tis a false surmise, that we hold all Protestants generally for Heretikes, and Excommunicate persons; (as some spare not to urge both in the pulpit and press, to make us odious) or that thereby we should think our selves at liberty, when we have opportunity, to deal less faithfully, justly, and truly with them, then becommeth honest men, and Christians.

Christians. For that they are not Excommunicate, I mean *specially by name*, or by any such *sentence of the Judge Ecclesiastical*, as doth relate or debar either all or any civil duty towards them, is out of question. And to make a man Heretike, *formally* speaking and in the proper notion of that crime, obstinacie in opinion is by all confess'd to be requisite, and that he persisteth deliberately therein, notwithstanding that he knoweth the opinion which he holdeth, to be contrary to the Doctrine of the Catholike Church, and to the general, unanimous, or known consent of those Pastors, which as Saint *Paul* teacheth us, ought to have *the oversight and government of him in our Lord*: which, I suppose, cannot be the case of all the Protestants in *England*. Indeed, of th Doctrine of Protestancy, as 't is consider'd in it self, abstractedly from the persons that profess it, we say, 'tis *Heresie*, that is to say, a false Doctrine, a condemned Doctrine, a Doctrine, (so far as Doctrine

Acts 20. 28. *Heb.* 13. 7. 17. *Tit.* 3. 10.

ſtrin can barely be) not only of dangerous, but of damnable malignity, being contrary to the Doctrine and Inſtitutions of true Chriſtian Religion, which our Saviour by his Apoſtles left unto the Church, to be profeſſed and obſerved for ever; and therfore *in it ſelf* of ſuch nature, that it ought to be depoſed by all men, who deſire to be ſaved; and in profeſſion whereof no man living may ſecurely reſt. This we ſay of their Doctrine. But as to the perſons of Proteſtants themſelves, *viz.* how far their perſonal errour in the profeſſion thereof is voluntary and affectate; what means of better information they do neglect; againſt how much light, that is, inward knowledge and perſwaſion of minde, that Catholike Religion is true, they doe ſin; or what ſecret doubtings they have that it may be true; what inward ſtirrings and checks of conſcience they doe ſtifle in themſelves, and perſiſt in a way which their own hearts ſuſpect, meerly for temporal ends, and be-

cauſe

cauſe it ſtands better with their deſigns of this world, that is, the preſent intereſts of their honour, reputation, eaſe, pleaſure, profit, &c. or laſtly, how far their ignorance of the truth may be, perhaps invincible; (which where it is ſo, excuſeth much) of all this we ſay nothing. God onely knoweth how things are with them in theſe reſpects, not man; no, not the men themſelves: and therefore, as concerning their perſons, to his judgement onely we muſt leave them. This buſineſs therefore, *viz.* of Proteſtants being counted Heretikes by us, is but a Bug-bear, a Scar-crow ſet up on purpoſe by thoſe our Adverſaries, who would have the difference and averſions which they have bred betwixt us, to be immortal. Rather it were to be wiſhed by all honeſt men, of what perſwaſion ſoever, that a juſt and equitable liberty in matters of conſcience were granted unto all, if but for this onely reſpect, *viz.* That ſo by a free, confident, and friendly

friendly converſing one with another, void of ſuſpition, void of jealouſie, fear, danger to one party or other, and by amicable diſcourſe and debating of things, truth might come to be more cleerly diſcoverded; and we might be able, through Gods grace, mutually to give and receive good one of another. But this is a work, which hath ſo much of God and goodneſs in it, that we cannot but expect many adverſaries ſhould appear againſt it. However, thoſe Doctors *Boutefeux* ſhould doe well to remember, if they pleas'd, that even by the Law of Seniority Catholikes might expect ſome little favour. For we beſeech them to tell us, upon what Patrimony doe themſelves and families now live, but that which the right Heirs of the Church, diſ-inherited indeed, or diſſeized by the power of the State, have left them? What Priviledges, Immunities, Honours have they, but what the old Church gave them? What Churches have

they, either Cathedral, Collegiate, or Parochial, which She built not? What Colledges which She founded or endowed not? Nay, whence have they their Bible, the Creed, the Ceremonies, or any thing else that is good and commendable among them, but from Her? If She had not preserved them faithfully to their hands, they had never found them. Shall Charity then be for ever so buried in *England*, that the posterity of those, from whom they must confess to have received these great advantages, shall never be remembred by them, never be used with equity and common justice? It were too great a shame, surely, to lye long upon such a Nation as this, and a defect of Government, which all Nations about us would observe. Beside, let our Adversaries remember what the French commonly say, *Chacun à son tour*; and we in *England*, *A dog hath a day*. Religion here with us, since King *Henry* the Eight wore the Crown, hath had many

changes

changes and exchanges, as the world knoweth: and the principles, on which it now ſtandeth, are not thought to be ſo fixed and immoveable, but that it may take one turn more. All things are in the hands of God; and whatſoever he hath determined in the Counſel of his Divine wiſdom muſt ſtand, and take effect in its appointed due time: ſay we, or do we to the contrary, what we can. And therefore let our hot Brethren the Calviniſts, who can themſelves ſo little endure the ſeverity of Biſhops, let them not further promote, nor hold up perſecution againſt any body elſe; leaſt in an howre when they think leſt of it, the miſchief, which they wiſh to others, fall upon their own heads; and that they finde themſelves, not onely out of the Saddle (where they would be) but in the Mire, *under the Horſe belly*, and ſo obnoxious, as they may have need of favor themſelves. They deſire nothing more then *Liberty of Conſcience* in

their own way, fulneſs of liberty to themſelves; let them be perſwaded alſo to grant the ſame unto others. That this is but equal, reaſon it ſelf will tell us: And that perſecution for matter of Religion is not always the beſt means to advance religion, is the judgement of as wiſe and learned men, even of their own profeſſion, as any they can ſhew for the contrary. What *Luthers* opinion was in the point I value no much, becauſe the world did not take him for a man very learned or very wiſe; although, by Gods permiſſion, he did much miſchief in it for his time: as a ſimple Conjurer, though he be neither Mathematician, nor Philoſopher himſelf, yet, by the help of the Devil, may raiſe a ſtorm able to confound all the Sciences. Nevertheleſs what he thought appears in his Aſſertions, *Art.* 33. *de non comburendis Hæreticis. Urbanus Rhegius*, *Wolfgangus Muſculus*, famous men and Proteſtants, both of them in their Common places

are

are much against persecution for Religion. So is *Osiander*, *Epitom. Centur.* 7. *Chytræus* in *Chron.* 1593. *Castalio*, and others. But above all *Acontius* in his Book *de Stratagemat. Satan.* is most earnest. *Dominus non permittit hæreticorum supplicium, imò definitè declaravit, & interdixit*, &c. *God*, saith he, *doth not permit nor allow, that Hereticks should be thus punished*; yea he hath expressly declared his minde to the contrary, and forbidden the Magistrate to exercise any such Authority upon them. *Calvin* once, that is, till he had setled himself in power at *Geneva*, held the same opinion, and was much for *Liberty of Conscience*, when *Annas Burges* died for Heresie in *France*. Of the same judgement also is Monsieur *Lanou* in his Discourses. *Sturmius* in his Epistles, *Beley*, *Melanthon*, and many other professed and earnest Protestants. Not to mention *Erasmus*, *Cassander*, *Grotius*, or any other of that middle temper. And as for matter of example, or practise, do not the *Hen.* 2.

Cantons in *Switzerland* agree well enough in Temporal things, notwithstanding their difference in Religion? is mutual Toleration of one another in their several judgements that way, any prejudice to the publike peace? Are there any people under Heaven, more happy and free then they? or more likely to continue such, so long as they keep under some few fiery zealots, that would still be blowing the coals of dissention among them? Not to speak of *Sweden*, *Denmark*, &c. doth not that famous Kingdom of *Poland* Tolerate diversity of Religions? doth not the great Emperor of *Moske* the same? and is not the general Unity of their Subjects, which ariseth thereupon, and would certainly be otherwise, if the Government were otherwise, is it not a Wall of Brass to both of them against their great enemy the *Turk*? Let *Germany* also be our example, that vast Nation, and people no less Magnanimous and Stout; is not Toleration

judged

judged expedient among them? could any thing else cure their troubles? Let us consider, how peacably and happily Catholikes and Lutherans have conversed and lived there together, for no less then an Hundred years and upwards, without any dissention, without any trouble upon the account of Religion; save onely what Ambition, and the factious Spiritedness of some particular Princes have bred, and brought upon the Country, much against the will of the people, under that pretence? No man doubteth, but *Charls* the Fifth, Emperor, and *Ferdinand* his Brother were in their times great and wise Princes; yet found they no better means to redress the troubles of State, then by commanding, *Ut utraq; pars caveret, &c. That special care should be had on both sides to compel no man, to make profession of Religion, otherwise then in his own Conscience he should be perswaded was best:* As *Dresserus* a Protestant relates it, rejecting with

much disdain the contrary opinion of some, *who*, as he saith, *would have but one Religion onely professed in the Empire*. And for *France* the case and condition of affairs there is notorious to all the world. Nor could that Kingdom ever be brought to quiet, till the Calvinists therein were brought upon their knees, that is, to such pass, as to be glad of, and to beg for that favorable Toleration of their profession from the King, which themselves in no parts of the world beside will grant to others. What reason can be given by indifferent men, why the policy of *England* should be so singular, and so differing from that of all other Christian Kingdoms and Nations about her? Why should our Government be more severe in this point, and more Sanguinary then that of our Neighbors? It may seem to reflect something upon the honor of our Nation, to mention the *Turk* in this case: Yet certainly it cannot be denied, but that Christians live quietly

quietly in his Dominions; and upon conditions so easie, that I am perswaded, the Catholikes of *England* would be well contented with the like. If onely it be determined, that we must purchase that with our money, which all other our fellow-subjects the people of this Nation, do enjoy freely, and count it their natural right. In a word therefore to conclude, seeing that both in the judgement of Protestant Divines, and in the practice of Protestant Princes, and States, Toleration of diverse Religions is held neither unlawful, nor unexpedient in Government; and seeing, that for so long a time of afflictions, persecution of our Priests, and other manifold pressures upon us for *matters of Conscience*, Catholikes have yet, through the grace of God, demeaned themselves so loyally and obsequiously in all points, as they have not done, or attempted to do, upon their own account, or for the interest and advancment of their own profession, any thing of-